~~F45~~ ~~.H88~~
v. 3

UNIVERSITAS COLLEGII McGILL MONTE REGIO

2 b 2 5 b. Class A
No. ~~10236~~

Library of McGill College,
MONTREAL
18 75

8,5,3 Hume



THE

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND,

FROM THE

INVASION OF JULIUS CÆSAR

TO

The REVOLUTION in 1688.

IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

By DAVID HUME, Esq;

VOL. III.

A NEW EDITION, Corrected.

LONDON:
Printed for T. CADELL, in the Strand.
MDCCLXXIII.

CONTENTS

OF THE

THIRD VOLUME.

CHAP. XVII.

RICHARD II.

Government during the minority——Insurrection of the common people——Discontent of the barons——Civil commotions——Expulsion or execution of the king's ministers——Cabals of the duke of Gloceſter——Murder of the duke of Gloceſter——Baniſhment of Henry duke of Hereford——Return of Henry——General inſurrection——Depoſition of the king——His murder——His character——Miſcellaneous tranſactions during this reign. Page 1

CHAP. XVIII.

HENRY IV.

Title of the king——An inſurrection——An inſurrection in Wales——The earl of Northumberland rebels——Battle of Shrewſbury——State of Scotland——Parliamentary tranſactions——Death——and character of the king. 61

G256
10236.n.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XIX.

HENRY V.

The king's former disorders——His reformation——The Lollards——Punishment of lord Cobham——State of France——Invasion of that kingdom——Battle of Azincour——State of France——New invasion of France——Assassination of the duke of Burgundy——Treaty of Troye——Marriage of the king——His death——and character——Miscellaneous transactions during this reign. Page 85

CHAP. XX.

HENRY VI.

Government during the minority——State of France——Military operations——Battle of Verneüil——Siege of Orleans——The maid of Orleans——The siege of Orleans raised——The king of France crowned at Rheims——Prudence of the duke of Bedford——Execution of the maid of Orleans——Defection of the duke of Burgundy——Death of the duke of Bedford——Decline of the English in France——Truce with France——Marriage of the king with Margaret of Anjou——Murder of the duke of Gloceſter——State of France——Renewal of the war with France——The English expelled France. 123

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Claim of the duke of York to the crown——The earl of Warwic——Impeachment of the duke of Suffolk——His baniſhment——and death——Popular inſurrection——The parties of York and Lancaſter——Firſt armament of the duke of York——Firſt battle of St. Albans——Battle of Blore-heath——of Northampton——A parliament——Battle of Wakefield——Death of the duke of York——Battle of Mortimer's Croſs——Second battle of St. Albans——Edward IV. *aſſumes the crown——Miſcellaneous tranſactions of this reign.* Page 179

CHAP. XXII.

EDWARD IV.

Battle of Touton——Henry eſcapes into Scotland——A parliament——Battle of Hexham——Henry taken priſoner, and confined to the Tower——King's marriage with the lady Elizabeth Gray——Warwic diſguſted——Alliance with Burgundy——Inſurrection in Yorkſhire——Battle of Banbury——Warwic and Clarence baniſhed——Warwic and Clarence return——Edward IV. *expelled——Henry* VI. *reſtored——Edward* IV. *returns——Battle of Barnet, and death of Warwic——Battle of Teukeſbury, and murder of prince Edward——Death of Henry* VI.*——Invaſion of France——Peace of Pecquigni——Trial and execution of the duke of Clarence——Death and character of Edward* IV. 216

CHAP. XXIII.

EDWARD V. and RICHARD III.

Edward V.——*State of the court*——*The earl of Rivers arreſted*——*Duke of Gloceſter protector*——*Execution of lord Haſtings*——*The protector aims at the crown*——*Aſſumes the crown*——*Murder of Edward* V. *and of the duke of York*——*Richard* III.——*Duke of Buckingham diſcontented*——*The earl of Richmond*——*Buckingham executed*——*Invaſion by the earl of Richmond*——*Battle of Boſworth*——*Death and character of Richard* III. Page 266

CHAP. XXIV.

HENRY VII.

Acceſſion of Henry VII.——*His title to the crown*——*King's prejudice againſt the houſe of York*——*His joyful reception in London*——*His coronation*——*Sweating ſickneſs*——*A parliament*——*Entail of the crown*——*King's marriage*——*An inſurrection*——*Diſcontents of the people*——*Lambert Simnel*——*Revolt of Ireland*——*Intrigues of the dutcheſs of Burgundy*——*Lambert Simnel invades England*——*Battle of Stoke.* 307

CHAP. XXV.

State of foreign affairs——State of Scotland——of Spain——of the Low Countries——of France——of Britanny——French invaſion of Britanny——French embaſſy to England——Diſſimulation of the French court——An inſurrection in the North——ſuppreſſed——King ſends forces into Britanny——Annexation of Britanny to France——A parliament——War with France——Invaſion of France——Peace with France——Perkin Warbec——His impoſture——He is avowed by the dutcheſs of Burgundy——and by many of the Engliſh nobility——Trial and execution of Stanley——A parliament.

Page 332

CHAP. XXVI.

Perkin returns to Scotland——Inſurrection in the Weſt——Battle of Blackheath——Truce with Scotland——Perkin taken priſoner——Perkin executed——The earl of Warwic executed——Marriage of prince Arthur with Catherine of Arragon——His death——Marriage of the princeſs Margaret with the king of Scotland——Oppreſſions of the people——A parliament——Arrival of the king of Caſtile——Intrigues of the earl of Suffolk——Sickneſs of the king——His death——and character——His laws.

379

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XXVII.

HENRY VIII.

Popularity of the new king —— His ministers —— Punishment of Empson and Dudley —— King's marriage —— Foreign affairs —— Julius the Second —— League of Cambray —— War with France —— Expedition to Fontarabia —— Deceit of Ferdinand —— Return of the English —— Leo the Tenth —— A parliament —— War with Scotland —— Wolsey minister —— His character —— Invasion of France —— Battle of Guinegate —— Battle of Flouden —— Peace with France. Page 408

THE

THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

CHAP. XVII.

RICHARD II.

Government during the minority——Insurrection of the common people——Discontent of the barons——Civil commotions——Expulsion or execution of the king's ministers——Cabals of the duke of Gloceſter——Murder of the duke of Gloceſter——Baniſhment of Henry duke of Hereford——Return of Henry——General inſurrection——Depoſition of the king——His murder——His character——Miſcellaneous tranſactions during this reign.

THE parliament, which was ſummoned ſoon after the king's acceſſion, was both elected and aſſembled in tranquillity; and the great change, from a ſovereign of conſummate wiſdom and experience to a boy of eleven years of age, was not immediately felt by

CHAP. XVII.

1377. Government during the minority.

CHAP. XVII. 1377. by the people. The habits of order and obedience, which the barons had been taught during the long reign of Edward, ſtill influenced them; and the authority of the king's three uncles, the dukes of Lancaſter, York, and Gloceſter, ſufficed to repreſs, for a time, the turbulent ſpirit, to which that order, in a weak reign, was ſo often ſubject. The dangerous ambition too of theſe princes themſelves was checked, by the plain and undeniable title of Richard, by the declaration of it made in parliament, and by the affectionate regard, which the people bore to the memory of his father, and which was naturally transferred to the young ſovereign upon the throne. The different characters of theſe three princes rendered them alſo a counterpoize to each other; and it was natural to expect, that any dangerous deſigns, which might be formed by one brother, would meet with oppoſition from the others. Lancaſter, whoſe age and experience, and authority under the late king, gave him the aſcendant among them; though his integrity ſeemed not proof againſt great temptations, was neither of an enterprizing ſpirit, nor of a popular and engaging temper. York was indolent, unactive, and of a ſlender capacity. Gloceſter was turbulent, bold, and popular; but being the youngeſt of the family, was reſtrained by the power and authority of his elder brothers. There appeared, therefore, no circumſtance in the domeſtic ſituation of England, which might endanger the public peace, or give any immediate apprehenſions to the lovers of their country.

But as Edward, though he had fixed the ſucceſſion to the crown, had taken no care to eſtabliſh a plan of government during the minority of his grandſon; it behoved the parliament to ſupply this defect: And the houſe of commons diſtinguiſhed themſelves, by taking the lead on that occaſion. This houſe, which had been riſing to conſideration during the whole courſe of the late reign, naturally received an acceſſion of power during the minority;

rity; and as it was now becoming a ſcene of buſineſs, the members choſe for the firſt time a ſpeaker, who might preſerve order in their debates, and maintain thoſe forms, which are requiſite in all numerous aſſemblies. Peter de la Mare was the man pitched on; the ſame perſon that had been impriſoned and detained in cuſtody by the late king for his freedom of ſpeech, in attacking the miſtreſs and the miniſters of that prince. But though this election diſcovered a ſpirit of liberty in the commons, and was followed by farther attacks both on theſe miniſters, and on Alice Pierce [a], they were ſtill too ſenſible of their great inferiority, to aſſume at firſt any immediate ſhare in the adminiſtration of government, or the care of the king's perſon. They were content to apply by petition to the lords for that purpoſe, and deſire them, both to appoint a council of nine, who might direct the public buſineſs, and to chuſe men of a virtuous life and converſation, who might inſpect the conduct and education of the young prince. The lords complied with the firſt part of this requeſt, and elected the biſhops of London, Carliſle, and Saliſbury, the earls of Marche and Stafford, Sir Richard de Stafford, Sir Henry le Scrope, Sir John Devereux, and Sir Hugh Segrave, to whom they gave authority for a year to conduct the ordinary courſe of buſineſs [b]. But as to the regulation of the king's houſehold, they declined interpoſing in an office, which, they ſaid, both was invidious in itſelf, and might prove diſagreeable to his majeſty.

CHAP. XVII. 1377.

THE commons, as they acquired more courage, ventured to proceed a ſtep farther in their applications. They preſented a petition, in which they prayed the king to check the prevailing cuſtom among the barons of forming illegal confederacies, and ſupporting each other, as well as men of inferior rank, in the violations of law and juſ-

[a] Walſing. p. 150. [b] Rymer, vol. vii. p. 161.

CHAP. XVII. 1377.

tice. They received from the throne a general and an obliging answer to this petition: But another part of their application, that all the great officers should, during the king's minority, be appointed by parliament, which seemed to require the concurrence of the commons, as well as that of the upper house, in the nomination, was not complied with: The lords alone assumed the power of appointing these officers: The commons tacitly acquiesced in their choice; and thought, that, for the present, they had proceeded a sufficient length, if they but advanced their pretensions, though rejected, of interposing in these more important matters of state.

On this foot then the government stood.[c] The administration was conducted entirely in the king's name: No regency was expressly appointed: The council and the great officers, named by the peers, did their duty, each in his respective department: And the whole system was for some years kept together, by the secret authority of the king's uncles, especially of the duke of Lancaster, who was in reality the regent.

The parliament was dissolved, after the commons had represented the necessity of their being re-assembled once every year, as appointed by law; and after having elected two citizens as their treasurers, to receive and disburse the produce of two fifteenths and tenths, which they had voted to the crown. In the other parliaments called during the minority, the commons still discover a strong spirit of freedom and a sense of their own authority, which, without breeding any disturbance, tended to secure their independance and that of the people.

Edward had left his grandson involved in many dangerous wars. The pretensions of the duke of Lancaster to the crown of Castile, made that kingdom still persevere in hostilities against England. Scotland, whose throne

[c] See note [A] at the end of the volume.

was

was now filled by Robert Stuart, nephew to David Bruce, and the first prince of that family, maintained such close connections with France, that war with one crown almost inevitably produced hostilities with the other. The French monarch, whose prudent conduct had acquired him the surname of *wise*, as he had already baffled all the experience and valour of the two Edwards, was likely to prove a dangerous enemy to a minor king: But his genius, which was not naturally enterprizing, led him not, at present, to give any disturbance to his neighbours; and he laboured, besides, under many difficulties at home, which it was necessary for him to surmount, before he could think of making conquests in a foreign country. England was master of Calais, Bourdeaux, and Bayonne; had lately acquired possession of Cherbourg, from the cession of the king of Navarre, and of Brest from that of the duke of Britanny [d]; and having thus an easy entrance into France from every quarter, was able, even in its present situation, to give disturbance to his government. Before Charles could remove the English from these important posts, he died in the flower of his age, and left his kingdom to a minor son, who bore the name of Charles VI.

CHAP. XVII. 1377.

MEANWHILE, the war with France was carried on in a manner somewhat languid, and produced no enterprize of great lustre or renown. Sir Hugh Calverley, who had formerly headed a company of banditti in France, (for he, as well as Sir Robert Knolles, and many of the most renowned commanders of Edward, had once followed that dishonourable profession) was governor of Calais; and making an inroad into Picardy, with a detachment of the garrison, he set fire to Boulogne [e]. The duke of Lancaster conducted an army into Britanny, but returned 1378.

[d] Rymer, vol. vii. p. 190. [e] Walsing. p. 209.

CHAP. XVII.

without being able to perform any thing memorable. In a ſubſequent year, the duke of Gloceſter marched out of

1380. Calais with a body of 2000 cavalry, and 8000 infantry; and ſcrupled not, with this ſmall army, to enter into the heart of France, and to continue his ravages, through Picardy, Champaigne, the Brie, the Beauſſe, the Gatinois, the Orleanois, till he reached his allies in the province of Britanny [f]. The duke of Burgundy, at the head of a more conſiderable army, came within ſight of him; but the French were ſo over-awed by the former ſucceſſes of the Engliſh, that no ſuperiority of numbers could tempt them to venture a pitched battle with the troops of that nation. As the duke of Britanny, ſoon after the arrival of theſe ſuccours, formed an accommodation with the court of France; this enterprize alſo proved in the iſſue unſucceſsful, and made no durable impreſſion upon the enemy.

THE expences of theſe armaments, and the uſual want of œconomy attending a minority, much exhauſted the Engliſh treaſury, and obliged the parliament, beſides making ſome alterations in the council, to impoſe a new and extraordinary tax of three groats on every perſon, male and female, above fifteen years of age; and they ordained, that, in levying that tax, the opulent ſhould relieve the poor by an equitable compenſation. This impoſition excited a mutiny, which was ſingular in its circumſtances. All hiſtory abounds with examples, where the great tyrannize over the meaner ſort: But here the loweſt populace roſe againſt their rulers, committed the moſt cruel ravages upon them, and took vengeance for all former oppreſſions.

1381. THE faint dawnings of the arts and of good government in that age, had excited the minds of the populace,

[f] Froiſſard, liv. 2. chap. 50, 51. Walſing. p. 239.

in

in different ſtates of Europe, to wiſh for a better condition, and to murmur againſt thoſe chains, which the laws, enacted by the haughty nobility and gentry, had ſo long impoſed upon them. The commotions of the people in Flanders, the mutiny of the peaſants in France, were the natural effects of this growing ſpirit of independance; and the report of theſe events, being brought into England, where perſonal ſlavery, as we learn from Froiſſard [g], was more general than in any other country in Europe, had prepared the minds of the multitude for an inſurrection. One John Ball alſo, a ſeditious preacher, who affected low popularity, went about the country, and inculcated on his audience the principles of the firſt origin of mankind from one common ſtock, their equal right to liberty and to all the goods of nature, the tyranny of artificial diſtinctions, and the abuſes which had ariſen from the degradation of the more conſiderable part of the ſpecies, and the aggrandizement of a few inſolent rulers [h]. Theſe doctrines, ſo agreeable to the populace, and ſo conformable to the ideas of primitive equality, which are engraven in the hearts of all men, were greedily received by the multitude; and ſcattered the ſparks of that ſedition, which the preſent tax raiſed into a conflagration [i]. CHAP. XVII. 1381.

Inſurrections of the common people.

THE impoſition of three groats a head had been farmed out to tax-gatherers in each county, who levied the money on the people with rigour; and the clauſe, of making the rich eaſe their poorer neighbours of ſome ſhare of the burden, being ſo vague and undetermined, had doubtleſs occaſioned many partialities, and made the people more

g Liv. 2. chap. 74. h Froiſſard, liv. 2. chap. 74. Walſingham, p. 275.

i There were two verſes at that time in the mouths of all the common people, which, in ſpite of prejudice, one cannot but regard with ſome degree of approbation:

When Adam delv'd and Eve ſpan,
Where was then the gentleman?

CHAP. XVII.

1381.

senſible of the unequal lot, which fortune had aſſigned them in the diſtribution of her favours. The firſt diſorder was raiſed by a black-ſmith in a village of Eſſex. The tax-gatherers came to this man's ſhop, while he was at work; and they demanded payment for his daughter, whom he aſſerted to be below the age aſſigned by the ſtatute. One of theſe fellows offered to produce a very indecent proof to the contrary, and at the ſame time laid hold of the maid: Which the father reſenting, immediately knocked out the ruffian's brains with his hammer. The byſtanders applauded the action, and exclaimed, that it was full time for the people to take vengeance on their tyrants, and to vindicate their native liberty. They immediately flew to arms: The whole neighbourhood joined in the ſedition: The flame ſpread in an inſtant over the county: It ſoon propagated itſelf into that of Kent, of Hertford, Surrey, Suſſex, Suffolk, Norfolk, Cambridge, and Lincoln. Before the government had the leaſt warning of the danger, the diſorder had grown beyond controul or oppoſition: The populace had ſhaken off all regard to their former maſters: And being headed by the moſt audacious and criminal of their aſſociates, who aſſumed the feigned names of Wat Tyler, Jack Straw, Hob Carter, and Tom Miller, by which they were fond of denoting their mean origin, they committed every where the moſt outrageous violence on ſuch of the gentry or nobility as had the misfortune to fall into their hands.

12th June.

THE mutinous populace, amounting to a hundred thouſand men, aſſembled on Black-heath, under their leaders, Tyler and Straw; and as the princeſs of Wales, the king's mother, returning from a pilgrimage to Canterbury, paſſed through the midſt of them, they inſulted her attendants, and ſome of the moſt inſolent among them, to ſhew their purpoſe of levelling all mankind, forced kiſſes from her; but they allowed her to continue her journey,

journey, without attempting any farther injury [l]. They sent a message to the king, who had taken shelter in the Tower; and they desired a conference with him. Richard sailed down the river in a barge for that purpose; but on his approaching the shore, he saw such symptoms of tumult and insolence, that he put back and returned to that fortress [m]. The seditious peasants, meanwhile, favoured by the populace of London, had broken into the city; had burned the duke of Lancaster's palace of the Savoy; cut off the heads of all the gentlemen whom they laid hold of; expressed a particular animosity against the lawyers and attornies; and pillaged the warehouses of the rich merchants [n]. A great body of them quartered themselves at Mile-end; and the king, finding no defence in the Tower, which was weakly garrisoned, and ill supplied with provisions, was obliged to go out to them, and ask their demands. They required a general pardon, the abolition of slavery, freedom of commerce in market-towns without toll or impost, and a fixed rent on lands instead of the services due by villenage. These requests, which, though extremely reasonable in themselves, the nation was not sufficiently prepared to receive, and which it was dangerous to have extorted by violence, were however complied with; charters to that purpose were granted them; and this body immediately dispersed and returned to their several homes [o].

CHAP. XVII. 1381.

During this transaction, another body of the rebels had broken into the Tower; had murdered Simon Sudbury, the primate, and chancellor, with Sir Robert Hales, the treasurer, and some other persons of distinction; and continued their ravages in the city [p]. The king, passing along Smithfield, very slenderly guarded, met with Wat

[l] Froissard, liv. 2. chap. 74. [m] Ibid. chap. 75. [n] Ibid. chap. 76. Walsingham, p. 248, 249. [o] Froissard, liv. 2. chap. 77. [p] Walsingham, p. 250, 251.

Tyler,

CHAP. XVII. 1381.

Tyler, at the head of theſe rioters, and entered into a conference with him. Tyler, having ordered his companions to retire till he ſhould give them a ſignal, after which they were to murder all the company except the king himſelf, whom they were to detain priſoner, feared not to come into the midſt of the royal retinue. He there behaved himſelf in ſuch a manner, that Walworth, the mayor of London, not able to bear his inſolence, drew his ſword, and ſtruck him ſo violent a blow as brought him to the ground, where he was inſtantly diſpatched by others of the king's train. The mutineers, ſeeing their leader fall, prepared themſelves for revenge; and this whole company, with the king himſelf, had undoubtedly periſhed on the ſpot, had it not been for an extraordinary preſence of mind, which Richard diſcovered on this occaſion. He ordered his company to ſtop; he advanced alone towards the enraged multitude; and accoſting them with an affable and intrepid countenance, he aſked them, "What is the meaning of this diſorder, my good people? "Are ye angry that ye have loſt your leader? I am "your king: I will be your leader." The populace, overawed by his preſence, implicitly followed him: He led them out into the fields, to prevent any diſorder which might have ariſen by their continuing in the city: Being there joined by Sir Robert Knolles and a body of well armed veteran ſoldiers, who had been ſecretly drawn together, he ſtrictly prohibited that officer from falling on the rioters, and committing an undiſtinguiſhed ſlaughter upon them; and he peaceably diſmiſſed them with the ſame charters, which had been granted to their companions [q]. Soon after, the nobility and gentry, hearing of the king's danger, in which they were all involved, flocked to London, with their adherents and retainers; and Richard took the field at the head of an army 40,000

[q] Froiſſard, vol. ii. chap. 77. Walſingham, p. 252. Knyghton, p. 2637.

ſtrong.

ſtrong [r]. It then behoved all the rebels to ſubmit: The charters of enfranchiſement and pardon were revoked by parliament; the low people were reduced to the ſame ſlaviſh condition as before; and ſeveral of the ringleaders were ſeverely puniſhed for the late diſorders. Some were even executed without proceſs or form of law [s]. It was pretended, that the intentions of the mutineers had been to ſeize the king's perſon, to carry him through England at their head, to murder all the nobility, gentry, and lawyers, and even all the biſhops and prieſts, except the mendicant friars; to diſpatch afterwards the king himſelf; and having thus reduced all to a level, to order the kingdom at their pleaſure [t]. It is not impoſſible, but many of them, in the delirium of their firſt ſucceſs, might have formed ſuch projects: But of all the evils incident to human ſociety, the inſurrections of the populace, when not raiſed and ſupported by perſons of higher quality, are the leaſt to be dreaded: The miſchiefs, conſequent to an abolition of all rank and diſtinction, become ſo great, that they are immediately felt, and ſoon bring affairs back to their former order and arrangement.

CHAP. XVII. 1381.

A YOUTH of ſixteen, (which was at this time the king's age) who had diſcovered ſo much courage, preſence of mind, and addreſs, and had ſo dexterouſly eluded the violence of this tumult, raiſed great expectations in the nation; and it was natural to hope, that he would, in the courſe of his life, equal the glories, which had ſo uniformly attended his father and his grandfather, in all their undertakings. But in proportion as Richard advanced in years, theſe hopes vaniſhed; and his want of capacity, at leaſt of ſolid judgment, appeared in every enterprize, which he attempted. The Scots, ſenſible of their own deficiency in cavalry, had applied to the regency of

1385.

[r] Walſingham, p. 267. [s] 5 Rich. II. cap. ult. as quoted in the obſervations on ancient ſtatutes, p. 262. [t] Walſingham, p. 265.

Charles

CHAP. XVII. 1385. Charles VI.; and John de Vienne, admiral of France, had been ſent over with a body of 1500 men at arms, to ſupport them in their incurſions againſt the Engliſh. The danger was now deemed by the king's uncles ſomewhat ſerious; and a numerous army of 60,000 men was levied and marched into Scotland, with Richard himſelf at the head of it. The Scots did not pretend to make reſiſtance againſt ſo great a force: They abandoned without ſcruple their country to be pillaged and deſtroyed by the enemy: And when de Vienne expreſſed his ſurprize at this plan of operations, they told him, that all their cattle was driven into the foreſts and faſtneſſes; that their houſes and other goods were of ſmall value; and that they well knew how to compenſate themſelves for any loſſes which they might ſuſtain in that reſpect, by making an incurſion into England. Accordingly, when Richard entered Scotland by Berwic and the eaſt coaſt, the Scots, to the number of 30,000 men, attended by the French, entered the borders of England by the weſt, and carrying their ravages through Cumberland, Weſtmoreland, and Lancaſhire, collected a rich booty, and then returned in tranquillity to their own country. Richard meanwhile advanced towards Edinburgh, and deſtroyed in his way all the towns and villages on each ſide of him: He reduced that city to aſhes: He treated in the ſame manner, Perth, Dundee, and other places in the low countries; but when he was adviſed to march towards the weſt coaſt, to await there the return of the enemy, and to take revenge on them for their devaſtations, his impatience to return to England, and enjoy his uſual pleaſures and amuſements, outweighed every conſideration; and he led back his army without effecting any thing by all theſe mighty preparations. The Scots, ſoon after, finding the heavy bodies of French cavalry very uſeleſs in that deſultory kind of war, to which they confined themſelves,

treated

treated their allies so ill, that the French returned home; much disgusted with the country, and with the manners of its inhabitants [u]. And the English, though they regretted the indolence and levity of their king, saw themselves for the future secured against any dangerous invasion from that quarter. CHAP. XVII. 1385.

BUT it was so material an interest of the French court to wrest the sea-port towns from the hands of their enemy, that they resolved to attempt it by some other expedient, and found no means so likely as an invasion of England itself. They collected a great fleet and army at Sluise; for the Flemings were now in alliance with them: All the nobility of France were engaged in this enterprize: The English were kept in alarm: Great preparations were made for the reception of the invaders: And though the dispersion of the French ships by a storm, and the taking of many of them by the English, before the embarkation of the troops, freed the kingdom from the present danger, the king and council were fully sensible, that this perilous situation might every moment return upon them [w]. 1386.

THERE were two circumstances chiefly, which engaged the French at this time to think of such attempts. The one was the absence of the duke of Lancaster, who had carried into Spain the flower of the English military force, in prosecution of his vain claim to the crown of Castile; an enterprize, in which, after some promising success, he was finally disappointed: The other was, the violent dissensions and disorders, which had taken place in the English government.

THE subjection, in which Richard was held by his uncles, particularly by the duke of Gloucester, a prince of

[u] Froissard, liv. 2. chap. 149, 150, &c. liv. 3. chap. 52. Walsingham, p. 316, 317. [w] Froissard, liv. 3. chap. 41, 53. Walsingham, p. 322, 323.

CHAP. XVII. 1386.

ambition and genius, though it was not unſuitable to his years and ſlender capacity, was extremely diſagreeable to his violent temper; and he ſoon attempted to ſhake off the yoke impoſed upon him. Robert de Vere, earl of Oxford, a young man of a noble family, of an agreeable figure, but of diſſolute manners, had acquired an entire aſcendant over him; and governed him with an abſolute authority. The king ſet ſo little bounds to his affection, that he firſt created his favourite marquis of Dublin, a title before unknown in England, and then duke of Ireland; and transferred to him by patent, which was confirmed in parliament, the entire ſovereignty for life of that iſland [x]. He gave him in marriage his couſin-german, the daughter of Ingelram de Couci, earl of Bedford; but ſoon after he permitted him to repudiate that lady, though of an unexceptionable character, and to marry a foreigner, a Bohemian, with whom he had become enamoured [y]. Theſe public declarations of attachment turned the attention of the whole court towards the favourite: All favours paſſed through his hands: Acceſs to the king could only be obtained by his mediation: And Richard ſeemed to take no pleaſure in royal authority, but ſo far as it enabled him to load with favours and titles and dignities this object of his affections.

Diſcontent of the barons.

THE jealouſy of power immediately produced an animoſity between the minion and his creatures on the one hand, and the princes of the blood and chief nobility on the other; and the uſual complaints againſt the inſolence of favourites were loudly echoed, and greedily received, in every part of the kingdom. Moubray earl of Nottingham, the mareſchal, Fitz-Alan earl of Arundel, Piercy earl of Northumberland, Montacute earl of Saliſbury, Beauchamp earl of Warwic, were all connected with each

[x] Cotton, p. 310, 311. Cox's Hiſt. of Ireland, p. 129. Walſingham, p. 324. [y] Walſingham, p. 328.

other, and with the princes, by friendſhip or alliance, and ſtill more by their common antipathy to thoſe who had eclipſed them in the king's favour and confidence. No longer kept in awe by the perſonal character of the prince, they ſcorned to ſubmit to his miniſters; and the method, which they took to redreſs the grievance complained of, well-ſuited the violence of that age, and proves the deſperate extremities, to which every oppoſition was ſure to be inſtantly carried. CHAP. XVII. 1386.

MICHAEL DE LA POLE, the preſent chancellor, and lately created earl of Suffolk, was the ſon of an eminent merchant; but had riſen by his abilities and valour during the wars of Edward III. had acquired the friendſhip of that monarch, and was eſteemed the perſon of greateſt experience and capacity among thoſe who were attached to the duke of Ireland and the king's ſecret council. The duke of Gloceſter, who had the houſe of commons at his devotion, impelled them to exerciſe that power which they ſeem firſt to have aſſumed againſt lord Latimer during the declining years of the late king; and an impeachment againſt the chancellor was carried up by them to the houſe of peers, which was no leſs at his devotion. The king foreſaw the tempeſt preparing againſt him and his miniſters. After attempting in vain to rouſe the Londoners to his defence, he withdrew from parliament, and retired with his court to Eltham. The parliament ſent a deputation, inviting him to return, and threatening, that, if he perſiſted in abſenting himſelf, they would immediately diſſolve, and leave the nation, though at that time in imminent danger of a French invaſion, without any ſupport or ſupply for its defence. At the ſame time, a member was encouraged to call for the record, containing the parliamentary depoſition of Edward II.; a plain intimation of the fate, which Richard, if he continued refractory, had reaſon to expect from them.

CHAP. XVII. 1386.

them. The king, finding himself unable to resist, was content to stipulate, that, except finishing the present impeachment against Suffolk, no attack should be made against any other of his ministers; and on that condition, he returned to the parliament [z].

NOTHING can prove more fully the innocence of Suffolk, than the frivolousness of the crimes, which his enemies, in the present plenitude of their power, thought proper to object against him [a]. It was alledged, that being chancellor, and obliged by his oath to consult the king's profit, he had purchased lands of the crown below their true value; that he had exchanged with the king a perpetual annuity of 400 marks a year, which he inherited from his father, and which was assigned upon the customs of the port of Hull, for lands of an equal income; that having obtained for his son the priory of St. Anthony, which was formerly possessed by a Frenchman, an enemy, and a schismatic, and a new prior being at the same time named by the pope, he had refused to admit this person, whose title was not legal, till he made a composition with his son, and agreed to pay him a hundred pounds a year from the income of the benefice; that he had purchased, from one Tydeman of Limborch, an old and forfeited annuity of fifty pounds a-year upon the crown, and had engaged the king to admit that bad debt; and that, when created earl of Suffolk, he had obtained a grant of 500 pounds a-year, to support the dignity of that title [b]. Even the proof of these articles

[z] See note [B] at the end of the volume.

[a] Cotton, p. 315. Knyghton, p. 2683.

[b] It is probable that the earl of Suffolk was not rich, nor able to support the dignity without the bounty of the crown: For his father, Michael de la Pole, though a great merchant, had been ruined by lending money to the late king. See Cotton, p. 194. We may remark that the dukes of Gloucester and York, though vastly rich, received at the same time each of them a thousand pounds a year, to support their dignity. Rymer, vol. vii. p. 481. Cotton, p. 319.

frivolous

frivolous as they are, was found very deficient upon the trial: It appeared, that Suffolk had made no purchaſe from the crown while he was chancellor, and that all his bargains of that kind were made before he was advanced to that dignity [c]. It is almoſt needleſs to add, that he was condemned, notwithſtanding his defence; and that he was deprived of his office. CHAP. XVII. 1386.

GLOCESTER and his aſſociates obſerved their ſtipulation with the king, and attacked no more of his miniſters: But they immediately attacked himſelf and his royal dignity, and framed a commiſſion after the model of thoſe, which had been attempted almoſt in every reign ſince that of Richard I. and which had always been attended with extreme confuſion [d]. By this commiſſion, which was ratified by parliament, a council of fourteen perſons was appointed, all of Gloceſter's faction, except Nevil, archbiſhop of York: The ſovereign power was transferred to theſe men for a twelvemonth: The king, who had now reached the twenty-firſt year of his age, was in reality dethroned: The ariſtocracy was rendered ſupreme: And though the term of the commiſſion was limited, it was eaſy to foreſee, that the intentions of the party were to render it perpetual, and that power would with great difficulty be wreſted from thoſe graſping hands, to which it was once committed. Richard, however, was obliged to ſubmit: He ſigned the commiſſion, which violence had extorted from him; he took an oath never to infringe it; and though at the end of the ſeſſion, he *publicly* entered a proteſt, that the prerogatives of the crown, notwithſtanding his late conceſſion, ſhould ſtill be deemed entire and unimpaired [e], the new commiſſioners, without regarding this declaration, proceeded to the exerciſe of their authority.

[c] Cotton, p. 315. [d] Knyghton, p. 2686. Statutes at large, 10 Rich. II. chap. i. [e] Cotton, p. 318.

ORIEL COLLEGE LIBRARY

CHAP. XVII.

1387. Civil commotions.

THE king, thus diſpoſſeſſed of royal power, was ſoon ſenſible of the contempt, into which he was fallen. His favourites and miniſters, who were as yet allowed to remain about his perſon, failed not to aggravate the injury, which, without any demerit on his part, had been offered to him. And his eager temper was of itſelf ſufficiently inclined to ſeek the means, both of recovering his authority and of revenging himſelf on thoſe who had invaded it. As the houſe of commons appeared now of ſome weight in the conſtitution, he ſecretly tried ſome expedients for procuring a favourable election: He founded ſome of the ſheriffs, who, being at that time both the returning officers, and magiſtrates of great power in the counties, had naturally conſiderable influence in elections [f]. But as moſt of them had been appointed by his uncles, either during his minority, or during the courſe of the preſent commiſſion, he found them in general averſe to his enterprize. The ſentiments and inclinations of the judges were more favourable to him. He met at Nottingham Sir Robert Treſilian, chief juſtice of the King's Bench, Sir Robert Belknappe, chief juſtice of the Common Pleas, Sir John Cary, chief baron of the Exchequer, Holt, Fulthorpe, and Bourg, inferior juſtices, and Lockton, ſerjeant at law; and he propoſed to them ſome queries, which theſe lawyers either from the influence of his authority or of reaſon, made no ſcruple of anſwering in the way he deſired. They declared, that the late commiſſion was derogatory to the royalty and prerogative of the king; that thoſe who procured it, or adviſed the king to conſent to it, were puniſhable with death; that thoſe who neceſſitated and compelled him were guilty of treaſon; that thoſe were equally criminal

[f] In the preamble to 5 Henry IV. cap. vii. it is implied, that the ſheriffs in a manner appointed the members of the houſe of commons, not only in this parliament, but in many others.

who

who ſhould perſevere in maintaining it; that the king has the right of diſſolving parliaments when he pleaſes; that the parliament, while it ſits, muſt proceed firſt upon the king's buſineſs; and that that aſſembly cannot without his conſent impeach any of his miniſters and judges [g]. Even according to our preſent ſtrict maxims with regard to law and the royal prerogative, all theſe determinations, except the two laſt, appear juſtifiable: And as the great privileges of the commons, particularly that of impeachment, were hitherto new, and ſupported by few precedents, there want not plauſible reaſons to juſtify theſe opinions of the judges. They ſigned therefore their anſwer to the king's queries before the archbiſhops of York and Dublin, the biſhops of Durham, Chicheſter, and Bangor, the duke of Ireland, the earl of Suffolk, and two other counſellors of inferior quality.

CHAP. XVII. 1387.

THE duke of Gloceſter, and his adherents, ſoon got intelligence of this ſecret conſultation, and were naturally very much alarmed at it. They ſaw the king's intentions; and they determined to prevent the execution of them. As ſoon as he came to London, which, they knew, was well diſpoſed to their party, they ſecretly aſſembled their forces, and appeared in arms at Haringay-park, near Highgate, with a power, which Richard and his miniſters were not able to reſiſt. They ſent him a meſſage by the archbiſhop of Canterbury, and the lords Lovel, Cobham, and Devereux, and demanded, that the perſons who had ſeduced him by their pernicious counſel, and were traitors both to him and to the kingdom, ſhould be delivered up to them. A few days after, they appeared in his preſence, armed and attended with armed followers; and they accuſed by name the archbiſhop of York, the duke of Ireland, the earl of Suffolk, Sir Robert Treſilian, and Sir Nicholas Brembre, as public and dangerous

[g] Knyghton, p. 2694. Ypod. Neuſt. p. 541.

CHAP. XVII.

enemies to the ſtate. They threw down their gauntlets before the king, and fiercely offered to maintain the truth
1387. of their charge by duel. The perſons accuſed, and all the other obnoxious miniſters, had withdrawn or concealed themſelves.

THE duke of Ireland fled to Cheſhire, and levied ſome forces, with which he advanced to relieve the king from the violence of the nobles. Gloceſter encountered him in Oxfordſhire with much ſuperior forces; routed him, diſperſed his followers, and obliged him to fly into the Low-Countries, where he died in exile a few years after.

1388. 3d Feb. The lords then appeared at London with an army of 40,000 men; and having obliged the king to ſummon a parliament, which was entirely at their devotion, they had full power, by obſerving a few legal forms, to take vengeance on all their enemies. Five great peers, men whoſe combined power was able at any time to ſhake the throne, the duke of Gloceſter, the king's uncle; the earl of Derby, ſon of the duke of Lancaſter; the earl of Arundel; the earl of Warwic, and the earl of Nottingham, mareſchal of England, entered before the parliament an accuſation or appeal, as it was called, againſt the five counſellors, whom they had already accuſed before the king. The parliament, who ought to have been judges, were not aſhamed to impoſe an oath on all their members, by which they bound themſelves to live and die with the lords appellants, and to defend them againſt all oppoſition with their lives and fortunes [h].

Expulſion or execution of the king's miniſters.

THE other proceedings were well ſuited to the violence and iniquity of the times. A charge, conſiſting of thirty-nine articles, was delivered in by the appellants; and as none of the accuſed counſellors, except Sir Nicholas Brembre, was in cuſtody, the reſt were cited to anſwer; and upon their abſenting themſelves, the houſe of

[h] Cotton, p. 322.

peers,

peers, after a very ſhort interval, without hearing a witneſs, without examining a fact, or deliberating on one point of law, declared them guilty of high treaſon. Sir Nicholas Brembre, who was produced in court, had the appearance, and no more than the appearance, of a trial: The peers, though they were not by law his proper judges, pronounced, in a very ſummary manner, ſentence of death upon him; and he was executed, together with Sir Robert Treſilian, who had been diſcovered and taken in the interval. CHAP. XVII. 1388.

It would be tedious to recite the whole charge delivered in againſt the five counſellors; which is to be met with in ſeveral collections [i]. It is ſufficient to obſerve in general, that, if we reaſon upon the ſuppoſition, which is the true one, that the royal prerogative was invaded by the commiſſion extorted by the duke of Gloceſter and his aſſociates, and that the king's perſon was afterwards detained in cuſtody by rebels, many of the articles will appear, not only to imply no crime in the duke of Ireland and the miniſters, but to aſcribe to them actions, which were laudable, and which they were bound by their allegiance to perform. The few articles, impeaching the conduct of theſe miniſters before that commiſſion, which ſubverted the conſtitution, and annihilated all juſtice and legal authority, are vague and general; ſuch as their engroſſing the king's favour, keeping his barons at a diſtance from him, obtaining unreaſonable grants for themſelves or their creatures, and diſſipating the public treaſure by uſeleſs expences. No violence is objected to them; no particular illegal act*; no breach of any ſtatute; and their adminiſtration may therefore be concluded to have been ſo far innocent and inoffenſive. All the diſorders

[i] Knyghton, p. 2715. Tyrrel, vol. iii. part 2. p. 919. from the records. Parliamentary Hiſtory, vol. i. p. 414.

* See note [C] at the end of the volume.

CHAP. XVII. 1388.

indeed seem to have proceeded, not from any violation of the laws, or any ministerial tyranny; but merely from a rivalship of power, which the duke of Gloceſter, and the great nobility, agreeably to the genius of the times, carried to the utmoſt extremity againſt their opponents, without any regard to reaſon, juſtice, or humanity.

But theſe were not the only deeds of violence committed during the triumph of the party. All the other judges, who had ſigned the extrajudicial opinions at Nottingham, were condemned to death, and were, as a grace or favour, baniſhed to Ireland; though they pleaded the fear of their lives, and the menaces of the king's miniſters as their excuſe. Lord Beauchamp of Holt, Sir James Berners, and John Saliſbury, were alſo tried and condemned for high treaſon; merely becauſe they had attempted to defeat the late commiſſion: But the life of the latter was ſpared. The fate of Sir Simon Burley was more ſevere: This gentleman was much beloved for his perſonal merit, had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by many honourable actions [k], was created knight of the garter, and had been appointed governor to Richard, by the choice of the late king and of the Black Prince: He had attended his maſter from the earlieſt infancy of that prince, and had ever remained extremely attached to him: Yet all theſe conſiderations could not ſave him from falling a victim to Gloceſter's vengeance. This execution, more than all the others, made a deep impreſſion on Richard's mind: His queen too (for he was already married, to the ſiſter of the emperor Winceſlaus, king of Bohemia) intereſted herſelf in behalf of Burley: She remained three hours on her

[k] At leaſt this is the character given of him by Froiſſard, liv. 2. who knew him perſonally: Walſingham, p. 334. gives a very different character of him; but he is a writer ſomewhat paſſionate and partial; and the choice made of this gentleman by Edward III. and the Black Prince for the education of Richard, makes the character given him by Froiſſard, much more probable.

knees

knees before the duke of Gloceſter, pleading for that gentleman's life; but though ſhe was become extremely popular by her amiable qualities, which had acquired her the appellation of *the good queen Ann*; her petition was ſternly rejected by the inexorable tyrant. CHAP. XVII. 1388.

THE parliament concluded this violent ſcene by a declaration, that none of the articles, decided on theſe trials to be treaſon, ſhould ever afterwards be drawn into precedent by the judges, who were ſtill to conſider the ſtatute of the twenty-fifth of Edward as the rule of their deciſions. The houſe of lords ſeem not at that time to have known or acknowledged the principle, that they themſelves were bound, in their judicial capacity, to follow the rules, which they, in conjunction with the king and commons, had eſtabliſhed in their legiſlative *. It was alſo enacted, that every one ſhould ſwear to the perpetual maintenance and ſupport of the forfeitures and attainders, and of all the other acts paſſed during this parliament. The archbiſhop of Canterbury added the penalty of excommunication, as a farther ſecurity to theſe violent tranſactions.

IT might naturally be expected, that the king, being reduced to ſuch ſlavery by the combination of the princes and chief nobility, and having appeared ſo unable to defend his ſervants from the cruel effects of their reſentment, would long remain in ſubjection to them; and never would recover the royal power, without the moſt violent ſtruggles and convulſions: But the event proved contrary. In leſs than a twelvemonth, Richard, who was in his twenty-third year, declared in council, that, as he had now attained the full age, which entitled him to govern by his own authority his kingdom and houſehold, he reſolved to exerciſe his right of ſovereignty; 1389.

* See note [D] at the end of the volume.

CHAP. XVII. 1389.

and when no one ventured to contradict ſo reaſonable an intention, he deprived Fitz-Alan archbiſhop of Canterbury of the dignity of chancellor, and beſtowed that high office on William of Wickham, biſhop of Wincheſter; the biſhop of Hereford was diſplaced from the office of treaſurer, the earl of Arundel from that of admiral; even the duke of Gloceſter and the earl of Warwic were removed for a time from the council-board: And no oppoſition was made to theſe great changes. The hiſtory of this reign is imperfect, and little to be depended on; except where it is ſupported by public records: And it is not eaſy for us to aſſign the reaſon of this unexpected event. Perhaps, ſome ſecret animoſities, naturally to be expected in that ſituation, had creeped in among the great men, and had enabled the king to recover his authority. Perhaps, the violence of their former proceedings had loſt them the affections of the people, who ſoon repent of any cruel extremities, to which they are carried by their leaders. However this may be, Richard exerciſed with moderation the authority which he had reſumed. He ſeemed to be entirely reconciled to his uncles [1] and the other great men, of whom he had ſo much reaſon to complain: He never attempted to recal from baniſhment the duke of Ireland, whom he found ſo obnoxious to them: He confirmed by proclamation the general pardon, which the parliament had paſſed for all offences: And he courted the affections of the people, by voluntarily remitting ſome ſubſidies, which had been granted him; a remarkable, and almoſt ſingular inſtance of ſuch generoſity.

AFTER this compoſure of domeſtic differences, and this reſtoration of the government to its natural ſtate, there paſſes an interval of eight years, which affords not many remarkable events. The duke of Lancaſter re-

[1] Dugdale, vol. ii. p. 170.

turned

turned from Spain; having resigned to his rival all pretensions to the crown of Castile upon payment of a large sum of money [m], and having married his daughter, Philippa, to the king of Portugal. The authority of this prince served to counterbalance that of the duke of Gloucester, and secured the power of Richard, who paid great court to his eldest uncle, by whom he had never been offended, and whom he found more moderate in his temper than the younger. He made a cession to him for life of the dutchy of Guienne [n], which the inclinations and changeable humour of the Gascons had restored to the English government; but as they remonstrated loudly against this deed, it was finally, with the duke's consent, revoked by Richard [o]. There happened an incident, which produced a dissention between Lancaster and his two brothers. After the death of the Spanish princess, he espoused Catharine Swineford, daughter of a private knight of Hainault, by whose alliance, York and Gloucester thought the dignity of their family much injured: But the king gratified his uncle by passing in parliament a charter of legitimation to the children whom that lady had born him before marriage, and by creating the eldest earl of Somerset [p]. CHAP. XVII. 1389.

THE wars, meanwhile, which Richard had inherited with his crown, still continued; though interrupted by frequent truces, according to the practice of that age, and conducted with little vigour, by reason of the weakness of all parties. The French war was scarcely heard of; the tranquillity of the northern borders was only interrupted by one inroad of the Scots, which proceeded more from a rivalship between the two martial families of Piercy and Douglas, than from any national quarrel: A fierce battle or skirmish was fought at Otterborne [q], in

[m] Knyghton, p. 2677. Walsingham, p. 342. [n] Rymer, vol. vii. p. 659. [o] Ibid. p. 687. [p] Cotton, p. 365. Walsingham, p. 352. [q] 15th August, 1388.

which

CHAP. XVII.

which young Piercy, ſirnamed *Hotſpur*, from his impetuous valour, was taken priſoner, and Douglas ſlain; and the victory remained undecided [r]. Some inſurrections of the Iriſh obliged the king to make an expedition into that country, which he reduced to obedience; and he recovered, in ſome degree, by this enterprize, his character of courage, which had ſuffered a little by the inactivity of his reign. At laſt, the Engliſh and French courts began to think in earneſt of a laſting peace; but found it ſo difficult to adjuſt their oppoſite pretenſions, that they were content to eſtabliſh a truce of twenty-five years [s]: Breſt and Cherbourg were reſtored, the former to the duke of Britanny, the latter to the king of Navarre: Both parties were left in poſſeſſion of all the other places which they held at the time of concluding the truce: And to render the amity between the two crowns more durable, Richard, who was now a widower, was affianced to Iſabella, the daughter of Charles [t]. This princeſs was only ſeven years of age; but the king agreed to ſo unequal a match, chiefly that he might fortify himſelf by this alliance, againſt the enterprizes of his uncles and the incurable turbulency as well as inconſtancy of his barons.

1389.

1396.

THE adminiſtration of the king, though it was not, in this interval, ſullied by any unpopular act, except the ſeizing of the charter of London [u], which was ſoon after reſtored, tended not much to corroborate his authority; and his perſonal character brought him into contempt, even while his public government appeared, in a good meaſure, unexceptionable. Indolent, expenſive, addicted to low pleaſures; he ſpent his whole time in feaſting and jollity, and diſſipated, in idle ſhow, or in bounties to favourites of no reputation, that revenue which the people

[r] Froiſſard, liv. 3. chap. 124, 125, 126. Walſingham, p. 355.
[s] Rymer, vol. vii. p. 820.
[t] Ibid. p. 811.
[u] Ibid. p. 727. Walſingham, p. 347.

expected

CHAP. XVII.

expected to see him employ in enterprizes directed to public honour and advantage. He forgot his rank by admitting all men to his familiarity; and he was not sensible, that their acquaintance with the qualities of his mind was not able to impress them with the respect, which he neglected to preserve from his birth and station. The earls of Kent and Huntingdon, his half brothers, were his chief confidents and favourites; and though he never devoted himself to them with so profuse an affection as that with which he had formerly been attached to the duke of Ireland, it was easy for men to see, that every grace passed through their hands, and that the king had rendered himself a mere cypher in the government. The small regard, which the public bore to his person, disposed them to murmur against his administration, and to receive with greedy ears every complaint, which the discontented or ambitious grandees suggested to them. 1396.

Cabals of the duke of Gloucester. 1397.

GLOCESTER soon perceived the advantages, which this dissolute conduct gave him; and finding, that both resentment and jealousy on the part of his nephew still prevented him from acquiring any ascendant over that prince, he determined to cultivate his popularity with the nation, and to revenge himself on those who eclipsed him in favour and authority. He seldom appeared at court or in council: He never declared his opinion but in order to disapprove of the measures embraced by the king and his favourites: And he courted the friendship of every man, whom disappointment or private resentment had rendered an enemy to the administration. The long truce with France was unpopular with the English, who breathed nothing but war against that hostile nation; and Gloucester took care to encourage all the vulgar prejudices, which prevailed on this subject. Forgetting the misfortunes, which attended the English arms during the later

CHAP. XVII. 1397.

later years of Edward; he made an invidious compariſon between the glories of that reign and the inactivity of the preſent, and he lamented that Richard ſhould have degenerated ſo much from the heroic virtues by which his father and his grandfather were diſtinguiſhed. The military men were inflamed with a deſire of war, when they heard him talk of the ſignal victories formerly obtained, and of the eaſy prey which might be made of French riches by the ſuperior valour of the Engliſh: The populace readily embraced the ſame ſentiments: And all men exclaimed, that this prince, whoſe counſels were ſo much neglected, was the true ſupport of Engliſh honour, and alone able to raiſe the nation to its former power and ſplendor. His great abilities, his popular manners, his princely extraction, his immenſe riches, his high office of conſtable [w]; all theſe advantages, not a little aſſiſted by his want of court-favour, gave him a mighty authority in the kingdom, and rendered him formidable to Richard and his miniſters.

FROISSARD [x], a contemporary writer and very impartial, but whoſe credit is ſomewhat impaired by his want of exactneſs in material facts, aſcribes to the duke of Gloceſter more deſperate views, and ſuch as were totally incompatible with the government and domeſtic tranquillity of the nation. According to that hiſtorian, he propoſed to his nephew, Roger Mortimer, earl of Marche, whom Richard had declared his ſucceſſor, to give him immediate poſſeſſion of the throne, by the depoſition of a prince, ſo unworthy of power and authority: And when Mortimer declined this project, he reſolved to make a partition of the kingdom between himſelf, his two brothers, and the earl of Arundel; and entirely to diſpoſſeſs Richard of the crown. The king it is ſaid, being informed of theſe deſigns, ſaw, that either his own ruin

[w] Rymer, vol. vii. p. 152.

[x] Liv. 4. chap. 86.

or

or that of Gloceſter was inevitable; and he reſolved, by a haſty blow, to prevent the execution of ſuch deſtructive projects. This is certain, that Gloceſter, by his own confeſſion, had often affected to ſpeak contemptuouſly of the king's perſon and government; had deliberated concerning the lawfulneſs of throwing off allegiance to him; and even born part in a ſecret conference, where his depoſition was propoſed and talked of, and determined [y]: But it is reaſonable to think, that his ſchemes were not ſo far advanced as to make him think of putting them immediately in execution. The danger, probably, was ſtill too diſtant to render a deſperate remedy entirely neceſſary for the ſecurity of government. 1397.

BUT whatever opinion we may form of the danger ariſing from Gloceſter's conſpiracies, his averſion to the French truce and alliance was public and avowed; and that court, which had now a great influence over the king, puſhed him to provide for his own ſafety, by puniſhing the traiterous deſigns of his uncle. The reſentment againſt his former acts of violence revived; the ſenſe of his refractory and uncompliant behaviour was ſtill recent; and a man, whoſe ambition had once uſurped royal authority, and who had murdered all the faithful ſervants of the king, was thought capable, on a favourable opportunity, of renewing the ſame criminal enterprizes. The king's precipitate temper admitted of no deliberation: He ordered Gloceſter to be unexpectedly arreſted; to be hurried on board a ſhip which was lying in the river; and to be carried over to Calais, where alone, by reaſon of his nume-

[y] Cotton, p. 378. Tyrrel, vol. iii. part 2. p. 972, from the records. Parliamentary Hiſtory, vol. i. p. 473. That this confeſſion was genuine, and obtained without violence, may be entirely depended on. Judge Rickhill, who brought it over from Calais, was tried on that account, and acquitted in the firſt parliament of Henry IV. when Gloceſter's party was prevalent. His acquittal, notwithſtanding his innocence, may even appear marvellous, conſidering the times. See Cotton, p. 393.

rous

CHAP. XVII.

1397. rous partizans, he could ſafely be detained in cuſtody [z]. The earls of Arundel and Warwic were ſeized at the ſame time: The malcontents, ſo ſuddenly deprived of their leaders, were aſtoniſhed, and overawed: And the concurrence of the dukes of Lancaſter and York in thoſe meaſures, together with the earls of Derby and Rutland, the ſons of theſe princes [a], bereaved them of all poſſibility of reſiſtance.

17th Sept. A PARLIAMENT was immediately ſummoned at Weſtminſter; and the king doubted not to find the peers, and ſtill more the commons, very compliant with his will. This houſe had in a former parliament given him very ſenſible proofs of their attachment *; and the preſent ſuppreſſion of Gloceſter's party made him ſtill more aſſured of a favourable election. As a farther expedient for that purpoſe, he is alſo ſaid to have employed the influence of the ſheriffs; a practice which, though not unuſual, gave umbrage, but which the eſtabliſhed authority of that aſſembly rendered afterwards ſtill more familiar to the nation. Accordingly, the parliament paſſed whatever acts the king was pleaſed to dictate to them [b]: They annulled for ever the commiſſion which uſurped upon the royal authority, and declared it treaſonable to attempt, in any future period, the revival of any ſimilar commiſſion [c]: They abrogated all the acts, which attainted the king's miniſters, and which that parliament who paſſed them, and the whole nation, had ſworn inviolably to maintain: And they declared the general pardon then granted to be invalid, as extorted by force, and never ratified by the free conſent of the king. Though Richard, after he reſumed the government, and lay no longer under conſtraint,

[z] Froiſſard, liv. 4. chap. 90. Walſing. p. 354. [a] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 7. * See note [E] at the end of the volume.

[b] The nobles brought numerous retainers with them to give them ſecurity, as we are told by Waſingham, p. 354. The king had only a few Cheſhire men for his guard. [c] Statutes at large, 21 Richard II.

had

had voluntarily, by proclamation, confirmed that general indemnity; this circumſtance ſeemed not, in their eyes, to merit any conſideration. Even a particular pardon granted ſix years after to the earl of Arundel, was annulled by parliament; on pretence, that it had been procured by ſurprize, and that the king was not then fully acquainted with the degree of guilt incurred by that nobleman. CHAP. XVII. 1397.

THE commons then entered an impeachment againſt Fitz-Alan, archbiſhop of Canterbury, and brother to Arundel, and accuſed him for his concurrence in procuring the illegal commiſſion, and in attainting the king's miniſters. The primate pleaded guilty; but as he was protected by the eccleſiaſtical privileges, the king was ſatisfied with a ſentence, which baniſhed him the kingdom, and ſequeſtered his temporalities [d]. An appeal or accuſation was preſented againſt the duke of Gloceſter, and the earls of Arundel and Warwic, by the earls of Rutland, Kent, Huntingdon, Somerſet, Saliſbury, and Nottingham, together with the lords Spencer and Scrope, and they were accuſed of the ſame crimes which had been imputed to the archbiſhop, as well as of their appearance againſt the king in a hoſtile manner at Haringay-park. The earl of Arundel, who was brought to the bar, wiſely confined all his defence to the pleading of both the general and particular pardon of the king; but his plea being over-ruled, he was condemned, and executed [e]. The earl of Warwic, who was alſo convicted of high treaſon, was, on account of his ſubmiſſive behaviour, pardoned as to his life, but doomed to perpetual baniſhment in the Iſle of Man. No new acts of treaſon were imputed to either of theſe noblemen. The only crimes, for which they were condemned, were the old attempts againſt the crown, which ſeemed to be obliterated, both by the diſtance of

[d] Cotton, p. 368. Walſing. p. 354.

[e] Ibid. p. 377. Froiſſard, liv. 4. chap. 90.

CHAP. XVII.

1397. time, and by repeated pardons [f]. The reaſons of this method of proceeding, it is difficult to conjecture. The recent conſpiracies of Gloceſter ſeem certain from his own confeſſion: But, perhaps, the king and miniſtry had not, at that time, in their hands, any ſatisfactory proof of their reality; perhaps, it was difficult to convict Arundel and Warwic, of any participation in them; perhaps, an enquiry into theſe conſpiracies would have involved in the guilt ſome of thoſe great noblemen, who now concurred with the crown, and whom it was neceſſary to cover from all imputation; or perhaps, the king, according to the genius of that age, was indifferent about maintaining even the appearance of law and equity, and was only ſolicitous by any means to enſure ſucceſs in theſe proſecutions. This point, like many others in ancient hiſtory, we are obliged to leave altogether undetermined.

Murder of the duke of Gloceſter.

A WARRANT was iſſued to the earl Mareſchal, governor of Calais, to bring over the duke of Gloceſter, in order to his trial; but the governor returned for anſwer, that the duke had died ſuddenly of an apoplexy in that fortreſs. Nothing could be more ſuſpicious, from the time, than the circumſtances of that prince's death: It became immediately the general opinion, that he was murdered by orders from his nephew: In the ſubſequent reign undoubted proofs were produced in parliament, that he had been ſuffocated with pillows by his keepers [g]: And it appeared, that the king, apprehenſive leſt the public trial and execution of ſo popular a prince, and ſo near a relation, might prove both dangerous and invidious, had taken this baſe method of gratifying, and, as he fancied, concealing, his revenge upon him. Both parties, in their ſucceſſive triumphs, ſeem to have had no farther concern than that of retaliating upon their adverſaries;

[f] Tyrrel, vol. iii. part. 2. p. 968. from the records.

[g] Cotton, p. 399, 400. Dugdale, vol. ii. p. 171.

and

and neither of them were aware, that, by imitating, they indirectly juſtified, as far as it lay in their power, all the illegal violence of the oppoſite party. CHAP. XVII. 1397.

THIS ſeſſion concluded with the creation or advancement of ſeveral peers: The earl of Derby was made duke of Hereford; the earl of Rutland, duke of Albemarle; the earl of Kent, duke of Surrey; the earl of Huntingdon, duke of Exeter; the earl of Nottingham, duke of Norfolk; the earl of Somerſet, marquis of Dorſet; lord Spencer, earl of Gloceſter; Ralph Nevil, earl of Weſtmoreland; Thomas Piercy, earl of Worceſter; William Scrope, earl of Wiltſhire [h]. The parliament, after a ſeſſion of twelve days, was adjourned to Shrewſbury. The king, before the departure of the members, exacted from them an oath for the perpetual maintenance and eſtabliſhment of all their acts; an oath, ſimilar to that which had formerly been required by the duke of Gloceſter and his party, and which had already proved ſo vain and fruitleſs.

BOTH king and parliament met in the ſame diſpoſitions at Shrewſbury. So anxious was Richard for the ſecurity of theſe acts, that he obliged the lords and commons to ſwear anew to them on the croſs of Canterbury [i]; and he ſoon after procured a bull from the pope, by which they were, as he imagined, perpetually ſecured and eſtabliſhed [k]. The parliament, on the other hand, conferred on him *for life* the duties on wool, wool-fells, and leather, and granted him beſides, a ſubſidy of one tenth and a half, and one fifteenth and a half. They alſo reverſed the attainder of Treſilian and the other judges; and with the approbation of the preſent judges, declared the anſwers, for which theſe magiſtrates had been impeached, 1398. 28th Jan.

[h] Cotton, p. 370, 371. [i] Ibid. p. 371. [k] Walſing. p. 355.

CHAP. XVII. 1398.

to be just and legal [l]: And they carried so far their retrospect as to reverse, on the petition of lord Spencer, earl of Gloucester, the attainder pronounced against the two Spencers in the reign of Edward II [m]. The ancient history of England is nothing but a catalogue of reversals: Every thing is in fluctuation and movement: One faction is continually undoing what was established by another: And the multiplied oaths, which each party exacted for the security of the present acts, betray a perpetual consciousness of their instability.

THE parliament, before they were dissolved, elected a committee of twelve lords and six commoners [n], whom they invested with the whole power both of lords and commons, and endowed with full authority to finish all business, which had been laid before the houses, and which they had not had leisure to bring to a conclusion [o]. This was an unusual concession; and though it was limited in the object, might, either immediately or as a precedent, have proved dangerous to the constitution: But the cause of that extraordinary measure was an event singular and unexpected, which engaged the attention of the parliament.

AFTER the destruction of the duke of Gloucester and the heads of that party, a misunderstanding broke out among those noblemen, who had joined in the prosecution; and the king wanted either authority sufficient to appease it, or foresight to prevent it. The duke of Hereford appeared in parliament, and accused the duke of Nor-

[l] Statutes at large, 21 Rich. II. [m] Cotton, p. 372.

[n] The names of the commissioners were the dukes of Lancaster, York, Albemarle, Surrey, and Exeter, the marquis of Dorset, the earls of March, Salisbury, Northumberland, Gloucester, Winchester, and Wiltshire, John Bussey, Henry Green, John Russel, Robert Teyne, Henry Chelmeswike, and John Golofre. It is to be remarked, that the duke of Lancaster always concurred with the rest in all their proceedings, even in the banishment of his son, which was afterwards so much complained of.

[o] Cotton, p. 372. Walsing. p. 355.

folk

folk of having ſpoken to him, in private, many ſlanderous words of the king, and of having imputed to that prince an intention of ſubverting and deſtroying many of his principal nobility [p]. Norfolk denied the charge, gave Hereford the lie, and offered to prove his own innocence by duel. The challenge was accepted: The time and place of combat were appointed: And as the event of this important trial by arms might require the interpoſition of legiſlative authority, the parliament thought it more ſuitable to delegate their power to a committee, than to prolong the ſeſſion beyond the uſual time which cuſtom and general convenience had preſcribed to it [q]. CHAP. XVII. 1398.

THE duke of Hereford was certainly very little delicate in the point of honour, when he revealed a private converſation to the ruin of the perſon who had entruſted him; and we may thence be more inclined to believe the duke of Norfolk's denial, than the other's aſſeveration. But Norfolk had in theſe tranſactions betrayed an equal neglect of honour, which brings him entirely on a level with his antagoniſt. Though he had publickly joined with the duke of Gloceſter and that party in all the former acts of violence againſt the king; and his name ſtands among the appellants who accuſed the duke of Ireland and the other miniſters: Yet was he not aſhamed publicly to impeach his former aſſociates for the very crimes, which he had concurred with them in committing; and his name encreaſes the liſt of thoſe appellants who brought them to a trial. Such were the principles and practices of thoſe ancient knights and barons during the prevalence of the ariſtocratical government, and the reign of chivalry.

[p] Cotton, p. 372. Parliamentary hiſtory, vol. i. p. 490.

[q] In the firſt year of Henry VI. when the authority of parliament was great, and when that aſſembly could leaſt be ſuſpected of lying under violence, a like conceſſion was made to the privy council from like motives of convenience. See Cotton, p. 564.

CHAP. XVII.

1398. THE lists for this decision of truth and right were appointed at Coventry before the king: All the nobility of England bandied into parties, and adhered either to the one duke or the other: The whole nation was held in suspence with regard to the event: But when the two champions appeared in the field, accoutered for the combat, the king interposed, to prevent both the present effusion of such noble blood, and the future consequences of the quarrel. By the advice and authority of the parliamentary commissioners, he stopped the duel; and to show his impartiality, he ordered, by the same authority, both the combatants to leave the kingdom [r]; assigning one country for the place of Norfolk's exile, which he declared perpetual, and another for that of Hereford, which he limited to ten years.

HEREFORD was a man of great prudence and command of temper; and he behaved himself with so much submission in these delicate circumstances, that the king, before his departure, promised to shorten the term of his exile four years; and he also granted him letters patent, by which he was empowered, in case any inheritance should in the interval accrue to him, to enter immediately in possession, and to postpone the doing of homage till his return.

Banishment of Henry duke of Hereford.

THE weakness and fluctuation of Richard's counsels appear no where more evident than in the conduct of this affair. No sooner had Hereford left the kingdom, than the king's jealousy of the power and riches of that family revived; and he was sensible, that, by Gloucester's death, he had only removed a counterpoize to the Lancastrian interest, which was now become formidable to his crown and kingdom. Being informed, that Hereford had entered into a treaty of marriage with the daughter of the duke of Berry, uncle to the French king, he determined to pre-

[r] Cotton, p. 380. Walsingham, p. 356.

vent

vent the finiſhing of an alliance, which would ſo much extend the intereſt of his couſin into foreign countries; and he ſent over the earl of Saliſbury to Paris with a commiſſion for that purpoſe. The death of the duke of Lancaſter, which happened ſoon after, called upon him to take new reſolutions with regard to that opulent ſucceſſion. The preſent duke, in conſequence of the king's patent, deſired to be put in poſſeſſion of the eſtate and juriſdictions of his father: But Richard, afraid of ſtrengthening the hands of a man, whom he had already ſo much offended, applied to the parliamentary commiſſioners, and perſuaded them, that this affair was but an appendage to that buſineſs which the parliament had delegated to them. By their authority, he revoked his letters patent, and retained poſſeſſion of the eſtate of Lancaſter: And by the ſame authority, he ſeized and tried the duke's attorney, who had procured and inſiſted on the letters, and he had him condemned as a traitor, for faithfully executing that truſt to his maſter [s]. A moſt extravagant act of power! even though the king changed, in favour of the attorney, the penalty of death into that of baniſhment.

CHAP. XVII. 1399. 3d Feb.

HENRY, the new duke of Lancaſter, had acquired, by his conduct and abilities, the eſteem of the public; and having ſerved with diſtinction againſt the infidels in Lithuania, he had joined to his other praiſes thoſe of piety and valour, virtues which have at all times a great influence over mankind, and were, during thoſe ages, the qualities chiefly held in eſtimation [t]. He was connected with moſt of the principal nobility by blood, alliance, or friendſhip; and as the injury, done him by the king, might in its conſequences affect all of them, he eaſily brought them, by a ſenſe of common intereſt, to take part in his reſentment. The people, who muſt have an object of affection, who found nothing in the king's perſon,

[s] Tyrrel, vol. iii. part 2. p. 991, from the records. [t] Walſingham, p. 343.

CHAP. XVII.

1399. which they could love or revere, and who were even diſguſted with many parts of his conduct [u], eaſily transferred to Henry that attachment, which the death of the duke of Gloceſter had left without any fixed direction. His misfortunes were lamented; the injuſtice, which he had ſuffered, was complained of; and all men turned their eyes towards him, as the only perſon that could retrieve the loſt honour of the nation, or redreſs the ſuppoſed abuſes in the government.

Return of Henry.

WHILE ſuch were the diſpoſitions of the people, Richard had the imprudence to embark for Ireland, in order to revenge the death of his couſin, Roger earl of Marche, the preſumptive heir of the crown, who had lately been ſlain in a ſkirmiſh by the natives; and he thereby left the kingdom of England open to the attempts of his pro-

4th July. voked and ambitious enemy. Henry, embarking at Nantz with a retinue of ſixty perſons, among whom were the archbiſhop of Canterbury and the young earl of Arundel, nephew to that prelate, landed at Ravenſpur in Yorkſhire; and was immediately joined by the earls of Northumberland and Weſtmoreland, two of the moſt potent barons in England. He here took a ſolemn oath, that he had no other purpoſe in this invaſion, than to recover the dutchy of Lancaſter, unjuſtly detained from him; and he invited all his friends in England, and all lovers of their country, to ſecond him in this reaſonable and moderate pretenſion. Every place was in commotion: The malcontents in all quarters flew to arms;

[u] He levied fines upon thoſe who had ten years before joined the duke of Gloceſter and his party: They were obliged to pay him money, before he would allow them to enjoy the benefit of the indemnity; and in the articles of charge againſt him, it is aſſerted, that the payment of one fine did not ſuffice. It is indeed likely, that his miniſters would abuſe the power put into their hands; and this grievance extended to very many people. Hiſtorians agree in repreſenting this practice as a great oppreſſion. See Otterburne, p. 199.

London

London discovered the strongest symptoms of its disposition to mutiny and rebellion: And Henry's army, encreasing on every day's march, soon amounted to the number of 60,000 combatants. CHAP. XVII. 1399.

General insurrection.

The duke of York was left guardian of the realm; a place to which his birth intitled him, but which both his slender abilities, and his natural connexions with the duke of Lancaster, rendered him utterly incapable of filling in such a dangerous emergency. Such of the chief nobility, as were attached to the crown, and could either have seconded the guardian's good intentions, or have overawed his infidelity, had attended the king into Ireland; and the efforts of Richard's friends were every where more feeble than those of his enemies. The duke of York, however, appointed the rendezvous of his forces at St. Albans, and soon assembled an army of 40,000 men; but found them entirely destitute of zeal and attachment to the royal cause, and more inclined to join the party of the rebels. He hearkened therefore very readily to a message from Henry, who entreated him not to oppose a loyal and humble supplicant in the recovery of his legal patrimony; and the guardian even declared publicly that he would second his nephew in so reasonable a request. His army embraced with acclamations the same measures; and the duke of Lancaster, reinforced by them, was now entirely master of the kingdom. He hastened to Bristol, into which some of the king's ministers had thrown themselves; and soon obliging that place to surrender, he yielded to the popular wishes, and without giving them a trial, ordered the earl of Wiltshire, Sir John Bussy, and Sir Henry Green, whom he there took prisoners, to be led to immediate execution.

The king, receiving intelligence of this invasion and insurrection, hastened over from Ireland, and landed in Milford Haven with a body of 20,000 men: But even

CHAP. XVII.

1399. this army, so much inferior to the enemy, was either overawed by the general combination of the kingdom, or seized with the same spirit of disaffection: and they gradually deserted him, till he found that he had not above 6000 men, who followed his standard. It appeared, therefore, necessary to retire secretly from this small body, which served only to expose him to danger; and he fled to the isle of Anglesea, where he purposed to embark either for Ireland or France, and there await the favourable opportunities, which the return of his subjects to a sense of duty, or their future discontents against the duke of Lancaster, would probably afford him. Henry, sensible of this danger, sent to him the earl of Northumberland with the strongest professions of loyalty and submission; and that nobleman, by treachery and false oaths, made himself master of the king's person, and carried him to his enemy at Flint Castle. Richard was conducted to
1st Sept. London, by the duke of Lancaster, who was there received with the acclamations of the mutinous populace. It is pretended, that the recorder met him on the road; and in the name of the city, entreated him, for the public safety, to put Richard to death, with all his adherents who were prisoners [w]; but the duke prudently determined to make many others participate in his guilt, before he would proceed to those extremities. For this purpose, he issued writs of election in the king's name, and appointed the immediate meeting of a parliament at Westminster.

SUCH of the peers, as were most devoted to the king, were either fled or imprisoned; and no opponents, even among the barons, dared to appear against Henry, amidst that scene of outrage and violence, which commonly attends revolutions, more especially in England during those turbulent ages. It is also easy to imagine, that a house of

[w] Walsing.

commons, elected during this univerſal ferment, and this triumph of the Lancaſtrian party, would be extremely attached to that cauſe, and ready to ſecond every ſuggeſtion of their leaders. That order, being as yet of too little weight to ſtem the torrent, was always carried along with it, and ſerved only to encreaſe the violence, which the public intereſt required it ſhould endeavour to controul. The duke of Lancaſter therefore, ſenſible that he would be entirely maſter, began to carry his views to the crown itſelf; and he deliberated with his partizans concerning the moſt proper means of effecting his daring purpoſe. He firſt extorted a reſignation from Richard [x]; but as he knew, that this deed would plainly appear the reſult of force and fear, he alſo propoſed, notwithſtanding the danger of the precedent to himſelf and his poſterity, to have him ſolemnly depoſed in parliament for his pretended tyranny and miſconduct. A charge, conſiſting of thirty-three articles, was accordingly drawn up againſt him, and preſented to that aſſembly [y].

1399.

Depoſition of the king.

28th Sept.

If we examine theſe articles, which are expreſſed with extreme acrimony againſt Richard, we ſhall find, that, except ſome raſh ſpeeches which are imputed to him [z], and of whoſe reality, as they are ſaid to have paſſed in private converſation, we may reaſonably entertain ſome doubt; the chief amount of the charge is contained in his violent conduct during the two laſt years of his reign, and naturally divides itſelf into two principal heads. The firſt and moſt conſiderable is the revenge, which he took on the princes and great barons, who had formerly uſurped, and ſtill perſevered in controuling and threatening, his authority; the ſecond is the violation of the laws and general privileges of his people. But the former, however irregular in many of its circumſtances, was fully

[x] Knyghton, p. 2744. Otterburne, p. 212. [y] Tyrrel, vol. iii. part 2. p. 1008, from the records. Knyghton, p. 2746. Otterburne, p. 214. [z] Art. 16, 26.

ſupported

CHAP. XVII.

1399. supported by authority of parliament, and was but a copy of the violence, which the princes and barons themſelves, during their former triumph, had exerciſed againſt him and his party. The detention of Lancaſter's eſtate was, properly ſpeaking, a revocation, by parliamentary authority, of a grace, which the king himſelf had formerly granted him. The murder of Gloceſter (for the ſecret execution, however merited, of that prince, certainly deſerves this appellation) was a private deed, formed not any precedent, and implied not any uſurped or arbitrary power of the crown, which could juſtly give umbrage to the people. It really proceeded from a defect of power in the king, rather than from his ambition; and proves, that, inſtead of being dangerous to the conſtitution, he poſſeſſed not even the authority neceſſary for the execution of the laws.

CONCERNING the ſecond head of accuſation, as it moſtly conſiſts of general facts, was framed by Richard's inveterate enemies, and was never allowed to be anſwered by him or his friends; it is more difficult to form a judgment. The greateſt part of theſe grievances, imputed to Richard, ſeems to be the exertion of arbitrary prerogatives; ſuch as the diſpenſing power [a], levying purveyance [b], employing the marſhal's court [c], extorting loans [d], granting protections from law-ſuits [e]; prerogatives, which, though often complained of, had often been exerciſed by his predeceſſors, and ſtill continued to be ſo by his ſucceſſors. But whether his irregular acts of this kind were more frequent, and injudicious, and violent than uſual, or were only laid hold of and more exaggerated, by the factions, to which the weakneſs of his reign had given birth, we are not able at this diſtance to determine with certainty. There is however one circumſtance, in which

[a] Art. 13, 17, 18. [b] Art. 22. [c] Art. 27.
[d] Art. 14. [e] Art. 16.

his

his conduct is visibly different from that of his grandfather: He is not accused of having imposed one arbitrary tax, without consent of parliament, during his whole reign [f]: Scarcely a year passed during the reign of Edward, which was free from complaints with regard to this dangerous exertion of authority. But, perhaps, the ascendant, which Edward had acquired over his people, together with his great prudence, enabled him to make a use very advantageous to his subjects of this and other arbitrary prerogatives, and rendered them a smaller grievance in his hands, than a less absolute authority in those of his grandson. This is a point, which it would be rash for us to decide positively on either side; but it is certain, that a charge, drawn up by the duke of Lancaster, and assented to by a parliament, situated in these circumstances, forms no manner of presumption with regard to the unusual irregularity or violence of the king's conduct in this particular [g].

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

When the charge against Richard was presented to the parliament, though it was liable, almost in every article, to objections, it was not canvassed, nor examined, nor disputed in either house, and seemed to be received with universal approbation. One man alone, the bishop of Carlisle, had the courage, amidst this general disloyalty and violence, to appear in defence of his unhappy master, and to plead his cause against all the power of the prevailing party. Though some topics, employed by that virtuous prelate, may seem to favour too much the doctrine

f We learn from Cotton, p. 362, that the king, by his chancellor, told the commons, *that they were sunderly bound to him, and namely in forbearing to charge them with dismes and fifteens, the which he meant* no more *to charge them in his own person.* These words *no more* allude to the practice of his predecessors: He had not himself imposed any arbitrary taxes: Even the parliament, in the articles of his deposition, though they complain of heavy taxes, affirm not, that they were imposed illegally or by arbitrary will.

g See note [F] at the end of the volume.

of

CHAP. XVII.

1399.

of paſſive obedience, and to make too large a ſacrifice of the rights of mankind; he was naturally puſhed into that extreme by his abhorrence of the preſent licentious factions; and ſuch intrepidity, as well as diſintereſtedneſs of behaviour, proves, that, whatever his ſpeculative principles were, his heart was elevated far above the meanneſs and abject ſubmiſſion of a ſlave. He repreſented to the parliament, that all the abuſes of government, which could juſtly be imputed to Richard, far from amounting to tyranny, were merely the reſult of error, youth, or miſguided counſel, and admitted of a remedy, more eaſy and ſalutary, than a total ſubverſion of the conſtitution. That even had they been much more violent and dangerous than they really were, they had chiefly proceeded from former examples of reſiſtance, which, making the prince ſenſible of his precarious ſituation, had obliged him to eſtabliſh his throne by irregular and arbitrary expedients. That a rebellious diſpoſition in ſubjects was the principal cauſe of tyranny in kings: Laws could never ſecure the ſubject, which did not give ſecurity to the ſovereign: And if the maxim of inviolable loyalty, which formed the baſis of the Engliſh government, were once rejected, the privileges, belonging to the ſeveral orders of the ſtate, inſtead of being fortified by that licentiouſneſs, would thereby loſe the ſureſt foundation of their force and ſtability. That the parliamentary depoſition of Edward II. far from making a precedent, which could controul this maxim, was only an example of ſucceſsful violence; and it was ſufficiently to be lamented, that crimes were ſo often committed in the world, without eſtabliſhing principles which might juſtify and authorize them. That even that precedent, falſe and dangerous as it was, could never warrant the preſent exceſſes, which were ſo much greater, and which would entail diſtraction and miſery on the nation, to the lateſt poſterity. That the ſucceſſion,

ceſſion, at leaſt, of the crown, was then preſerved inviolate: The lineal heir was placed on the throne: And the people had an opportunity, by their legal obedience to him, of making atonement for the violence, which they had committed againſt his predeceſſor. That a deſcendant of Lionel, duke of Clarence, the elder brother of the late duke of Lancaſter, had deen declared in parliament ſucceſſor to the crown: He had left poſterity: And their title, however it might be overpowered by preſent force and faction, could never be obliterated from the minds of the people. That if the turbulent diſpoſition alone of the nation had overturned the well-eſtabliſhed throne of ſo good a prince as Richard; what bloody commotions muſt enſue, when the ſame cauſe was united to the motive of reſtoring the legal and undoubted heir to his authority? That the new government, intended to be eſtabliſhed, would ſtand on no principle; and would ſcarcely retain any pretence, by which it could challenge the obedience of men of ſenſe and virtue. That the claim of lineal deſcent was ſo groſs as ſcarcely to deceive the moſt ignorant of the populace: Conqueſt could never be pleaded by a rebel againſt his ſovereign: The conſent of the people had no authority in a monarchy not derived from conſent, but eſtabliſhed by hereditary right; and however the nation might be juſtified, in depoſing the miſguided Richard, it could never have any reaſon for ſetting aſide his lawful heir and ſucceſſor, who was plainly innocent. And that the duke of Lancaſter would give them but a bad ſpecimen of the legal moderation, which might be expected from his future government, if he added, to the crime of his paſt rebellion, the guilt of excluding the family, which, both by right of blood, and by declaration of parliament, would, in caſe of Richard's demiſe, or voluntary reſignation, have been received as the undoubted heirs of the monarchy [h].

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

[h] Sir John Heywarde, p. 101.

ALL

CHAP. XVII.

1399. ALL the circumſtances of this event, compared to thoſe which attended the late revolution in 1688, ſhow the difference between a great and civilized nation, deliberately vindicating its eſtabliſhed privileges, and a turbulent and barbarous ariſtocracy, plunging headlong from the extremities of one faction into thoſe of another. This noble freedom of the biſhop of Carliſle, inſtead of being applauded, was not ſo much as tolerated: He was immediately arreſted, by order of the duke of Lancaſter, and ſent a priſoner to the abbey of St. Albans. No farther debate was attempted: Thirty-three long articles of charge were, in one meeting, voted againſt Richard; and voted unanimouſly by the ſame peers and prelates, who, a little before, had, voluntarily and unanimouſly, authorized thoſe very acts of violence, of which they now complained. That prince was depoſed by the ſuffrages of both houſes; and the throne being now vacant, the duke of Lancaſter ſtepped forth, and having croſſed himſelf on the forehead, and on the breaſt, and called upon the name of Chriſt [i], he pronounced theſe words, which we ſhall give in the original language, becauſe of their ſingularity.

In the name of Fadher, Son, and Holy Ghoſt, I Henry of Lancaſter, challenge this rewme of Ynglande, and the croun, with all the membres, and the appurtenances; als I that am deſcendit by right line of the blode, coming fro the gude king Henry therde, and throge that right that God of his grace hath ſent me, with helpe of kyn, and of my frendes to recover it; the which rewme was in poynt to be ondone by defaut of governance, and ondoying of the gude lawes [k].

IN order to underſtand this ſpeech, it muſt be obſerved, that there was a ſilly ſtory, received among ſome of the loweſt vulgar, that Edmond, earl of Lancaſter, ſon of Henry III. was really the elder brother of Edward I.; but

[i] Cotton, p. 389. [k] Knyghton, p. 2757.

that, by reaſon of ſome deformity in his perſon, he had been poſtponed in the ſucceſſion, and his younger brother impoſed on the nation in his ſtead. As the preſent duke of Lancaſter inherited from Edmond by his mother, this genealogy made him the true heir of the monarchy; and it is therefore inſinuated in Henry's ſpeech: But the abſurdity was too groſs to be openly avowed either by him, or by the parliament. The caſe is the ſame with regard to his right of conqueſt: He was a ſubject who rebelled againſt his ſovereign: He entered the kingdom with a retinue of no more than ſixty perſons: He could not therefore be the conqueror of England; and this right is accordingly inſinuated, not avowed. Still there is a third claim, derived from his merits in ſaving the nation from tyranny and oppreſſion; and this claim is alſo inſinuated: But as it ſeemed, by its nature, better calculated as a reaſon for his being *elected* king by a free choice, than for giving him an immediate right of poſſeſſion, he durſt not ſpeak openly even on this head; and to obviate any notion of election, he challenges the crown as his due, either by acquiſition or inheritance. The whole forms ſuch a piece of jargon and nonſenſe, as is almoſt without example: No objection however was made to it in parliament: The unanimous voice of lords and commons placed Henry on the throne: He became king, nobody could tell how or wherefore: The title of the houſe of Marche, formerly recognized by parliament, was neither invalidated nor repealed; but paſſed over in total ſilence: And as a concern for the liberties of the people ſeems to have had no hand in this revolution, their right to diſpoſe of the government, as well as all their other privileges, was left preciſely on the ſame footing as before. But Henry having, when he claimed the crown, dropped ſome obſcure hint concerning conqueſt, which, it was thought, might endanger theſe privileges, he ſoon after made

CHAP. XVII.

1399.

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

made a public declaration, that he did not thereby intend to deprive any one of his franchiſes or liberties [l]: Which was the only circumſtance, where we ſhall find meaning or common ſenſe, in all theſe tranſactions.

6th Oct.

THE ſubſequent events diſcover the ſame headlong violence of conduct, and the ſame rude notions of civil government. The depoſition of Richard diſſolved the parliament: It was neceſſary to ſummon a new one: And Henry, in ſix days after, called together, without any new election, the ſame members; and this aſſembly he denominated a new parliament. They were employed in the uſual taſk of reverſing every deed of the oppoſite party. All the acts of the laſt parliament of Richard, which had been confirmed by their oaths, and by a papal bull, were abrogated: All the acts, which had paſſed in the parliament where Gloceſter prevailed, and which had been abrogated by Richard, were anew eſtabliſhed [m]: The anſwers of Treſilian, and the other judges, which a parliament had annulled, but which a new parliament and new judges had approved, here received a ſecond condemnation. The peers, who had accuſed Gloceſter, Arundel and Warwic, and who had received higher titles for that piece of ſervice, were all of them degraded from their new dignities: Even the practice of proſecuting appeals in parliament was wholly aboliſhed; and trials were reſtored to the courſe of common law [n]. The natural effect of this conduct was to render the people giddy with ſuch rapid and perpetual changes, and to make them loſe all notions of right and wrong in the meaſures of government.

23d Oct.

THE earl of Northumberland made a motion, in the houſe of peers, with regard to the unhappy prince whom they had depoſed. He aſked them, what advice they

[l] Knyghton, p. 2759. Otterborn, p. 220.
[m] Cotton, p. 390.
[n] Henry iv. cap. 14.

would

would give the king for the future treatment of him; since Henry was resolved to spare his life. They unanimously replied, that he should be imprisoned under a secure guard, in some secret place, and should be deprived of all commerce with any of his friends or partizans. It was easy to foresee, that he would not long remain alive in the hands of such barbarous and sanguinary enemies. Historians differ with regard to the manner in which he was murdered. It was long the prevailing opinion, that Sir Piers Exton, and others of his guards fell upon him in the castle of Pomfret, where he was confined, and dispatched him with their halberts. But it is more probable, that he was starved to death in prison; and after all sustenance was denied him, he prolonged his unhappy life, it is said, for a fortnight, before he reached the end of his miseries. This account is more consistent with the story, that his body was exposed in public, and that no marks of violence were observed upon it. He died in the thirty-fourth year of his age, and the twenty-third of his reign. He left no posterity, either legitimate or illegitimate.

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

Murder of the king.

All the writers, who have transmitted to us the history of Richard, lived during the reigns of the Lancastrian princes; and candor requires, that we should not give entire credit to the reproaches, which they have thrown upon his memory. But after making all proper allowances, he still appears to have been a weak prince, and unfit for government, less for want of natural parts and capacity, than of solid judgment and a good education. He was violent in his temper; profuse in his expences; fond of idle show and magnificence; devoted to favourites; and addicted to pleasure: Passions, all of them, the most inconsistent with a prudent œconomy, and consequently dangerous in a limited and mixed government. Had he possessed the talents of gaining, and

His character.

CHAP. XVII.

1399. ſtill more thoſe of over-awing, his great barons, he might have eſcaped all the misfortunes of his reign, and been allowed to carry much farther his oppreſſions over the people, if he really were guilty of any, without their daring to rebel, or even to murmur againſt him. But when the grandees were tempted, by his want of prudence and of vigour, to reſiſt his authority, and execute the moſt violent enterprizes upon him, he was naturally led to ſeek for an opportunity of retaliation; juſtice was neglected; the lives of the chief nobility were ſacrificed; and all theſe enormities ſeem to have proceeded leſs from a ſettled deſign of eſtabliſhing arbitrary power, than from the inſolence of victory, and the neceſſities of the king's ſituation. The manners indeed of the age were the chief ſource of ſuch violence: Laws, which were feebly executed in peaceable times, loſt all their authority during public convulſions: Both parties were alike guilty: Or if any difference may be remarked between them, we ſhall find, that the authority of the crown, being more legal, was commonly carried, when it prevailed, to leſs deſperate extremities, than was that of the ariſtocracy.

On comparing the conduct and events of this reign, with thoſe of the preceding, we ſhall find equal reaſon to admire Edward, and to blame Richard; but the circumſtance of oppoſition, ſurely, will not lie in the ſtrict regard paid by the former to national privileges, and the neglect of them by the latter. On the contrary, the prince of ſmall abilities, as he felt his want of power, ſeems to have been more moderate in this reſpect than the other. Every parliament, aſſembled during the reign of Edward, remonſtrates againſt the exertion of ſome arbitrary prerogative or other: We hear not any complaints of that kind during the reign of Richard, till the aſſembling of his laſt parliament, which was ſummoned by his inveterate enemies, which dethroned him, which framed their

their complaints during the time of the moſt furious convulſions, and whoſe teſtimony muſt therefore have, on that account, much leſs authority with every equitable judge [o]. Both theſe princes experienced the encroachments of the Great upon their authority. Edward, reduced to neceſſities, was obliged to make an expreſs bargain with his parliament, and to ſell ſome of his prerogatives for preſent ſupply; but as they were acquainted with his genius and capacity, they ventured not to demand any exorbitant conceſſions, or ſuch as were incompatible with regal and ſovereign power: The weakneſs of Richard tempted the parliament to extort a commiſſion, which, in a manner, dethroned the prince, and transferred the ſceptre into the hands of the nobility. The event of theſe encroachments was alſo ſuitable to the character of each. Edward had no ſooner got the ſupply, than he departed from the engagements, which had induced the parliament to grant it; he openly told his people, that he had but *diſſembled* with them when he ſeemed to make them theſe conceſſions; and he reſumed and retained all his prerogatives. But Richard, becauſe he was detected in conſulting and deliberating with the judges on the lawfulneſs of reſtoring the conſtitution, found his barons immediately in arms againſt him; was deprived of his liberty; ſaw his favourites, his miniſters, his tutor, butchered before his face, or baniſhed and attainted; and was obliged to give way to all this violence. There cannot be a more remarkable oppoſition between the fortunes of two princes: It were happy for ſociety, did this oppoſition always depend on the juſtice or injuſtice of the meaſures which men embrace; and not rather on the different degrees of prudence and vigour, with which theſe meaſures are ſupported.

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

[o] Peruſe, in this view, the abridgment of the records, by Sir Robert Cotton, during theſe two reigns.

CHAP. XVII.

1399 Miſcellaneous tranſactions during this reign.

THERE was a ſenſible decay of eccleſiaſtical authority during this period. The diſguſt, which the laity had received from the numerous uſurpations both of the court of Rome, and of their own clergy, had weaned the kingdom very much from ſuperſtition; and ſtrong ſymptoms appeared, from time to time, of a general deſire to ſhake off the bondage of the Romiſh church. In the committee of eighteen, to whom Richard's laſt parliament delegated their whole power, there is not the name of one eccleſiaſtic to be found; a neglect which is almoſt without example, while the catholic religion ſubſiſted in England [P].

THE averſion entertained againſt the eſtabliſhed church ſoon found principles and tenets and reaſonings, by which it could juſtify and ſupport itſelf. John Wickliffe, a ſecular prieſt, educated at Oxford, began in the later end of Edward III. to ſpread the doctrine of reformation by his diſcourſes, ſermons and writings; and he made many diſciples among thoſe of all ranks and ſtations. He ſeems to have been a man of parts and learning; and has the honour of being the firſt perſon in Europe, that publicly called in queſtion thoſe principles, which had univerſally paſſed for certain and undiſputed during ſo many ages. Wickliffe himſelf, as well as his diſciples, who received the name of Wickliffites, or Lollards, was diſtinguiſhed by a great auſterity of life and manners; a circumſtance common to almoſt all thoſe who dogmatize in any new way, both becauſe men, who draw to them the attention of the public, and expoſe themſelves to the odium of great multitudes, are obliged to be very guarded in their conduct, and becauſe few, who have a ſtrong propenſity to pleaſure or buſineſs, will enter upon ſo difficult and laborious an undertaking. The doctrines of Wickliffe, being derived from his ſearch into the ſcrip-

[P] See note [G] at the end of the volume.

tures

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

tures and into eccleſiaſtical antiquity, were nearly the ſame with thoſe which were propagated by the reformers in the ſixteenth century: He only carried ſome of them farther than was done by the more ſober part of theſe reformers. He denied the doctrine of the real preſence, the ſupremacy of the church of Rome, the merit of monaſtic vows: He maintained, that the ſcripture was the ſole rule of faith; that the church was dependant on the ſtate, and ſhould be reformed by it; that the clergy ought to poſſeſs no eſtates; that the begging friars were a general nuiſance, and ought not to be ſupported [q]; that the numerous ceremonies of the church were hurtful to true piety: He aſſerted, that oaths were unlawful, that dominion was founded in grace, that every thing was ſubject to fate and deſtiny, and that all men were preordained either to eternal ſalvation or reprobation [r]. From the whole of his doctrines, Wickliffe appears to have been ſtrongly tinctured with enthuſiaſm, and to have been thereby the better qualified to oppoſe a church, whoſe chief characteriſtic is ſuperſtition.

THE propagation of theſe principles gave great alarm to the clergy; and a bull was iſſued by pope Gregory XI. for taking Wickliffe into cuſtody, and examining into the ſcope of his opinions [s]. Courteney, biſhop of London, cited him before his tribunal; but the reformer had now got powerful protectors, who ſcreened him from the eccleſiaſtical juriſdiction. The duke of Lancaſter, who then governed the kingdom, encouraged the principles of Wickliffe; and he made no ſcruple, as well as lord Piercy, the mareſchal, to appear openly in court with him, in order to give him countenance upon his trial: He even inſiſted, that Wickliffe ſhould ſit in the biſhop's

[q] Walſingham, p. 191, 208, 283, 284. Spelman Concil. vol. ii. p. 630. Knyghton, p. 2657.

[r] Harpsfield, p. 668, 673, 674. Waldenſ. tom. i. lib. 3. art. 2. cap. 8.

[s] Spelm. Conc. vol. ii. p. 621. Walſingham, p. 201, 202, 203.

CHAP. XVII.

1399. preſence, while his principles were examined: Courteney exclaimed againſt this inſult: The Londoners, thinking their prelate affronted, attacked the duke and mareſchal, who eſcaped from their hands with ſome difficulty [t]. And the populace, ſoon after, broke into the houſes of both theſe noblemen, threatened their perſons, and plundered their goods. The biſhop of London had the merit of appeaſing their fury and reſentment.

THE duke of Lancaſter, however, ſtill continued his protection to Wickliffe, during the minority of Richard; and the principles of that reformer had ſo far propagated themſelves, that, when the pope ſent to Oxford a new bull againſt theſe doctrines, the univerſity deliberated for ſome time, whether they ſhould receive the bull; and they never took any vigorous meaſures in conſequence of the papal orders [u]. Even the populace of London were at length brought to entertain favourable ſentiments of this reformer: When he was cited before a ſynod at Lambeth, the mob broke into the aſſembly, and ſo overawed the prelates, who found both the people and the court againſt them, that they diſmiſſed him without any farther cenſure.

THE clergy, we may well believe, were more wanting in power than in inclination to puniſh this new hereſy, which ſtruck at all their credit, poſſeſſions, and authority. But there was hitherto no law in England, by which the ſecular arm was authoriſed to ſupport orthodoxy; and the eccleſiaſtics endeavoured to ſupply the defect by an extraordinary and unwarrantable artifice. In the year 1381, there was an act paſſed, requiring ſheriffs to apprehend the preachers of hereſy and their abettors; but this ſtatute had been ſurreptitiouſly obtained by the clergy, and had the formality of an enrolment without the conſent of

[t] Harpsfield in Hiſt. Wickl. p. 683. lib. 1. p. 191, &c. Walſingham, p. 201.

[u] Wood's Ant. Oxon.

the

the commons. In the ſubſequent ſeſſion, the lower houſe complained of this fraud; affirmed, that they had no intention to bind themſelves to the prelates farther than their anceſtors had done before them; and required that the pretended ſtatute ſhould be repealed, which was done accordingly [w]. But it is remarkable, that, notwithſtanding this vigilance of the commons, the clergy had ſo much art and influence, that the repeal was ſuppreſſed, and the act, which never had any legal authority, remains to this day upon the ſtatute book [x]: Though the clergy ſtill thought proper to keep it in reſerve, and not proceed to the immediate execution of it. CHAP. XVII. 1399.

But beſides this defect of power in the church, which ſaved Wickliffe, that reformer himſelf, notwithſtanding his enthuſiaſm, ſeems not to have been actuated by the ſpirit of martyrdom; and in all ſubſequent trials before the prelates, he ſo explained away his doctrine by tortured meanings, as to render it quite innocent and inoffenſive [y]. Moſt of his followers imitated his cautious diſpoſition, and ſaved themſelves either by recantations or explanations. He died of a palſy in the year 1385 at his rectory of Lutterworth in the county of Leiceſter; and the clergy, mortified that he ſhould have eſcaped their vengeance, took care, beſides aſſuring the people of his eternal damnation, to repreſent his laſt diſtemper as a viſible judgment of heaven upon him for his multiplied hereſies and impieties [z].

THE proſelytes, however, of Wickliffe's opinions ſtill encreaſed in England [a]: Some monkiſh writers repreſent the half of the kingdom as infected by thoſe principles: They were carried over to Bohemia by ſome youth of that nation, who ſtudied at Oxford: But though the age

[w] Cotton's abridgment, p. 285. [x] 5 Rich. II. chap. 5.
[y] Walſingham, p. 206. Knyghton, p. 2655, 2656. [z] Walſingham, p. 312. Ypod. Neuſt. p. 337. [a] Knyghton, p. 2663.

CHAP. XVII.

1399. seemed strongly disposed to receive them, affairs were not yet fully ripe for this great revolution; and the finishing blow to ecclesiastical power was reserved to a period of more curiosity, literature, and inclination for novelties.

MEANWHILE, the English parliament continued to check the clergy and the court of Rome, by more sober and more legal expedients. They enacted anew the statute of *provisors*, and affixed higher penalties to the transgression of it, which, in some instances, was even made capital [b]. The court of Rome had fallen upon a new device, which encreased their authority over the prelates: The pope, who found that the expedient of arbitrarily depriving them was violent, and liable to opposition, attained the same end by transferring such of them, as were obnoxious, to poorer sees, and even to nominal sees, *in partibus infidelium*. It was thus that the archbishop of York, and the bishops of Durham and Chichester, the king's ministers, had been treated after the prevalence of Gloucester's faction: The bishop of Carlisle met with the same fate after the accession of Henry IV. For the pope always joined with the prevailing powers, when they did not thwart his pretensions. The parliament, in the reign of Richard, enacted a law against this abuse: And the king made a general remonstrance to the court of Rome against all those impositions, which he calls *horrible excesses* of that court [c].

IT was usual at this time for the church, that they might elude the mortmain act, to make their votaries leave lands in trust to certain persons, under whose name the clergy enjoyed the benefit of the bequest: The parliament also stopped the progress of this abuse [d]. In the 17th of the king, the commons prayed, *that remedy might be had against such religious persons as cause their villains to*

[b] 13 Rich. II. cap. 3. 16 Rich. II. cap. 4. [c] Rymer, vol. vii. p. 672. [d] Knyghton, p. 27, 38. Cotton, p. 355.

marry

marry free women inheritable, whereby the eſtate comes to thoſe religious hands by colluſion [c]. This was a new device of the clergy. 1399.

THE papacy was at this time ſomewhat weakened by a ſchiſm, which laſted during forty years, and gave great ſcandal to the devoted partizans of the holy ſee. After the pope had reſided many years at Avignon, Gregory XI. was perſuaded to return to Rome; and upon his death, which happened in 1380, the Romans, reſolute to fix, for the future, the ſeat of the papacy in Italy, beſieged the cardinals in the conclave, and conſtrained them, though they were moſtly Frenchmen, to elect Urban VI. an Italian, into that high dignity. The French cardinals, as ſoon as they recovered their liberty, fled from Rome, and proteſting againſt the forced election, choſe Robert, ſon of the count of Geneva, who took the name of Clement VII. and reſided at Avignon. All the kingdoms of Chriſtendom, according to their ſeveral intereſts and inclinations, were divided between theſe two pontiffs. The court of France adhered to Clement, and was followed by its allies, the king of Caſtile, and the king of Scotland: England of courſe was thrown into the other party, and declared for Urban. Thus the appellation of *Clementines* and *Urbaniſts* diſtracted Europe for ſeveral years; and each party damned the other as ſchiſmatics, and as rebels to the true vicar of Chriſt. But this circumſtance, though it weakened the papal authority, had not ſo great an effect as might naturally be imagined. Though any king could eaſily, at firſt, make his kingdom embrace the party of one pope or the other, or even keep it ſome time in ſuſpence between them, he could not ſo eaſily transfer his obedience at pleaſure: The people attached themſelves to their own party, as to a religious opinion; and conceived an extreme abhorrence to the oppoſite

[c] Cotton, p. 355.

party,

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

party, whom they regarded as little better than Saracens or infidels. Cruſades were even undertaken in this quarrel; and the zealous biſhop of Norwich, in particular, led over, in 1382, near 60,000 bigots into Flanders againſt the Clementines; but after loſing a great part of his followers, he returned with diſgrace into England [f]. Each pope, ſenſible, from this prevailing ſpirit among the people, that the kingdom, which once embraced his cauſe, would always adhere to him, boldly maintained all the pretenſions of his ſee, and ſtood not much more in awe of the temporal ſovereigns, than if his authority had not been endangered by a rival.

We meet with this preamble to a law enacted at the very beginning of this reign: "Whereas divers perſons of "ſmall garriſon of land or other poſſeſſions do make great "retinue of people, as well of eſquires as of others, in "many parts of the realm, giving to them hats and "other livery of one ſuit by year, taking again towards "them the value of the ſame livery or percaſe the double "value, by ſuch covenant and aſſurance, that every of "them ſhall maintain other in all quarrels, be they "reaſonable or unreaſonable, to the great miſchief and "oppreſſion of the people, &c. [g]" This preamble contains a true picture of the ſtate of the kingdom. The laws had been ſo feebly executed, even during the long, active, and vigilant reign of Edward III. that no ſubject could truſt to their protection. Men openly aſſociated themſelves, under the patronage of ſome great man, for their mutual defence. They wore public badges, by which their confederacy was diſtinguiſhed. They ſupported each other in all quarrels, iniquities, extortions, murders, robberies, and other crimes. Their chieftain was more their ſovereign than the king himſelf; and their

[f] Froiſſard, lib. 2. chap. 133, 134. Walſingham, p. 298, 299, 300, &c. Knyghton, p. 2671.

[g] 1 Rich. II. chap. 7.

own

own band was more connected with them than their country. Hence the perpetual turbulence, diſorders, factions, and civil wars of thoſe times: Hence the ſmall regard paid to a character or the opinion of the public: Hence the large diſcretionary prerogatives of the crown, and the danger which might have enſued from the too great limitation of them. If the king had poſſeſſed no arbitrary powers, while all the nobles aſſumed and exerciſed them, there muſt have enſued an abſolute anarchy in the ſtate.

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

ONE great miſchief, attending theſe confederacies, was the extorting from the king pardons for the moſt enormous crimes. The parliament often endeavoured, in the laſt reign, to deprive the prince of this prerogative; but, in the preſent, they were content with an abridgment of it. They enacted, that no pardon for rapes or for murder from malice prepenſe ſhould be valid, unleſs the crime were particularly ſpecified in it [h]. There were alſo ſome other circumſtances required for the paſſing any pardon of this kind: An excellent law; but ill obſerved, like moſt laws, which thwart the manners of the people, and the prevailing cuſtom of the times.

IT is eaſy to obſerve, from theſe voluntary aſſociations among the people, that the whole force of the feudal ſyſtem was in a manner diſſolved, and that the Engliſh had nearly returned in that particular to the ſame ſituation, in which they ſtood before the Norman conqueſt. It was indeed impoſſible, that that ſyſtem could long ſubſiſt under the continual revolutions, to which landed property is every where ſubject. When the great feudal baronies were firſt erected, the lord lived in opulence in the midſt of his vaſſals: He was in a ſituation to protect and cheriſh and defend them: The quality of patron naturally united itſelf to that of ſuperior: And theſe two principles

[h] 13 Rich. II. chap. 1.

of

CHAP. XVII. 1399.

of authority mutually ſupported each other. But when, by the various diviſions and mixtures of property, a man's ſuperior came to live at a diſtance from him, and could no longer give him ſhelter or countenance; the tie gradually became more fictitious than real: New connexions from neighbourhood or other cauſes were formed: Protection was ſought by voluntary ſervices and attachment: The appearance of valour, ſpirit, ability in any great man extended his intereſt very far: And if the ſovereign were deficient in theſe qualities, he was no leſs, if not more expoſed to the uſurpations of the ariſtocracy, than even during the vigour of the feudal ſyſtem.

THE greateſt novelty introduced into the civil government during this reign was the creation of peers by patent. Lord Beauchamp of Holt was the firſt peer, that was advanced to the houſe of lords in this manner. The practice of levying benevolences is alſo firſt mentioned in the preſent reign.

THIS prince lived in a more magnificent manner than perhaps any of his predeceſſors or ſucceſſors. His houſehold conſiſted of 10,000 perſons: He had 300 in his kitchen; and all the other offices were furniſhed in proportion [i]. It muſt be remarked, that this enormous train had tables ſupplied them at the king's expence, according to the mode of that age. Such prodigality was probably the ſource of many exactions, which were one chief reaſon of the public diſcontents.

[i] Harding: This poet ſays, that he ſpeaks from the authority of a clerk of the green cloth.

CHAP. XVIII.

HENRY IV.

Title of the king——An inſurrection——An inſurrection in Wales——The earl of Northumberland rebels——Battle of Shrewſbury——State of Scotland——Parliamentary tranſactions——Death——and character of the king.

CHAP. XVIII.

1399. Title of the king.

THE Engliſh had ſo long been familiarized to the hereditary ſucceſſion of their monarchs, the inſtances of departure from it had always born ſuch ſtrong ſymptoms of injuſtice and violence, and ſo little of a national choice or election and the returns to the true line had ever been deemed ſuch fortunate incidents in their hiſtory, that Henry was afraid, leſt, in reſting his title on the conſent of the people, he ſhould build on a foundation, to which the people themſelves were not accuſtomed, and whoſe ſolidity they would with difficulty be brought to recognize. The idea too of choice ſeemed always to imply that of conditions, and a liberty of recalling the conſent upon any ſuppoſed violation of them; an idea which was not naturally agreeable to a ſovereign, and might in England be dangerous to the ſubjects, who, lying ſo much under the influence of turbulent nobles, had ever paid but an imperfect obedience even to their hereditary princes. For theſe reaſons Henry was determined never to have recourſe to this claim; the only one, on which his authority could conſiſtently ſtand: He rather choſe to patch up his title in the beſt manner he could, from other pretenſions: And in the end, he left himſelf,

CHAP. XVIII.

1399.

himself, in the eyes of men of sense, no ground of right, but his present possession; a very precarious foundation, which, by its very nature, was liable to be overthrown by every faction of the great, or prejudice of the people. He had indeed a present advantage over his competitor: The heir of the house of Mortimer, who had been declared in parliament heir to the crown, was a boy of seven years of age [k]: His friends consulted his safety by keeping silence with regard to his title: Henry detained him and his younger brother in an honourable custody at Windsor castle: But he had reason to dread, that, in proportion as that nobleman grew to man's estate, he would draw to him the attachment of the people, and make them reflect on the fraud, violence, and injustice, by which he had been excluded from the throne. Many favourable topics would occur in his behalf: He was a native of England; possessed an extensive interest from the greatness and alliances of his family; however criminal the deposed monarch, this youth was entirely innocent; he was of the same religion, and educated in the same manners with the people, and could not be governed by any separate interest: These views would all concur to favour his claim; and though the abilities of the present prince might ward off any dangerous revolution, it was justly to be apprehended, that his authority could with difficulty be brought to equal that of his predecessors.

HENRY in his very first parliament had reason to see the danger attending that station, which he had assumed, and the obstacles which he would meet with in governing an unruly aristocracy, always divided by faction, and at present inflamed with the resentments, consequent on such recent convulsions. The peers, on their assembling, broke out into violent animosities against each other; forty gauntlets, the pledges of furious battle, were thrown on

[k] Dugdale, vol. i. p. 151.

the

the floor of the houſe by noblemen who gave mutual challenges; and *liar* and *traitor* reſounded from all quarters. The king had ſo much authority with theſe doughty champions, as to prevent all the combats, which they threatened; but he was not able to bring them to a proper compoſure, or to an amicable diſpoſition towards each other. CHAP. XVIII. 1399.

IT was not long before theſe paſſions broke into action. The earls of Rutland, Kent, and Huntingdon, and lord Spencer, who were now degraded from the reſpective titles of Albemarle, Surrey, Exeter, and Gloceſter, conferred on them by Richard, entered into a conſpiracy, together with the earl of Saliſbury and lord Lumley, for raiſing an inſurrection, and for ſeizing the king's perſon at Windſor [l]; but the treachery of Rutland gave him warning of the danger. He ſuddenly withdrew to London; and the conſpirators, who came to Windſor with a body of 500 horſe, found that they had miſſed this blow, on which all the ſucceſs of their enterprize depended. Henry appeared, next day, at Kingſton upon Thames, at the head of 20,000 men, moſtly drawn from the city; and his enemies, unable to reſiſt his power, diſperſed themſelves, with a view of raiſing their followers in the ſeveral counties, which were the ſeat of their intereſt. But the adherents of the king were hot in the purſuit, and every where oppoſed themſelves to their progreſs. The earls of Kent and Saliſbury were ſeized at Cirenceſter by the citizens; and were next day beheaded without farther ceremony, according to the cuſtom of the times [m]. The citizens of Briſtol treated Spencer and Lumley in the ſame manner. The earl of Huntingdon, Sir Thomas Blount, and Sir Benedict Sely, who were alſo taken priſoners, ſuffered 1400. An inſurrection.

[l] Walſingham, p. 362. Otterbourne, p. 224.

[m] Walſingham, p. 363. Ypod. Neuſt. 556.

death,

CHAP. XVIII.

1400. death, with many others of the conſpirators, by orders from Henry. And when the quarters of theſe unhappy men were brought to London, no leſs than eighteen biſhops and thirty-two mitred abbots, joined the populace, and met them with the moſt indecent marks of joy and exultation.

But the ſpectacle the moſt ſhocking to every one, who retained any ſentiment either of honour or humanity, ſtill remained. The earl of Rutland appeared, carrying on a pole the head of lord Spencer, his brother-in-law, which he preſented in triumph to Henry, as a teſtimony of his loyalty. This infamous man, who was ſoon after duke of York by the death of his father, and firſt prince of the blood, had been inſtrumental in the murder of his uncle, the duke of Gloceſter[n]; had then deſerted Richard, by whom he was truſted; had conſpired againſt the life of Henry, to whom he had ſworn allegiance; had betrayed his aſſociates, whom he had ſeduced into this enterprize; and now diſplayed, in the face of the world, theſe badges of his multiplied diſhonour.

1401. Henry was ſenſible, that, though the execution of theſe conſpirators might ſeem to give ſecurity to his throne, the animoſities, which remain after ſuch bloody ſcenes, are always dangerous to royal authority; and he therefore determined not to encreaſe, by any hazardous enterprize, thoſe numerous enemies, with whom he was every where environed. While a ſubject, he was believed to have ſtrongly imbibed all the principles of his father, the duke of Lancaſter, and to have adopted the prejudices which the Lollards inſpired againſt the abuſes of the eſtabliſhed church: But finding himſelf poſſeſſed of the throne by ſo precarious a title, he thought ſuperſtition a neceſſary implement of public authority; and he reſolved, by every

[n] Dugdale, vol. ii. p. 171.

CHAP. XVIII. 1401.

expedient, to pay court to the clergy. There were hitherto no penal laws enacted againſt hereſy; an indulgence which had proceeded, not from a ſpirit of toleration in the Romiſh church, but from the ignorance and ſimplicity of the people, which had rendered them unfit either for ſtarting or receiving any new or curious doctrines, and which needed not to be reſtrained by any rigorous penalties. But when the learning and genius of Wickliffe had once broken, in ſome meaſure, the fetters of prejudice, the eccleſiaſtics called aloud for the puniſhment of his diſciples; and the king, who was very little ſcrupulous in his conduct, was eaſily induced to ſacrifice his principles to his intereſt, and to acquire the favour of the church by that moſt effectual method, the gratifying of their vengeance againſt opponents. He engaged the parliament to paſs a law for that purpoſe: It was enacted, that when any heretic, who relapſed or refuſed to abjure his opinions, was delivered over to the ſecular arm by the biſhop or his commiſſaries, he ſhould be committed to the flames by the civil magiſtrate before the whole people [o]. This weapon did not long remain unemployed in the hands of the clergy: William Sautré, rector of St. Oſithes in London, had been condemned by the convocation of Canterbury; his ſentence was ratified by the houſe of peers; the king iſſued his writ for the execution [p]; and the unhappy man attoned for his erroneous opinions by the penalty of fire. This is the firſt inſtance of that kind in England; and thus one horror more was added to thoſe diſmal ſcenes, which at that time were already but too familiar to the people.

But the utmoſt precaution and prudence of Henry could not ſhield him from thoſe numerous inquietudes, which aſſailed him from every quarter. The connexions of Richard with the royal family of France made that

[o] 2 Henry IV. chap. vii.

[p] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 178.

CHAP. XVIII. 1401.

court exert its activity to recover his authority, or revenge his death [q]; but though the confusions in England tempted the French to engage in some enterprize, by which they might distress their ancient enemy, the greater confusions, which they experienced at home, obliged them quickly to accommodate matters; and Charles, content with recovering his daughter from Henry's hands, laid aside his preparations, and renewed the truce between the kingdoms [r]. The attack of Guienne was also an inviting attempt, which the present factions, that prevailed among the French, obliged them to neglect. The Gascons, affectionate to the memory of Richard, who was born among them, refused to swear allegiance to a prince that had dethroned and murdered him; and the appearance of a French army on their frontiers, would probably have tempted them to change masters [s]. But the earl of Worcester, arriving with some English troops, gave countenance to the partizans of Henry, and overawed their opponents. Religion too was here found a cement to their union with England. The Gascons had been engaged by Richard's authority to acknowledge the pope of Rome; and they were sensible, that, if they submitted to France, it would be necessary for them to pay obedience to the pope of Avignon, whom they had been taught to detest as a schismatic. Their principles on this head were too fast rooted to admit of any sudden or violent alteration.

Insurrection in Wales.

THE revolution in England proved likewise the occasion of an insurrection in Wales. Owen Glendour, or Glendourduy, descended from the ancient princes of that country, had become obnoxious on account of his attachment to Richard; and Reginald, lord Gray of Ruthyn, who was closely connected with the new king, and who

[q] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 123.
[r] Ibid. vol. viii, p. 142, 152, 219.
[s] Ibid. vol. viii. p. 110, 111.

CHAP. XVIII. 1401.

enjoyed a great fortune in the marches of Wales, thought the opportunity favourable for oppreſſing his neighbour, and taking poſſeſſion of his eſtate [t]. Glendour, provoked at the injuſtice, and ſtill more at the indignity, recovered poſſeſſion by the ſword [u]: Henry ſent aſſiſtance to Gray [w]; the Welſh took part with Glendour: A troubleſome and tedious war was kindled, which Glendour long ſuſtained by his valour and activity, aided by the natural ſtrength of the country, and the untamed ſpirit of its inhabitants.

As Glendour committed devaſtations promiſcuouſly on all the Engliſh, he infeſted the eſtate of the earl of Marche; and Sir Edmund Mortimer, uncle to that nobleman, led out the retainers of the family, and gave battle to the Welſh chieftain: His troops were routed, and he was taken priſoner [x]: At the ſame time, the earl himſelf, who had been allowed to retire to his caſtle of Wigmore, and who, though a mere boy, took the field with his followers, fell alſo into Glendour's hands, and was carried by him into Wales [y]. As Henry dreaded and hated all the family of Marche, he allowed the earl to remain in captivity; and though that young nobleman was nearly allied to the Piercies, to whoſe aſſiſtance he himſelf had owed his crown, he refuſed to the earl of Northumberland permiſſion to treat of his ranſom with Glendour.

THE uncertainty in which Henry's affairs ſtood during a long time with France, as well as the confuſion incident to all great changes in government, tempted the Scots to make incurſions into England; and Henry, deſirous of taking revenge upon them, but afraid of rendering his new government unpopular by requiring great ſupplies from his ſubjects, ſummoned at Weſtminſter a council of the peers, without the commons, and laid before them

t Vita Ric. ſec. p. 171, 172.
u Walſingham, p. 364.
w Vita Ric. ſec. p. 172, 173.
x Dugdale, vol. i. p. 150.
y Ibid. vol. i. p. 151.

CHAP. XVIII. 1401.

the ſtate of his affairs [z]. The military part of the feudal conſtitution was now much decayed: There remained only ſo much of that fabric as affected the civil rights and properties of men: And the peers here undertook, but voluntarily, to attend the king in an expedition againſt Scotland, each of them at the head of a certain number of his retainers [a]. Henry conducted this army to Edinburgh, of which he eaſily made himſelf maſter; and he there ſummoned Robert III. to do homage to him for his crown [b]. But finding that the Scots would neither ſubmit nor give him battle, he returned in three weeks, after making this uſeleſs bravade; and he diſbanded his army.

1402. In the ſubſequent ſeaſon, Archibald earl of Douglas, at the head of 12,000 men, and attended by many of the principal nobility of Scotland, made an irruption into England, and committed devaſtations on the northern counties. On his return home, he was overtaken by the Piercies, at Homeldon on the borders of England, and a fierce battle enſued, where the Scots were totally routed. Douglas himſelf was taken priſoner; as was Mordac earl of Fife, ſon of the duke of Albany, and nephew of the Scottiſh king, with the earls of Angus, Murray, and Orkney, and many others of the gentry and nobility [c]. When Henry received intelligence of this victory, he ſent the earl of Northumberland orders not to ranſom his priſoners, which that nobleman regarded as his right, by the laws of war, received in that age. The king intended to detain them, that he might be able by their means to make an advantageous peace with Scotland; but by this policy he gave a freſh diſguſt to the family of Piercy.

[z] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 125, 126. [a] Ibid. p. 125.
[b] Ibid. p. 155, 156, &c. [c] Walſingham, p. 366, Vita Ric. ſec. p. 180. Chron. Otterbourne, p. 237.

THE

CHAP. XVIII.

1403. The earl of Northumberland rebels.

THE obligations, which Henry had owed to Northumberland, were of a kind the moſt likely to produce ingratitude on the one ſide, and diſcontent on the other. The ſovereign naturally became jealous of that power, which had advanced him to the throne; and the ſubject was not eaſily ſatisfied in the returns which he thought ſo great a favour had merited. Though Henry, on his acceſſion, had beſtowed the office of conſtable on Northumberland for life [d], and conferred other gifts on that family, theſe favours were regarded as their due; the refuſal of any other requeſt was deemed an injury. The impatient ſpirit of Harry Piercy, and the factious diſpoſition of the earl of Worceſter, younger brother of Northumberland, inflamed the diſcontents of that nobleman; and the precarious title of Henry tempted him to ſeek revenge, by overturning that throne, which he had at firſt eſtabliſhed. He entered into a correſpondence with Glendour: He gave liberty to the earl of Douglas, and made an alliance with that martial chieftain: He rouzed up all his partizans to arms; and ſuch unlimited authority at that time belonged to the great families, that the ſame men, whom, a few years before, he had conducted againſt Richard, now followed his ſtandard in oppoſition to Henry. When war was ready to break out, Northumberland was ſeized with a ſudden illneſs at Berwic; and young Piercy, taking the command of the troops, marched towards Shrewſbury, in order to join his forces with thoſe of Glendour. The king had happily a ſmall army on foot, with which he had intended to act againſt the Scots; and knowing the importance of celerity in all civil wars, he inſtantly hurried down, that he might give battle to the rebels. He approached Piercy near Shrewſbury, before that nobleman was joined by Glendour;

[d] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 89.

CHAP. XVIII.

and the policy of one leader, and impatience of the other, made them haſten to a general engagement.

1403. THE evening before the battle, Piercy ſent a manifeſto to Henry, in which he renounced his allegiance, ſet that prince at defiance, and in the name of his father and uncle, as well as his own, enumerated all the grievances, of which, he pretended, the nation had reaſon to complain. He upbraided him with the perjury, of which he had been guilty, when, on landing at Ravenſpur, he had ſworn upon the goſpels, before the earl of Northumberland, that he had no other intention than to recover poſſeſſion of the dutchy of Lancaſter, and that he would ever remain a faithful ſubject to king Richard. He aggravated his guilt in firſt dethroning, then murdering that prince, and in uſurping on the title of the houſe of Mortimer, to whom, both by lineal ſucceſſion, and by declarations of parliament, the throne, when vacant by Richard's demiſe, did of right belong. He complained of his cruel policy, in allowing the young earl of Marche, whom he ought to regard as his ſovereign, to remain a captive in the hands of his enemies, and in even refuſing to all his friends permiſſion to treat of his ranſom. He charged him again with perjury in loading the nation with heavy taxes, after having ſworn, that, without the utmoſt neceſſity, he would never levy any impoſitions upon them. And he reproached him with the arts employed in procuring favourable elections into parliament; arts, which he himſelf had before imputed to Richard, and which he had made one chief reaſon of that prince's arraignment and depoſition [c]. This manifeſto was well calculated to inflame the quarrel between the parties: The bravery of the two leaders promiſed an obſtinate engagement: And the equality of the armies, being each about 12,000 men, a number which was not unmanageable by the

[c] Hall, fol. 21, 22, &c.

commanders,

CHAP. XVIII.

1403.

commanders, gave reaſon to expect a great effuſion of blood on both ſides, and a very doubtful iſſue to the combat.

21ſt July. Battle of Shrewſbury.

We ſhall ſcarcely find any battle in thoſe ages, where the ſhock was more terrible and more conſtant. Henry expoſed his perſon in the thickeſt of the fight: His gallant ſon, whoſe military atchievements became afterwards ſo famous, and who here performed his noviciate in arms, ſignalized himſelf on his father's footſteps, and even a wound, which he received on the face with an arrow, could not oblige him to quit the field [f]. Piercy ſupported that renown, which he had acquired in many a bloody combat. And Douglas, his ancient enemy and now his friend, ſtill appeared his rival, amidſt the horror and confuſion of the day. This nobleman performed feats of valour, which are almoſt incredible: He ſeemed determined that the king of England ſhould fall that day by his arm: He ſought him all over the field of battle: And as Henry, either to elude the attacks of the enemy upon his perſon, or to encourage his own men by the belief of his preſence every where, had accoutered ſeveral captains in the royal garb, the ſword of Douglas rendered this honour fatal to many [g]. But while the armies were contending in this furious manner, the death of Piercy, by an unknown hand, decided the victory, and the royaliſts prevailed. There are ſaid to have fallen that day on both ſides near two thouſand three hundred gentlemen; but the perſons of greateſt diſtinction were on the king's; the earl of Stafford, Sir Hugh Shirley, Sir Nicholas Gauſel, Sir Hugh Mortimer, Sir John Maſſey, Sir John Calverly. About ſix thouſand private men periſhed, of whom two thirds were of Piercy's army [h]. The earls of Worceſter and Douglas were taken priſoners: The former was be-

[f] T. Livii, p. 3. [g] Walſingham, p. 366, 367. Hall, fol. 22.
[h] Chron. Otterbourne, p. 224. Ypod. Neuſt. p. 560.

CHAP. XVIII.

headed at Shrewſbury; the latter was treated with the courteſy, due to his rank and merit.

1403. THE earl of Northumberland, having recovered from his ſickneſs, had levyed a freſh army, and was on his march to join his ſon; but being oppoſed by the earl of Weſtmoreland, and hearing of the defeat at Shrewſbury, he diſmiſſed his forces, and came with a ſmall retinue to the king at York [j]. He pretended, that his ſole intention in arming was to mediate between the parties: Henry thought proper to accept of the apology, and even granted him a pardon for his offence: All the other rebels were treated with equal lenity; and except the earl of Worceſter and Sir Richard Vernon, who were regarded as the chief authors of the inſurrection, no perſon, engaged in this dangerous enterprize, ſeems to have periſhed by the hands of the executioner [k].

1405. BUT Northumberland, though he had been pardoned, knew, that he never ſhould be truſted, and that he was too powerful to be cordially forgiven by a prince, whoſe ſituation gave him ſuch reaſonable grounds of jealouſy. It was the effect either of Henry's vigilance or good fortune, or of the narrow genius of his enemies, that no proper concert was ever formed among them: They roſe in rebellion one after another; and thereby afforded him an opportunity of ſuppreſſing ſingly thoſe inſurrections, which, had they been united, might have proved fatal to his authority. The earl of Nottingham, ſon of the duke of Norfolk, and the archbiſhop of York, brother to the earl of Wiltſhire, whom Henry, then duke of Lancaſter, had beheaded at Briſtol, though they had remained quiet while Piercy was in the field, ſtill harboured in their breaſt a violent hatred againſt the enemy of their families; and they determined, in conjunction with the earl

[j] Chron. Otterbourne, p. 225. [k] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 353.

of

of Northumberland, to ſeek revenge againſt him. They betook themſelves to arms before that powerful nobleman was prepared to join them; and publiſhing a manifeſto, in which they reproached Henry with his uſurpation of the crown and the murder of the late king, they required, that the right line ſhould be reſtored, and all public grievances be redreſſed. The earl of Weſtmoreland, whoſe power lay in the neighbourhood, approached them with an inferior force at Shipton near York; and being afraid to hazard an action, he attempted to ſubdue them by a ſtratagem, which nothing but the greateſt folly and ſimplicity on their part could have rendered ſucceſsful. He deſired a conference with the archbiſhop and earl between the armies: He heard their grievances with great patience: He begged them to propoſe the remedies: He approved of every expedient which they ſuggeſted: He granted them all their demands: He alſo engaged that Henry ſhould give them entire ſatisfaction: And when he ſaw them pleaſed with the facility of his conceſſions, he obſerved to them, that, ſince amity was now in effect reſtored between them, it were better on both ſides to diſmiſs their forces, which otherwiſe would prove an unſupportable burthen on the country. The archbiſhop and the earl of Nottingham immediately gave directions to that purpoſe: Their troops diſbanded upon the field: But Weſtmoreland, who had ſecretly iſſued contrary orders to *his* army, ſeized the two rebels without reſiſtance, and carried them to the king, who was advancing with haſty marches to ſuppreſs the inſurrection [1]. The trial and puniſhment of an archbiſhop might have proved a troubleſome and dangerous undertaking, had Henry proceeded regularly, and allowed time for an oppoſition to form itſelf againſt that unuſual meaſure: The celerity of the execution alone could here render it ſafe and prudent.

CHAP. XVIII. 1405.

[1] Walſingham, p. 373. Otterbourne, p. 255.

Finding

CHAP. XVIII. 1405. Finding that Sir William Gascoigne, the chief justice, made some scruple of acting on this occasion, he appointed Sir William Fulthorpe for judge; who, without any indictment, trial, or defence, pronounced sentence of death upon the prelate, which was presently executed. This was the first instance in England of a capital punishment inflicted on a bishop; whence the clergy of that rank might learn, that their crimes, more than those of laics, were not to pass with impunity. The earl of Nottingham was condemned and executed in the same summary manner: But though many other persons of condition, such as lord Falconberg, Sir Ralph Hastings, Sir John Colville, were engaged in this rebellion, no others seem to have fallen victims to Henry's severity.

The earl of Northumberland, on receiving this intelligence, fled into Scotland, together with lord Bardolf [m]; and the king, without opposition, reduced all the castles and fortresses, belonging to these noblemen. He thence turned his arms against Glendour, over whom his son, the prince of Wales, had obtained some advantages: But that enemy, more troublesome than dangerous, still found means of defending himself in his fastnesses, and of eluding, though not resisting, all the force of England. In a subsequent season, the earl of Northumberland and lord Bardolf, impatient of their exile, entered the north, in hopes of raising the people to arms; but found the country in such a posture as rendered all their attempts unsuccessful. Sir Thomas Rokesby, sheriff of Yorkshire, levied some forces, attacked the invaders at Bramham, and gained a victory, in which both Northumberland and Bardolf were slain [m]. This prosperous event, joined to the death of Glendour, which happened soon after, freed Henry from all his domestic enemies; and this prince, who had mounted the throne by such unjustifiable means,

1407.

[l] Walsingham, p. 374. [m] Ibid. p. 377. Chron. Otterb. p. 261.

and

and held it by such an exceptionable title, had yet, by his valour, prudence, and address, accustomed the people to the yoke, and had obtained a greater ascendant over his haughty barons, than the law alone, not supported by these active qualities, was ever able to confer. CHAP. XVIII. 1407.

ABOUT the same time, fortune gave Henry an advantage over that neighbour, who, by his situation, was most enabled to disturb his government. Robert III. king of Scots, was a prince, though of slender capacity, extremely innocent and inoffensive in his conduct: But Scotland, at that time, was still less fitted than England for cherishing, or even enduring, sovereigns of that character. The duke of Albany, Robert's brother, a prince of more abilities, at least of a more boisterous and violent disposition, had assumed the government of the state; and not satisfied with present authority, he entertained the criminal purpose of extirpating his brother's children, and of acquiring the crown to his own family. He threw in prison David, his eldest nephew; who there perished by hunger: James alone, the younger brother of David, stood between that tyrant and the throne; and king Robert, sensible of his son's danger, embarked him on board a ship, with a view of sending him to France, and entrusting him to the protection of that friendly power. Unfortunately, the vessel was taken by the English; prince James, a boy about nine years of age, was carried to London; and though there subsisted at that time a truce between the kingdoms, Henry refused to restore the young prince to his liberty. Robert, worn out with cares and infirmities, was unable to bear the shock of this last misfortune; and he soon after died, leaving the government in the hands of the duke of Albany [o]. Henry was now more sensible than ever of the importance of the acquisition, which he had made: While he re-

[o] Buchanan, lib. 10.

tained

CHAP. XVIII.

tained such a pledge, he was sure of keeping the duke of Albany in dependance; or if offended, he could easily,
1407. by restoring the true heir, take ample revenge upon the usurper. But though the king, by detaining James in the English court, had shown himself somewhat deficient in generosity, he made ample amends, by giving that prince an excellent education, which afterwards qualified him, when he mounted the throne, to reform, in some measure, the rude and barbarous manners of his native country.

THE hostile dispositions, which always prevailed between France and England, were restrained, during the greatest part of this reign, from appearing in action. The jealousies and civil commotions, with which both nations were disturbed, kept each of them from taking advantage of the unhappy situation of its neighbour. But as the abilities and good fortune of Henry had sooner been able to compose the English factions, this prince began, in the later part of his reign, to look abroad, and to foment the animosities between the families of Burgundy and Orleans, by which the government of France was, during that period, so much distracted. He knew, that one great source of the national discontent against his predecessor, was the inactivity of his reign; and he hoped, by giving a new direction to the restless and unquiet spirits of his people, to prevent their breaking out in domes-
1411. tic wars and disorders. That he might unite policy with force, he first entered into treaty with the duke of Burgundy, and sent that prince a small body of troops, which supported him against his enemies [p]. Soon after, he hearkened to more advantageous proposals made him by the duke of Orleans, and dispatched a greater body to
1412. support that party [q]. But the leaders of the opposite factions having made a temporary accommodation of their dif-

[p] Walsingham, p. 380. [q] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 715, 738.

ferences,

ferences, the intereſts of the Engliſh were ſacrificed; and this effort of Henry proved, in the iſſue, entirely vain and fruitleſs. The declining ſtate of his health and the ſhortneſs of his reign, prevented him from renewing the attempt, which his more fortunate ſon carried to ſo great a length againſt the French monarchy. CHAP. XVIII. 1412.

SUCH were the military and foreign tranſactions of this reign: The civil and parliamentary are ſomewhat more memorable, and more worthy of our attention. During the two laſt reigns, the elections of the commons had appeared a circumſtance of government not to be neglected; and Richard was even accuſed of uſing unwarrantable methods for procuring to his partizans a ſeat in that houſe. This practice formed one conſiderable article of charge againſt him in his depoſition; yet Henry ſcrupled not to tread in his footſteps, and to encourage the ſame abuſes in elections. Laws were enacted againſt ſuch undue influence, and even a ſheriff was puniſhed for an iniquitous return, which he had made[r]: But laws were commonly, at that time, very ill executed; and the liberties of the people, ſuch as they were, ſtood on a ſurer baſis than on laws and parliamentary elections. Though the houſe of commons was little able to withſtand the violent currents, which perpetually ran between the monarchy and the ariſtocracy, and though that houſe might eaſily be brought, at a particular time, to make the moſt unwarrantable conceſſions to either; the general inſtitutions of the ſtate ſtill remained invariable; the intereſt of the ſeveral members continued on the ſame footing; the ſword was in the hands of the ſubject; and the government, though thrown into temporary diſorder, ſoon ſettled itſelf on its ancient foundations. Parliamentary tranſactions.

DURING the greateſt part of this reign, the king was obliged to court popularity; and the houſe of commons,

[r] Cotton, p. 429.

ſenſible

CHAP. XVIII.

1412.

senſible of their own importance, began to aſſume powers, which had not uſually been exerciſed by their predeceſſors. In the firſt year of this reign, they procured a law, that no judge, in concurring with any iniquitous meaſure, ſhould be excuſed by pleading the orders of the king, or even the danger of his own life from the menaces of the ſovereign [s]. In the ſecond year, they inſiſted on maintaining the practice of not granting any ſupply before they received an anſwer to their petitions; which was a tacit manner of bargaining with the prince [t]. In the fifth year, they deſired the king to remove from his houſehold four officers who had diſpleaſed them, among whom was his own confeſſor; and Henry, though he told them, that he knew of no offence which theſe perſons had committed, yet, in order to gratify them, complied with their requeſt [u]. In the ſixth year, they voted the king ſupplies, but appointed treaſurers of their own, to ſee the money diſburſed for the purpoſes intended, and required them to deliver in their accounts to the houſe [w]. In the eighth year, they propoſed, for the regulation of the government and houſehold, thirty important articles, which were all agreed to; and they even obliged all the members of council, all the judges, and all the officers of the houſehold, to ſwear to the obſervance of them [x]. The abridger of the records remarks the unuſual liberties taken by the ſpeaker and the houſe during this period [y]. But the great authority of the commons was but a temporary advantage, ariſing from the preſent ſituation. In a ſubſequent parliament, when the ſpeaker made his cuſtomary application to the throne for liberty of ſpeech, the king, having now overcome all his domeſtic difficulties, plainly told him, that he would have no novelties introduced, and would enjoy his prerogatives. But on

[s] Cotton, p. 364. [t] Ibid. p. 406. [u] Ibid. p. 426.
[w] Ibid. p. 438. [x] Ibid. p. 456, 457. [y] Ibid. p. 462.

the

the whole, the limitations of the government ſeem to have been more ſenſibly felt, and more carefully maintained by Henry, than by any of his predeceſſors. CHAP. XVIII. 1412.

DURING this reign, when the houſe of commons were, at any time, brought to make unwary conceſſions to the crown, they alſo ſhewed their freedom by a ſpeedy retractation of them. Henry, though he entertained a perpetual and well-grounded jealouſy of the family of Mortimer, allowed not their name to be once mentioned in parliament; and as none of the rebels had ventured to declare the earl of Marche king, he never attempted to procure, what would not have been refuſed him, an expreſs declaration againſt the claim of that nobleman; becauſe he knew that ſuch a declaration, in the preſent circumſtances, would have no authority, and would only ſerve to revive the memory of Mortimer's title in the minds of the people. He proceeded in his purpoſe after a more artful and covert manner. He procured a ſettlement of the crown on himſelf and his heirs-male [z], thereby tacitly excluding the females, and transferring the Salic law into the Engliſh government. He thought, that, though the houſe of Plantagenet had at firſt derived their title from a female, this was a remote event, unknown to the generality of the people; and if he could once accuſtom them to the practice of excluding women, the title of the earl of Marche would gradually be forgot and neglected by them. But he was very unfortunate in this attempt. During the long conteſts with France, the injuſtice of the Salic law had been ſo much exclaimed againſt by the nation, that a contrary principle had taken deep root in the minds of men; and it was now become impoſſible to eradicate it. The ſame houſe of commons, therefore, in a ſubſequent ſeſſion, apprehenſive that they had overturned the foundations of the Engliſh govern-

[z] Cotton, p. 454.

ment,

CHAP. XVIII. 1412.

ment, and that they had opened the door to more civil wars than might enſue even from the irregular elevation of the houſe of Lancaſter, applied with ſuch earneſtneſs for a new ſettlement of the crown, that Henry yielded to their requeſt, and agreed to the ſucceſſion of the princeſſes of his family [a]. A certain proof, that nobody was, in his heart, ſatisfied with the king's title to the crown, or knew on what principle to reſt it.

But though the commons, during this reign, ſhowed a laudable zeal for liberty in their tranſactions with the crown; their efforts againſt the church were ſtill more extraordinary, and ſeemed to anticipate very much the ſpirit which became ſo general in little more than a century afterwards. I know, that the credit of theſe paſſages reſts entirely on one ancient hiſtorian [b]; but that hiſtorian was contemporary, was a clergyman, and it was contrary to the intereſt of his order to preſerve the memory of ſuch tranſactions, much more to forge precedents, which poſterity might, ſome time, be tempted to imitate. This is a truth ſo evident, that the moſt likely way of accounting for the ſilence of the records on this head, is by ſuppoſing, that the authority of ſome churchmen was ſo great as to procure a razure, with regard to theſe circumſtances, which the indiſcretion of one of that order has happily preſerved to us.

In the ſixth of Henry, the commons, who had been required to grant ſupplies, propoſed in plain terms to the king, that he ſhould ſeize all the temporalities of the church, and employ them as a perpetual fund to ſerve the exigencies of the ſtate. They inſiſted, that the clergy poſſeſſed a third of the lands of the kingdom; that they contributed nothing to the public burdens; and that their riches tended only to diſqualify them for performing their miniſterial functions with proper zeal and atten-

[a] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 462. [b] Walſingham.

tion. When this addreſs was preſented, the archbiſhop of Canterbury, who then attended the king, objected, that the clergy, though they went not in perſon to the wars, ſent their vaſſals and tenants in all caſes of neceſſity; while at the ſame time, they themſelves, who ſtaid at home, were employed, night and day, in offering up their prayers for the happineſs and proſperity of the ſtate. The ſpeaker ſmiled, and anſwered without reſerve, that he thought the prayers of the church but a very ſlender ſupply. The archbiſhop however prevailed in the diſpute: The king diſcouraged the application of the commons: And the lords rejected the bill which the lower houſe had framed for ſtripping the church of her revenues [c]. CHAP. XVIII. 1412.

THE commons were not diſcouraged by this repulſe: In the eleventh of the king they returned to the charge with more zeal than before: They made a calculation of all the eccleſiaſtical revenues, which, by their account, amounted to 485,000 marks a-year, and contained 18,400 ploughs of land. They propoſed to divide this property among fifteen new earls, 1500 knights, 6000 eſquires, and a hundred hoſpitals; beſides 20,000 pounds a-year, which the king might take for his own uſe: And they inſiſted, that the clerical functions would be better performed than at preſent, by 15,000 pariſh prieſts, paid at the rate of ſeven marks apiece of yearly ſtipend [d]. This application was accompanied with an addreſs for mitigating the ſtatutes enacted againſt the Lollards, which ſhows from what ſource the addreſs came. The king gave the commons a ſevere reply; and farther to ſatisfy the church, and to prove that he was quite in earneſt, he ordered a Lollard to be burned before the diſſolution of the parliament [e].

[c] Walſingham, p. 371. Ypod. Neuſt. p. 563. [d] Walſingham, p. 379. Tit. Livius. [e] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 627. Otterbourne, p. 267.

CHAP. XVIII.

1413.

We have now related almoſt all the memorable tranſactions of this reign, which was buſy and active; but produced few events, that deſerve to be tranſmitted to poſterity. The king was ſo much employed in defending his crown, which he had obtained by unwarrantable means, and poſſeſſed by a bad title, that he had little leiſure to look abroad, or perform any action, which might redound to the honour or advantage of the nation. His health declined viſibly ſome months before his death: He was ſubject to fits, which bereaved him, for the time, of his ſenſes: And though he was yet in the flower of his age, his end was viſibly approaching. He expired at Weſtminſter in the forty-ſixth year of his age, and the thirteenth of his reign.

20th March. Death,

and character of the king.

The great popularity, which Henry enjoyed before he attained the crown, and which had ſo much aided him in the acquiſition of it, was entirely loſt many years before the end of his reign; and he governed his people more by terror than by affection, more by his own policy than by their ſenſe of duty or allegiance. When men came to reflect in cool blood on the crimes which had led him to the throne; the rebellion againſt his prince; the depoſition of a lawful king, guilty ſometimes perhaps of oppreſſion, but more frequently of indiſcretion; the excluſion of the true heir; the murder of his ſovereign and near relation; theſe were ſuch enormities as drew on him the hatred of his ſubjects, ſanctified all the rebellions againſt him, and made the executions, though not remarkably ſevere, which he found neceſſary for the maintenance of his authority, appear cruel as well as iniquitous to the people. Yet without pretending to apologize for theſe crimes, which muſt ever be held in deteſtation, it may be remarked, that he was inſenſibly led into this blameable conduct by a train of incidents, which few men poſſeſs virtue enough to withſtand. The injuſtice,

with which his predeceſſor had treated him, in firſt condemning him to baniſhment, and then deſpoiling him of his patrimony, made him naturally think of revenge, and of recovering his loſt rights; the headlong zeal of the people hurried him into the throne; the care of his own ſecurity, as well as his ambition, made him an uſurper; and the ſteps have always been ſo few between the priſons of princes and their graves, that we need not wonder, that Richard's fate was no exception to the general rule. All theſe conſiderations make Henry's ſituation, if he retained any ſenſe of virtue, much to be lamented; and the inquietude, with which he poſſeſſed his envied greatneſs, and the remorſes, by which, it is ſaid, he was continually haunted, render him an object of our pity, even when ſeated upon the throne. But it muſt be owned, that his prudence and vigilance and foreſight, in maintaining his power, were admirable: His command of temper remarkable: His courage, both military and political, without blemiſh: And he poſſeſſed many qualities, which fitted him for his high ſtation, and which rendered his uſurpation of it, though pernicious in after times, rather ſalutary, during his own reign, to the Engliſh nation. CHAP. XVIII. 1413.

HENRY was twice married: By his firſt wife, Mary de Bohun, daughter and co-heir of the earl of Hereford, he had four ſons, Henry, his ſucceſſor in the throne, Thomas duke of Clarence, John duke of Bedford, and Humphrey duke of Gloceſter; and two daughters, Blanche and Philippa, the former married to the duke of Bavaria, the latter to the king of Denmark. His ſecond wife, Jane, whom he married after he was king, and who was daughter of the king of Navarre, and widow of the duke of Britanny, brought him no iſſue.

BY an act of the fifth of this reign, it is made felony to cut out any perſon's tongue or put out his eyes; crimes, which the act ſays, were very frequent. This ſavage ſpirit of revenge denotes a barbarous people; though

CHAP. XVIII.

1413.

perhaps it was encreaſed by the prevailing factions and civil commotions.

COMMERCE was very little underſtood in this reign, as in all the preceding. In particular, a great jealouſy prevailed againſt *merchant ſtrangers*; and many reſtraints were by law impoſed upon them; namely, that they ſhould lay out in Engliſh manufactures or commodities all the money acquired by the ſale of their goods, that they ſhould not buy or ſell with one another, and that all their goods ſhould be diſpoſed of three months after importation [f]. This laſt clauſe was found ſo inconvenient, that it was ſoon after repealed by parliament.

IT appears that the expence of this king's houſehold amounted to the yearly ſum of 19,500 l. money of that age [g].

GUICCIARDIN tells us, that the Flemings in this century learned from Italy all the refinements in arts, which they taught the reſt of Europe. Their progreſs, however, was ſtill very ſlow and backward in England.

[f] 4 Hen. IV. cap. 15. and 5 Hen. IV. cap. 9.

[g] Rymer, tom. viii. p. 610.

CHAP. XIX.

HENRY V.

The king's former diſorders —— His reformation —— The Lollards —— Puniſhment of lord Cobham —— State of France —— Invaſion of that kingdom —— Battle of Azincour —— State of France —— New invaſion of France —— Aſſaſſination of the duke of Burgundy —— Treaty of Troye —— Marriage of the king —— His death —— And character —— Miſcellaneous tranſactions during this reign.

CHAP. XIX.

1413. The king's former diſorders.

THE many jealouſies, to which Henry IV's ſituation naturally expoſed him, had ſo infected his temper, that he had entertained unreaſonable ſuſpicions with regard to the fidelity of his eldeſt ſon; and during the later years of his life, he had excluded that prince from all ſhare in public buſineſs, and was even diſpleaſed to ſee him at the head of armies, where his martial talents, though uſeful to the ſupport of government, acquired him a renown, which, he thought, might prove dangerous to his own authority. The active ſpirit of young Henry, reſtrained from its proper exerciſe, broke out in extravagancies of every kind; and the riot of pleaſure, the frolic of debauchery, the outrage of wine, filled the vacancies of a mind, better adapted to the purſuits of ambition, and the cares of government. This courſe of life threw him among companions, whoſe diſorders, if accompanied with ſpirit and humour, he ſeconded and indulged; and he was detected in many ſallies, which, to ſeverer eyes, appeared totally unworthy of his rank and ſtation. There even remains a tradition,

CHAP. XIX.

1413. that, when heated with liquor and jollity, he ſcrupled not to accompany his riotous aſſociates in attacking the paſſengers on the ſtreets and highways, and deſpoiling them of their goods; and he found an amuſement in the incidents, which the terror and regret of theſe defenceleſs people produced on ſuch occaſions. This extreme of diſſoluteneſs proved equally diſagreeable to his father, as that eager application to buſineſs, which had at firſt given him occaſion of jealouſy; and he ſaw in his ſon's behaviour the ſame neglect of decency, the ſame attachment to low company, which had deſtroyed the perſonal character of Richard, and which, more than all his errors in government, had tended to overturn his throne. But the nation in general conſidered the young prince with more indulgence; and obſerved ſo many gleams of generoſity, ſpirit, and magnanimity, breaking continually through the cloud, which a wild conduct threw over his character, that they never ceaſed hoping for his amendment; and they aſcribed all the weeds, which ſhot up in that rich ſoil, to the want of proper culture and attention in the king and his miniſters. There happened an incident which encouraged theſe agreeable views, and gave much occaſion for favourable reflexions to all men of ſenſe and candour. A riotous companion of the prince's had been indicted before Gaſcoigne, the chief juſtice, for ſome diſorders; and Henry was not aſhamed to appear at the bar with the criminal, in order to give him countenance and protection. Finding, that his preſence had not over-awed the chief juſtice, he proceeded to inſult that magiſtrate on his tribunal; but Gaſcoigne, mindful of the character which he then bore, and the majeſty of the ſovereign and of the laws, which he ſuſtained, ordered the prince to be carried to priſon for his rude behaviour [h]. The ſpectators were agreeably diſappointed, when

[h] Hall, fol. 33.

they

they saw the heir of the crown submit peaceably to this sentence, make reparation for his error by acknowledging it, and check his impetuous nature in the midst of its extravagant career.

CHAP. XIX. 1413.

THE memory of this incident, and of many others of a like nature, rendered the prospect of the future reign nowise disagreeable to the nation, and encreased the joy, which the death of so unpopular a prince as the late king naturally occasioned. The first steps taken by the young prince confirmed all those prepossessions, entertained in his favour [i]. He called together his former companions, acquainted them with his intended reformation, exhorted them to imitate his example, but strictly inhibited them, till they had given proofs of their sincerity in this particular, from appearing any more in his presence; and he thus dismissed them with liberal presents [k]. The wise ministers of his father, who had checked his riots, found that they had unknowingly been paying the highest court to him; and were received with all the marks of favour and confidence. The chief justice himself, who trembled to approach the royal presence, met with praises instead of reproaches, for his past conduct, and was exhorted to persevere in the same rigorous and impartial execution of the laws. The surprize of those who expected an opposite behaviour, augmented their satisfaction; and the character of the young king appeared brighter than if it had never been shaded by any errors.

His reformation.

BUT Henry was anxious not only to repair his own misconduct, but also to make amends for those iniquities, into which policy or the necessity of affairs had betrayed his father. He expressed the deepest sorrow for the fate of the unhappy Richard, did justice to the memory of that unfortunate prince, even performed his funeral obse-

i Walsing. p. 382. k Hall, fol. 33. Holingshed, p. 543. Godwin's Life of Henry V. p. 1.

CHAP. XIX. 1413. quies with pomp and solemnity, and cherished all those who had distinguished themselves by their loyalty and attachment towards him [l]. Instead of continuing the restraints which the jealousy of his father had imposed on the earl of Marche, he received that young nobleman with singular courtesy and favour; and by this magnanimity so gained on the gentle and unambitious nature of his competitor, that he remained ever after sincerely attached to him, and gave him no disturbance in his future government. The family of Piercy was restored to its fortune and honours [m]. The king seemed ambitious to bury all party distinctions in oblivion: The instruments of the preceding reign, who had been advanced from their blind zeal for the Lancastrian interests, more than from their merits, gave place every where to men of more honourable characters: Virtue seemed now to have an open career, in which it might exert itself: The exhortations, as well as example, of the prince gave it encouragement: All men were unanimous in their attachment to Henry; and the defects of his title were forgot, amidst the personal regard, which was universally paid to him.

The Lollards. THERE remained among the people only one party distinction, which was derived from religious differences, and which, as it is of a peculiar and commonly a very obstinate nature, the popularity of Henry was not able to overcome. The Lollards were every day encreasing in the kingdom, and were become a formed party, which appeared extremely dangerous to the church, and even formidable to the civil authority [n]. The enthusiasm by which these sectaries were generally actuated, the great alterations which they pretended to introduce, the hatred which they expressed against the established hierarchy,

[l] Hist. Croyland. contin. Hall, fol. 34. Holingshed, p. 544. [m] Holingshed, p. 545. [n] Walsingham, p. 382.

gave

gave an alarm to Henry; who, either from a ſincere attachment to the ancient religion, or from a dread of the unknown conſequences, which attend all important changes, was determined to execute the laws againſt ſuch bold innovators. The head of this ſect was Sir John Oldcaſtle, lord Cobham, a nobleman, who had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his valour and his military talents, and had, on many occaſions, acquired the eſteem both of the late and of the preſent king[o]. His high character and his zeal for the new ſect pointed him out to Arundel, archbiſhop of Canterbury, as the proper victim of eccleſiaſtical ſeverity; whoſe puniſhment would ſtrike a terror into the whole party, and teach them that they muſt expect no mercy under the preſent adminiſtration. He applied to Henry for a permiſſion to indict lord Cobham [p]; but the generous nature of that prince was averſe to ſuch ſanguinary methods of converſion. He repreſented to the primate, that reaſon and conviction were the beſt expedients for ſupporting truth; that all gentle means ought firſt to be tried, in order to reclaim men from error; and that he himſelf would endeavour, by a converſation with Cobham, to reconcile him to the catholic faith. But he found that nobleman obſtinate in his opinions, and determined not to ſacrifice truths of ſuch infinite moment to his complaiſance for ſovereigns [q]. Henry's principles of toleration, or rather his love of the practice, could carry him no farther; and he then gave full reins to eccleſiaſtical ſeverity againſt this inflexible hereſiarch. The primate indicted Cobham; and with the aſſiſtance of his three ſuffragans, the biſhops of London, Wincheſter, and St. David's, condemned him to the flames for his erroneous opinions. Cobham, who was confined in the Tower, made his eſcape before the day appointed for his

CHAP. XIX. 1413.

[o] Walſingham, p. 382. [p] Fox's Acts and Monuments, p. 513.
[q] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 61. Walſingham, p. 383.

execution,

CHAP. XIX.

1413. execution. The bold ſpirit of this man, provoked by perſecution and ſtimulated by zeal, was urged to attempt the moſt criminal enterprizes; and his unlimited authority over the new ſect proved, that he well merited the attention of the civil magiſtrate. He formed in his retreat very violent deſigns againſt his enemies; and diſpatching his emiſſaries to all quarters, appointed a general rendezvous of the party, in order to ſeize the perſon of the king at Eltham, and put their perſecutors to the

1414. 6th Jan. ſword [r]. Henry, apprized of their intention, removed to Weſtminſter: Cobham was not diſcouraged by this diſappointment; but changed the place of rendezvous to the fields near St. Giles: The king, having ſhut the gates of the city, to prevent any re-inforcement to the Lollards from that quarter, came into the fields in the night-time, ſeized ſuch of the conſpirators as appeared, and afterwards laid hold of the ſeveral parties, who were haſtening to the place appointed. It appeared, that a few only were in the ſecret of the conſpiracy: The reſt implicitly followed their leaders: But upon the trial of the priſoners, the treaſonable deſigns of the ſect were rendered certain, both from evidence and from the confeſſion of the criminals themſelves [s]. Some were executed; the greater number pardoned [t]. Cobham himſelf, who made his eſcape by flight, was not brought to juſtice, till

Puniſhment of lord Cobham. four years after; when he was hanged as a traitor; and his body was burnt on the gibbet, in execution of the ſentence pronounced againſt him as a heretic [u]. This criminal deſign, which was perhaps ſomewhat aggravated by the clergy, brought diſcredit upon the party, and checked the progreſs of that ſect, which had embraced the ſpeculative doctrines of Wickliffe, and at the ſame time aſpired to a reformation of eccleſiaſtical abuſes.

[r] Walſingham, p. 385. [s] Cotton, p. 554. Hall, fol. 35. Holingſhed, p. 544. [t] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 119, 129, 193. [u] Walſingham, p. 400. Otterbourne, p. 280. Holingſhed, p. 561.

THESE

CHAP. XIX. 1414.

THESE two points were the great objects of the Lollards; but the bulk of the nation was not affected in the same degree by both of them. Common sense and obvious reflection had discovered to the people the advantages of a reformation in discipline; but the age was not yet so far advanced as to be seized with the spirit of controversy, or to enter into those abstruse doctrines, which the Lollards endeavoured to propagate throughout the kingdom. The very notion of heresy alarmed the generality of the people: Innovation in fundamental principles was suspicious: Curiosity was not, as yet, a proper counterbalance to authority: And even many, who were the greatest friends to the reformation of abuses, were anxious to express their detestation of the speculative tenets of the Wickliffites, which, they feared, threw disgrace on so good a cause. This turn of thought appears evidently in the proceedings of the parliament, which was summoned immediately after the detection of Cobham's conspiracy. That assembly passed severe laws against the new heretics: They enacted, that whoever was convicted of Lollardy before the Ordinary, besides suffering capital punishment according to the laws formerly established, should also forfeit his lands and goods to the king; and that the chancellor, treasurer, justices of the two benches, sheriffs, justices of the peace, and all the chief magistrates in every city and borough, should take an oath to use their utmost endeavours for the extirpation of heresy [w]. Yet this very parliament, when the king demanded supply, renewed the offer formerly pressed upon his father, and entreated him to seize all the ecclesiastical revenues, and convert them to the use of the crown [x]. The clergy were alarmed: They could offer the king no bribe which was equivalent: They only agreed to confer on him all the priories alien, which

[w] 2 Hen. V. chap. 7. [x] Hall, fol. 35.

depended

CHAP. XIX. 1414.

depended on capital abbies in Normandy, and had been bequeathed to theſe abbies, when that province remained united to England: And Chicheley, now archbiſhop of Canterbury, endeavoured to divert the blow, by giving occupation to the king, and by perſuading him to undertake a war againſt France, in order to recover his loſt rights to that kingdom [y].

It was the dying injunction of the late king to his ſon, not to allow the Engliſh to remain long in peace, which was apt to breed inteſtine commotions; but to employ them in foreign expeditions, by which the prince might acquire honour; the nobility, in ſharing his dangers, might attach themſelves to his perſon; and all the reſtleſs ſpirits find occupation for their inquietude. The natural diſpoſition of Henry ſufficiently inclined him to follow this advice, and the civil diſorders of France, which had been lengthened out beyond thoſe of England, opened a full carreer to his ambition.

1415. State of France.

The death of Charles V. which followed ſoon after that of Edward III. and the youth of his ſon, Charles VI. put the two kingdoms for ſome time in a ſimilar ſituation; and it was not to be apprehended, that either of them, during a minority, would be able to make much advantage of the weakneſs of the other. The jealouſies alſo between Charles's three uncles, the dukes of Anjou, Berri, and Burgundy, had diſtracted the affairs of France rather more than thoſe between the dukes of Lancaſter, York, and Glouceſter, Richard's three uncles, diſordered thoſe of England; and had carried off the attention of the French nation from any vigorous enterprize againſt foreign ſtates. But in proportion as Charles advanced in years, the factions were compoſed; his two uncles, the dukes of Anjou and Burgundy, died; and the king him-

[y] Hall, fol. 35, 36.

ſelf,

CHAP. XIX.

1413.

ſelf, aſſuming the reins of government, diſcovered ſymptoms of genius and ſpirit, which revived the drooping hopes of his country. This promiſing ſtate of affairs was not of long duration: The unhappy prince fell ſuddenly into a fit of frenzy, which rendered him incapable of exerciſing his authority; and though he recovered from this diſorder, he was ſo ſubject to relapſes, that his judgment was gradually, but ſenſibly impaired, and no ſteady plan of government could be purſued by him. The adminiſtration of affairs was diſputed between his brother, Lewis duke of Orleans, and his couſin-german, John duke of Burgundy: The propinquity to the crown pleaded in favour of the former: The latter, who, in right of his mother, had inherited the county of Flanders, which he annexed to his father's extenſive dominions, derived a luſtre from his ſuperior power: The people were divided between theſe contending princes: And the king, now reſuming and now dropping his authority, kept the victory undecided, and prevented any regular ſettlement of the ſtate, by the final prevalence of either party.

At length, the dukes of Orleans and Burgundy, ſeeming to be moved by the cries of the nation and by the interpoſition of common friends, agreed to bury all paſt quarrels in oblivion, and to enter into ſtrict amity together: They ſwore before the altar to the ſincerity of this friendſhip; the prieſt adminiſtered the ſacrament to both of them; they gave to each other every pledge, which could be deemed ſacred among men: But all this ſolemn preparation was only a cover for the baſeſt treachery, which was deliberately premeditated by the duke of Burgundy. He procured his rival to be aſſaſſinated in the ſtreets of Paris: He endeavoured for ſome time to conceal the part which he took in the crime: But being detected, he embraced a reſolution ſtill more criminal and more dangerous to ſociety, by openly avowing and juſtifying it.

CHAP. XIX.

1415.

it [z]. The parliament of Paris itself, the tribunal of justice, heard the harangues of the duke's advocate in defence of assassination, which he denominated tyrannicide; and that assembly, partly influenced by faction, partly overawed by power, pronounced no sentence of condemnation against this detestable doctrine [a]. The same question was afterwards agitated before the council of Constance; and it was with difficulty, that a feeble decision, in favour of the contrary opinion, was procured from these fathers of the church, the ministers of peace and of religion. But the mischievous effects of that tenet, had they been before anywise doubtful, appeared sufficiently from the present incidents. The commission of this crime, which destroyed all trust and security, rendered the war implacable between the French parties, and cut off every means of peace and accommodation. The princes of the blood, combining with the young duke of Orleans and his brothers, made violent war on the duke of Burgundy; and the unhappy king, seized sometimes by one party, sometimes by another, transferred alternately to each of them the appearance of legal authority. The provinces were laid waste by mutual depredations: Assassinations were every where committed from the animosity of the several leaders; or what was equally terrible, executions were ordered without any legal or free trial, by pretended courts of judicature. The whole kingdom was distinguished into two parties, the Burgundians, and the Armagnacs; so the adherents of the young duke of Orleans were called, from the count of Armagnac, father-in-law to that prince. The city of Paris, distracted between them, but inclining more to the Burgundians, was a perpetual scene of blood and violence; the king and royal family were often detained captives in the hands of the populace; their

[z] La Laboureur, liv. xxvii. chap. 23, 24.
[a] Ibid. liv. 27. chap. 27. Monstrelet, chap. 39.

faithful

faithful miniſters were butchered or impriſoned before their face; and it was dangerous for any man, amidſt theſe enraged factions, to be diſtinguiſhed by a ſtrict adherence to the principles of probity and honour. CHAP. XIX. 1415.

DURING this ſcene of general violence, there roſe into ſome conſideration a body of men, which uſually makes no figure in public tranſactions even during the moſt peaceful times; and that was the univerſity of Paris, whoſe opinion was ſometimes demanded, and more frequently offered, in the multiplied diſputes between the parties. The ſchiſm, by which the church was at that time divided, and which occaſioned frequent controverſies in the univerſity, had raiſed the profeſſors to an unuſual degree of importance; and this connexion between literature and ſuperſtition had beſtowed on the former a weight, to which reaſon and knowledge are not, of themſelves, any wiſe entitled among men. But there was another ſociety whoſe ſentiments were much more deciſive at Paris, the fraternity of butchers, who, under the direction of their ringleaders, had declared for the duke of Burgundy, and committed the moſt violent outrages againſt the oppoſite party. To counterbalance their power, the Armagnacs made intereſt with the fraternity of carpenters; the populace ranged themſelves on one ſide or the other; and the fate of the capital depended on the prevalence of either party.

THE advantage, which might be made of theſe confuſions, was eaſily perceived in England; and according to the maxims, which uſually prevail among nations, it was determined to lay hold of the favourable opportunity. The late king, who was courted by both the French parties, fomented the quarrel, by alternately ſending aſſiſtance to both; but the preſent ſovereign, impelled by the vigour of youth and the ardour of ambition, determined to puſh his advantages to a greater length, and to carry

CHAP. XIX.

1415. carry a violent war into that distracted kingdom. But while he was making preparations for this end, he tried to effectuate his purpose by negotiation; and he sent over embassadors to Paris, offering a perpetual peace and alliance; but demanding Catharine, the French king's daughter, in marriage, two millions of crowns as her portion, one million six hundred thousand as the arrears of king John's ransom, and the immediate possession and full sovereignty of Normandy and of all the other provinces, which had been ravished from England by the arms of Philip Augustus; together with the superiority of Britanny and Flanders [b]. Such exorbitant demands show, that he was sensible of the present miserable condition of France; and the terms, offered by the French court, though much inferior, discover their consciousness of the same melancholy truth. They were willing to give him the princess in marriage, to pay him eight hundred thousand crowns, to resign the entire sovereignty of Guienne, and to annex to that province the country of Perigord, Rovergue, Xaintonge, the Angoumois, and other territories [c]. As Henry rejected these conditions, and scarcely hoped that his own demands would be complied with, he never intermitted a moment his preparations for war, and having assembled a great fleet and army at Southampton, having invited all the nobility and military men of the kingdom to attend him by the hopes of glory and of conquest, he came to the sea-side, with a purpose of embarking on his expedition.

[b] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 208.

[c] Ibid. p. 211. It is reported by some historians (see Hist. Croyl. Cont. p. 500.) that the Dauphin, in derision of Henry's claims and dissolute character, sent him a box of tennis balls: intimating that these implements of play were better adapted to him than the instruments of war. But this story is by no means credible; the great concessions made by the court of France, show, that they had already entertained a just idea of Henry's character, as well as of their own situation.

CHAP. XIX.

1415.

But while Henry was meditating conquests upon his neighbours, he unexpectedly found himself in danger from a conspiracy at home, which was happily detected in its infancy. The earl of Cambridge, second son of the late duke of York, having espoused the sister of the earl of Marche, had zealously embraced the interests of that family; and had held some conferences with the lord Scrope of Masham, and Sir Thomas Grey of Heton, about the means of recovering to that nobleman his just right to the crown of England. The conspirators as soon as detected, acknowledged their guilt to the king [d]; and Henry proceeded without delay to their trial and condemnation. The utmost that could be expected of the best king in those ages, was, that he would so far observe the essentials of justice, as not to make an innocent person a victim to his severity: But as to the formalities of law, which are often as material as the essentials themselves, they were sacrificed without scruple to the least interest or convenience. A jury of commoners was summoned: The three conspirators were indicted before them: The constable of Southampton castle swore, that they had separately confessed their guilt to him: Without other evidence, Sir Thomas Grey was condemned and executed: But as the earl of Cambridge and lord Scrope, pleaded the privilege of their peerage, Henry thought proper to summon a court of eighteen barons, in which the duke of Clarence presided: The evidence, given before the jury, was read to them: The prisoners, though one of them was a prince of the blood, were not examined, nor produced in court, nor heard in their own defence; but received sentence of death upon this proof, which was every way irregular and unsatisfactory; and the sentence was soon after executed. The earl of Marche was accused of having given his approbation to this conspi-

[d] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 300. T. Livii, p. 8.

CHAP. XIX.

racy, and received a general pardon from the king [e]. He was probably either innocent of the crime imputed to him, or had made reparation by his early repentance and discovery [f].

1415.

Invasion of France.

THE successes, which the arms of England have, in different ages, obtained over those of France, have been much owing to the favourable situation of the former kingdom. The English, happily seated in an island, could make advantage of every misfortune which attended their neighbours, and were little exposed to the danger of reprizals. They never left their own country, but when they were conducted by a king of extraordinary genius, or found their enemy divided by intestine factions, or were supported by a powerful alliance on the continent; and as all these circumstances concurred at present to favour their enterprize, they had reason to expect from it a proportional success. The duke of Burgundy, expelled France by a combination of the princes, had been secretly soliciting the alliance of England [g]; and Henry knew, that this prince, though he scrupled at first to join the inveterate enemy of his country, would willingly, if he saw any probability of success, both assist him with his Flemish subjects, and draw over to the same cause all his numerous partizans in France. Trusting therefore to this circumstance, but without establishing any concert with the duke, he put to sea, and landed near Harfleur, at the head of an army of 6000 men at arms, and 24,000 foot, mostly archers. He immediately began the siege of that place, which was valiantly defended by d'Estoûteville, and under him by de Guitri, de Gaucourt, and others of the French nobility: But as the garrison was weak, and the fortifications in bad repair, the governor was at last obliged to capitulate; and he promised to surrender the

14th Aug.

[e] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 303. [f] St. Remi, chap. lv. Goodwin, p. 65.
[g] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 137, 138.

place

place if he received no ſuccour before the eighteenth of September. The day came, and there was no appearance of a French army to relieve him: Yet he ſtill delayed, on various pretences, to open the gates; till Henry, incenſed at this breach of faith, ordered a general aſſault, took the town by ſtorm, and put all the garriſon to the ſword; except ſome gentlemen, whom the victorious army, in hopes of reaping profit by their ranſom, were induced to ſpare [h].

CHAP. XIX. 1415.

THE fatigues of this ſiege, and the unuſual heat of the ſeaſon, had ſo waſted the Engliſh army, that Henry could enter on no farther enterprize; and was obliged to think of returning into England. He had diſmiſſed his tranſports, which could not ſafely anchor in an open road upon the enemy's coaſt: And he lay under a neceſſity of marching by land to Calais, before he could reach a place of ſafety. A numerous French army of 14,000 men at arms and 40,000 foot was by this time aſſembled in Normandy under the conſtable d'Albret; a force, which, if prudently conducted, was ſufficient either to trample down the Engliſh in the open field, or to harraſs and reduce to nothing their ſmall army, before they could finiſh ſo long and difficult a march. Henry, therefore, cautiouſly offered to ſacrifice his conqueſt of Harfleur for a ſafe paſſage to Calais; but his propoſal being rejected by the French court, he determined to make his way by valour and policy through all the oppoſition of the enemy [i]. That he might not diſcourage his army by the appearance of flight, or expoſe them to thoſe hazards which naturally attend precipitate marches, he made ſlow and deliberate journies [k], till he reached the Somme, which he propoſed to paſs at the ford of Blanquetague, the ſame place where Edward, in a like ſituation, had before

[h] Le Laboureur, liv. 35. chap. 4, 5.
[i] Ibid. liv. 35. chap. 6.
[k] T. Livii, p. 12.

CHAP. XIX.

1415. escaped from Philip de Valois. But he found the ford rendered impassable by the precaution of the French general, and guarded by a strong body on the opposite bank [l]; and he was therefore obliged to march higher up the river, in order to seek for a safe passage. He was continually harassed on his march by flying parties of the enemy; saw bodies of troops on the other side ready to oppose every attempt; his provisions were cut off; his soldiers languished with sickness and fatigue; and his affairs seemed to be reduced to a desperate situation: When he was so dexterous or so fortunate as to seize by surprize a passage near St. Quintin, which had not been sufficiently guarded; and he safely carried over his army [m].

Battle of Azincour.

HENRY then bent his march northwards to Calais; but he was still exposed to great and imminent danger from the enemy, who had also passed the Somme, and threw themselves full in his way, with a purpose of intercepting

25th Oct. his retreat. After he had passed the small river of Ternois at Blangi, he was surprized to observe from the heights the whole French army drawn up in the plains of Azincour, and so posted that it was impossible for him to proceed on his march, without coming to an engagement. Nothing in appearance could be more unequal than the battle, upon which all his safety and his fortunes now depended. The English army was little more than half the number, which had disembarked at Harfleur; and they laboured under every discouragement and necessity. The enemy was four times more numerous; was headed by the dauphin and all the princes of the blood; and was plentifully supplied with provisions of every kind. Henry's situation was exactly similar to that of Edward at Cressy, and that of the Black Prince at Poictiers; and the memory of these great events, inspiring the English with courage, made them hope for a like

[l] St. Remi, chap. 58. [m] T. Livii, p. 13.

deliverance

CHAP. XIX. 1415.

deliverance from their preſent difficulties. The king likewiſe obſerved the ſame prudent conduct which had been followed by theſe great commanders: He drew up his army on a narrow ground between two woods, which guarded each flank; and he patiently expected in that poſture the attack of the enemy [n].

HAD the French conſtable been able, either to reaſon juſtly upon the preſent circumſtances of the two armies, or to profit by paſt experience, he had declined a combat, and had waited, till neceſſity, obliging the Engliſh to advance, had made them relinquiſh the advantages of their ſituation. But the impetuous valour of the nobility, and a vain confidence in ſuperior numbers, brought on this fatal action, which proved the ſource of infinite calamities to their country. The French archers on horſeback and their men at arms, crowded in their ranks, advanced upon the Engliſh archers, who had fixed palliſadoes in their front to break the impreſſion of the enemy, and who ſafely plyed them, from behind that defence, with a ſhower of arrows, which nothing could reſiſt [o]. The clay ſoil, moiſtened by ſome rain, which had lately fallen, proved another obſtacle to the force of the French cavalry: The wounded men and horſes diſcompoſed their ranks: The narrow compaſs, in which they were pent, hindered them from recovering any order: The whole army was a ſcene of confuſion, terror, and diſmay: And Henry, perceiving his advantage, ordered the Engliſh archers, who were light and unincumbered, to advance upon the enemy, and ſeize the moment of victory. They fell with their battle-axes upon the French, who, in their preſent poſture, were incapable either of flying or of making defence: They hewed them in pieces without reſiſtance [p]: And being ſeconded by the men at arms, who alſo

[n] St. Remi, chap. 62. [o] Walſingham, p. 392. T. Livii, p. 19. Le Laboureur, liv. 35. chap. 7. Monſtrelet, chap. 147.
[p] Walſingham, p. 393. Ypod. Neuſt. p. 584.

CHAP. XIX. 1415. pushed on against the enemy, they covered the field with the killed, wounded, dismounted, and overthrown. After all appearance of opposition was over, the English had leisure to make prisoners; and having advanced with uninterrupted success to the open plain, they there saw the remains of the French rear-guard, which still maintained the appearance of a line of battle. At the same time, they heard an alarm from behind: Some gentlemen of Picardy, having collected about 600 peasants, had fallen upon the English baggage, and were doing execution on the unarmed followers of the camp, who fled before them. Henry, seeing the enemy on all sides of him, began to entertain apprehensions from his prisoners; and he thought it necessary to issue general orders for putting them to death: But on the discovery of the truth, he stopped the slaughter, and was still able to save a great number.

No battle was ever more fatal to France, by the number of princes and nobility, slain or taken prisoners. Among the former were the constable himself, the count of Nevers and the duke of Brabant, brothers to the duke of Burgundy, the count of Vaudemont, brother to the duke of Lorraine, the duke of Alençon, the duke of Barre, the count of Marle. The most eminent prisoners were the dukes of Orleans and Bourbon, the counts d'Eu, Vendôme, and Richemont, and the mareschal of Boucicaut. An archbishop of Sens also perished fighting in this battle. The killed are computed on the whole to have amounted to ten thousand men; and as the slaughter fell chiefly upon the cavalry, it is pretended, that, of these, eight thousand were gentlemen. Henry was master of 14,000 prisoners. The person of chief note, who fell among the English, was the duke of York, who perished fighting by the king's side, and had an end more honourable than his life. He was succeeded in his honours and fortune by his nephew,

nephew, ſon of the earl of Cambridge, executed in the beginning of the year. All the Engliſh, who were ſlain, exceeded not forty; though ſome writers make the numbers more conſiderable. CHAP. XIX. 1415.

THE three great battles of Creſſy, Poictiers, and Azincour bear a ſingular reſemblance to each other, in their moſt conſiderable circumſtances. In all of them, there appears the ſame temerity in the Engliſh princes, who, without any object of moment, merely for the ſake of plunder, had ventured ſo far into the enemies' country as to leave themſelves no retreat; and unleſs ſaved by the utmoſt imprudence in the French commanders, were, from their very ſituation, expoſed to inevitable deſtruction. But allowance being made for this temerity, which, according to the irregular plans of war, followed in thoſe ages, ſeems to have been, in ſome meaſure, unavoidable; there appears, in the day of action, the ſame preſence of mind, dexterity, courage, firmneſs, and precaution on the part of the Engliſh: The ſame precipitation, confuſion, and vain confidence on the part of the French: And the events were ſuch as might have been expected from ſuch oppoſite conduct. The immediate conſequences too of theſe three great victories were ſimilar: Inſtead of puſhing the French with vigour, and taking advantage of their conſternation, the Engliſh princes, after their victory, ſeem rather to have relaxed their efforts, and to have allowed the enemy leiſure to recover from his loſſes. Henry interrupted not his march a moment after the battle of Azincour; he carried his priſoners to Calais, and from thence to England; he even concluded a truce with the enemy; and it was not till after an interval of two years that any body of Engliſh troops appeared in France.

THE poverty of all the European princes, and the ſmall reſources of their kingdoms, were the cauſe of theſe continual interruptions in their hoſtilities; and though the

CHAP. XIX.

maxims of war were in general deſtructive, their military operations were mere incurſions, which, without any ſettled plan, they carried on againſt each other. The luſtre, however, attending the victory of Azincour, procured ſome ſupplies from the Engliſh parliament; though ſtill unequal to the expences of a campaign. They granted Henry an entire fifteenth of moveables; and they conferred on him *for life* the duties of tonnage and poundage, and the ſubſidies on the exportation of wool and leather. This conceſſion is more conſiderable than that which had been granted to Richard II. by his laſt parliament, and which was afterwards, on his depoſition, made ſo great an article of charge againſt him.

1415.

State of France.

BUT during this interruption of hoſtilities from England, France was expoſed to all the furies of civil war; and the ſeveral parties became every day more enraged againſt each other. The duke of Burgundy, confident that the French miniſters and generals were entirely diſcredited by the misfortune at Azincour, advanced with a great army to Paris, and attempted to re-inſtate himſelf in poſſeſſion of the government, as well as of the perſon of the king. But his partizans in that city were overawed by the court, and kept in ſubjection: The duke deſpaired of ſucceſs; and he retired with his forces, which he immediately diſbanded in the Low-Countries [q].

1416. He was next year invited to make a new attempt, by ſome violent quarrels, which broke out in the royal family. The queen, Iſabella, daughter of the duke of Bavaria, who had been hitherto an inveterate enemy to the Burgundian faction, had received a great injury from the other party, which the implacable ſpirit of that princeſs was never able to forgive. The public neceſſities obliged the count of Armagnac, created conſtable of France in place of d'Albret, to ſeize the great treaſures which Iſa-

[q] Le Laboureur, liv. 35. chap. 10.

bella

bella had amaſſed; and when ſhe expreſſed her diſpleaſure at this injury, he inſpired into the weak mind of the king ſome jealouſies concerning her conduct, and puſhed him to ſeize, and put to the torture, and afterwards throw into the Seine, Bois-bourdon, her favourite, whom he accuſed of a commerce of gallantry with that princeſs. The queen herſelf was ſent to Tours, and confined under a guard [r]; and after ſuffering theſe multiplied inſults, ſhe no longer ſcrupled to enter into a correſpondence with the duke of Burgundy. As her ſon, the dauphin Charles, a youth of ſixteen, was entirely governed by the faction of Armagnac, ſhe extended her animoſity to him, and ſought his deſtruction with the moſt unrelenting hatred. She had ſoon an opportunity of rendering her unnatural purpoſe effectual. The duke of Burgundy, in concert with her, entered France at the head of a great army: He made himſelf maſter of Amiens, Abbeville, Dourlens, Montreüil, and other towns in Picardy; Senlis, Rheims, Chalons, Troye, and Auxerre, declared themſelves of his party [s]. He got poſſeſſion of Beaumont, Pontoiſe, Vernon, Meulant, Montlheri, towns in the neighbourhood of Paris; and carrying farther his progreſs towards the weſt, he ſeized Etampes, Chartres, and other fortreſſes; and was at laſt able to deliver the queen, who fled to Troye, and openly declared againſt thoſe miniſters, who, ſhe ſaid, detained her huſband in captivity [t]. CHAP. XIX. 1416.

MEANWHILE, the partizans of Burgundy raiſed a commotion in Paris, which always inclined to that faction. Lile-Adam, one of the duke's captains, was received into the city in the night-time, and headed the inſurrection of the people, which in a moment became ſo impetuous, that nothing could oppoſe it. The perſon of the king was ſeized: The dauphin made his eſcape with difficulty: 1417.

[r] St. Remi, chap. 74. Monſtrelet, chap. 167. [s] St. Remi, chap. 79. [t] Ibid. chap. 81. Monſtrelet, chap. 178, 179.

Great

CHAP. XIX.

1417. Great numbers of the faction of Armagnac were immediately butchered: The count himself, and many persons of note, were thrown into prison: Murders were daily committed from private animosity, under pretence of faction: And the populace, not satiated with their fury, and deeming the course of public justice too dilatory, broke into the prisons, and put to death the count of Armagnac, and all the other nobility who were there confined [u].

New invasion of France. 1st August.

WHILE France was in such furious combustion, and was so ill prepared to resist a foreign enemy, Henry, having collected some treasure, and levied an army, landed in Normandy at the head of 25,000 men; and met with no considerable opposition from any quarter. He made

1418. himself master of Falaise and Cherbourg; Evreux and Caen submitted to him; Pont de l'Arche opened its gates; and Henry, having subdued all the lower Normandy, and received a reinforcement of 15,000 men from England [w], formed the siege of Roüen, which was defended by a garrison of 4000 men, seconded by the inhabitants, to the number of 15,000 [x]. The cardinal des Ursins here attempted to incline him towards peace, and to moderate his pretensions: But the king replied to him in such terms as shewed that he was fully sensible of all his present advantages: "Do you not see," said he, "that God has led me hither as by the hand? France "has no sovereign: I have just pretensions on that king-"dom: Every thing is here in the utmost confusion: "No one thinks of resisting me. Can I have a more "sensible proof, that that Being, who disposes of em-"pires, has determined to put the crown of France upon "my head?" [y]

BUT though Henry had opened his mind to this scheme of ambition, he still continued to negotiate with his ene-

[u] St. Remi, chap. 85, 86. Monstrelet, chap. 118. [w] Walsingham, p. 400. [x] St. Remi, chap. 91. [y] Juvenal des Ursins.

mies, and endeavoured to obtain more ſecure, though leſs conſiderable advantages. He made, at the ſame time, offers of peace to both parties; to the queen and duke of Burgundy on the one hand, who, having poſſeſſion of the king's perſon, carried the appearance of legal authority [z]; and to the dauphin on the other, who, being the undoubted heir of the monarchy, was adhered to by every one that payed any regard to the true intereſts of their country [a]. Theſe two parties alſo carried on a continual negotiation with each other. The terms propoſed on all ſides were perpetually varying; The events of the war, and the intrigues of the cabinet, intermingled with each other: And the fate of France remained long in this uncertainty. After many negotiations, Henry offered the queen and the duke of Burgundy to make peace with them, to eſpouſe the princeſs Catharine, and to accept of all the provinces ceded to Edward III. by the treaty of Bretigni, with the addition of Normandy, which he was to receive in full and entire ſovereignty [b]. Theſe terms were ſubmitted to: There remained only ſome circumſtances to adjuſt, in order to the entire completion of the treaty: But in this interval the duke of Burgundy ſecretly finiſhed his treaty with the Dauphin; and theſe two princes agreed to ſhare the royal authority during King Charles's lifetime, and to unite their arms in order to expel foreign enemies [c].

CHAP. XIX.

1418.

1419.

THIS alliance, which ſeemed to cut off from Henry all hopes of farther ſucceſs, proved in the iſſue the moſt favourable event, that could have happened for his pretenſions. Whether the Dauphin and duke of Burgundy were ever ſincere in their mutual engagements is uncertain; but very fatal effects reſulted from their momentary and ſeeming union. The two princes agreed to an interview, in order to concert the means of rendering effec-

[z] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 717, 749. [a] Ibid. p. 626, &c.
[b] Ibid. p. 762. [c] Ibid. p. 776. St. Remi, chap. 95.

tual

CHAP. XIX.

1419.

tual their common attack on the Engliſh; but how both or either of them could with ſafety venture upon this conference, it ſeemed ſomewhat difficult to contrive. The aſſaſſination, perpetrated by the duke of Burgundy, and ſtill more, his open avowal of the deed, and defence of the doctrine, tended to diſſolve all the bands of civil ſociety; and even men of honour, who deteſted the example, might deem it juſt, on a favourable opportunity, to retaliate upon the author. The duke, therefore, who neither dared to give, nor could pretend to expect any truſt, agreed to all the contrivances for mutual ſecurity, which were propoſed by the miniſters of the dauphin. The two princes came to Montereau: The duke lodged in the caſtle; the dauphin in the town, which was divided from the caſtle by the river Yonne: The bridge between them was choſen for the place of interview: Two high rails were drawn acroſs the bridge: The gates on each ſide were guarded, one by the officers of the dauphin, the other by thoſe of the duke: The princes were to enter into the intermediate ſpace by the oppoſite gates, accompanied each by ten perſons; and with all theſe marks of diffidence, to conciliate their mutual friendſhip. But it appeared, that no precautions are ſufficient, where laws have no place, and where all principles of honour are utterly abandoned. Tannegui de Chatel, and others of the dauphin's retainers, had been zealous partizans of the late duke of Orleans; and they determined to ſeize the opportunity of revenging on the aſſaſſin the murder of that prince: They no ſooner entered the rails, than they drew their ſwords and attacked the duke of Burgundy: His friends were aſtoniſhed, and thought not of making any defence; and all of them either ſhared his fate, or were taken priſoners by the retinue of the dauphin [d].

Aſſaſſination of the duke of Burgundy.

[d] St. Remi, chap. 97. Monſtrelet, chap. 211.

CHAP. XIX.

1419.

THE extreme youth of this prince made it doubtful whether he were admitted into the ſecret of the conſpiracy: But as the deed was committed under his eye, by his moſt intimate friends, who ſtill retained their connexions with him, the blame of the action, which was certainly more imprudent than criminal, fell entirely upon him. The whole ſtate of affairs was every where changed by this unexpected incident. The city of Paris, paſſionately devoted to the family of Burgundy, broke out into the higheſt fury againſt the dauphin. The court of king Charles entered from intereſt into the ſame views; and as all the miniſters of that monarch had owed their preferment to the late duke, and foreſaw their downfall if the dauphin recovered poſſeſſion of his father's perſon, they were concerned to prevent by any means the ſucceſs of his enterprize. The queen, perſevering in her unnatural animoſity againſt her ſon, encreaſed the general flame, and inſpired into the king, as far as he was ſuſceptible of any ſentiment, the ſame prejudices by which ſhe herſelf had long been actuated. But above all, Philip count of Charolois, now duke of Burgundy, thought himſelf bound by every tie of honour and of duty, to revenge the murder of his father, and to proſecute the aſſaſſin to the utmoſt extremity. And in this general tranſport of rage, every conſideration of national and family intereſt was buried in oblivion by all parties: The ſubjection to a foreign enemy, the expulſion of the lawful heir, the ſlavery of the kingdom, appeared but ſmall evils, if they led to the gratification of the preſent paſſion.

THE king of England had, before the death of the duke of Burgundy, profited extremely by the diſtractions of France, and was daily making a conſiderable progreſs in Normandy. He had taken Roüen after an obſtinate ſiege [c]: He had made himſelf maſter of Pontoiſe and Gi-

[c] T. Livii, p. 69. Monſtrelet, chap. 201.

ſors:

CHAP. XIX.

1419. fors: He even threatened Paris, and by the terror of his arms, had obliged the court to remove to Troye: And in the midſt of his ſucceſſes, he was agreeably ſurpriſed, to find his enemies, inſtead of combining againſt him for their mutual defence, diſpoſed to ruſh into his arms, and to make him the inſtrument of their vengeance upon each other. A league was immediately concluded at Arras between him and the duke of Burgundy. That prince, without ſtipulating any thing for himſelf, except the proſecution of his father's murder, and the marriage of the duke of Bedford with his ſiſter, was willing to ſacrifice the kingdom to Henry's ambition; and he agreed to every

1420. demand, made by that monarch. In order to finiſh this aſtoniſhing treaty, which was to transfer the crown of France to a ſtranger, Henry went to Troye, accompanied by his brothers, the dukes of Clarence and Gloceſter; and was there met by the duke of Burgundy. The imbecility, into which Charles had fallen, made him incapable of ſeeing any thing but through the eyes of thoſe who attended him; as they, on their part, ſaw every thing through the medium of their paſſions. The treaty, being already concerted among the parties, was immediately drawn, and ſigned, and ratified: Henry's will ſeemed to be a law throughout this whole negotiation: Nothing was attended to but his advantages.

Treaty of Troye.

THE principal articles of the treaty were, that Henry ſhould eſpouſe the princeſs Catharine: That king Charles, during his lifetime, ſhould enjoy the title and dignity of king of France: That Henry ſhould be declared and acknowledged heir of the monarchy, and be entruſted with the preſent adminiſtration of the government: That that kingdom ſhould paſs to his heirs general: That France and England ſhould for ever be united under one king; but ſhould ſtill retain their ſeveral uſages, cuſtoms, and privileges: That all the princes, peers, vaſſals, and communities

munities of France, ſhould ſwear, that they would both adhere to the future ſucceſſion of Henry, and pay him preſent obedience as regent: That this prince ſhould unite his arms to thoſe of king Charles and the duke of Burgundy, in order to ſubdue the adherents of Charles, the pretended dauphin: And that theſe three princes ſhould make no peace or truce with him but by common conſent and agreement [f].

CHAP. XIX. 1420.

SUCH was the tenor of this famous treaty; a treaty, which as nothing but the moſt violent animoſity could dictate, ſo nothing but the power of the ſword could carry it into execution. It is hard to ſay, whether its conſequences, had it taken effect, would have proved more pernicious to England or to France. It muſt have reduced the former kingdom to the rank of a province: It would have entirely disjointed the ſucceſſion of the latter, and have brought on the deſtruction of every deſcendant of the royal family; as the houſes of Orleans, Anjou, Alençon, Britanny, Bourbon, and of Burgundy itſelf, whoſe titles were preferable to that of the Engliſh princes, would on that account have been expoſed to perpetual jealouſy and perſecution from the ſovereign. There was even a palpable deficiency in Henry's claim, which no art could palliate. For beſides the inſuperable objections, to which Edward IIId's pretenſions were expoſed, *he* was not heir to that monarch: If female ſucceſſion were admitted, the right had devolved on the houſe of Mortimer: Allowing, that Richard II. was a tyrant, and that Henry IVth's merits, in depoſing him, were ſo great towards the Engliſh, as to juſtify that nation for placing him on the throne; Richard had nowiſe offended France, and his rival had merited nothing of that kingdom: It could not poſſibly be pretended, that the crown of France was become an appendage to that of England; and that a

[f] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 895. St. Remi, chap. 101. Monſtrelet, chap. 223.

prince,

CHAP. XIX. 1420.

a prince, who, by any means, got poſſeſſion of the latter, was, without farther queſtion, entitled to the former. So that on the whole, it muſt be allowed, that Henry's claim to France was, if poſſible, ſtill more unintelligible, than the title, by which his father had mounted the throne of England.

But though all theſe conſiderations were overlooked, amidſt the hurry of paſſions, by which the courts of France and Burgundy were actuated, they would neceſſarily revive during times of more leiſure and tranquillity; and it behoved Henry to puſh his preſent advantages, and allow men no time for reaſon or reflection. In a few days after, he eſpouſed the princeſs, Catharine: He carried his father-in-law to Paris, and put himſelf in poſſeſſion of that capital: He obtained from the parliament and the three eſtates a ratification of the treaty of Troye: He ſupported the duke of Burgundy in procuring a ſentence againſt the murderers of his father: And he immediately turned his arms with ſucceſs againſt the adherents of the dauphin, who, as ſoon as he heard of the treaty of Troye, took on him the ſtyle and authority of regent, and appealed to God and his ſword for the maintenance of his title.

Marriage of the king.

The firſt place that Henry ſubdued, was Sens, which opened its gates after a ſlight reſiſtance. With the ſame facility, he made himſelf maſter of Montereau. The defence of Melun was more obſtinate: Barbaſan, the governor, held out for the ſpace of four months againſt the beſiegers; and it was famine alone which obliged him to capitulate. Henry ſtipulated to ſpare the lives of all the garriſon, except ſuch as were accomplices in the murder of the duke of Burgundy; and as Barbaſan himſelf was ſuſpected to be of the number, his puniſhment was demanded by Philip: But the king had the generoſity to intercede for him, and to prevent his execution [g].

[g] Holingſhed, p. 577.

The

CHAP. XX. 1421.

THE neceſſity of providing ſupplies both of men and money obliged Henry to go over to England; and he left the duke of Exeter, his uncle, governor of Paris during his abſence. The authority, which naturally attends ſucceſs, procured from the Engliſh parliament a ſubſidy of a fifteenth; but, if we may judge by the ſcantineſs of this ſupply, the nation was nowiſe ſanguine on their king's victories; and in proportion as the proſpect of their union with France became nearer, they began to open their eyes, and to ſee the dangerous conſequences, with which that event muſt neceſſarily be attended. It was fortunate for Henry, that he had other reſources, beſides pecuniary ſupplies from his native ſubjects. The provinces, which he had already conquered, maintained his troops; and the hopes of farther advantages allured to his ſtandard all men of ambitious ſpirits in England, who deſired to ſignalize themſelves by arms. He levied a new army of twenty-four thouſand archers, and four thouſand horſemen [h], and marched them to Dover, the place of rendezvous. Every thing had remained in tranquillity at Paris, under the duke of Exeter; but there had happened in another quarter of the kingdom a misfortune, which haſtened the king's embarkation.

THE detention of the young king of Scots in England had hitherto proved advantageous to Henry; and by keeping the regent in awe, had preſerved, during the whole courſe of the French war, the northern frontier in tranquillity. But when intelligence arrived in Scotland, of the progreſs made by Henry, and the near proſpect of his ſucceſſion to the crown of France, the nation was alarmed, and foreſaw their own inevitable ruin, if the ſubjection of their ally left them to combat alone a victorious enemy, who was already ſo much ſuperior in power and riches. The regent entered into the ſame views;

[h] Monſtrelet, chap. 212.

CHAP. XIX.

1421.

and though he declined an open rupture with England, he permitted a body of seven thousand Scots, under the command of the earl of Buchan, his second son, to be transported into France for the service of the dauphin. To render this aid ineffectual, Henry had, in his former expedition, carried over the king of Scots, whom he obliged to send orders to his countrymen to leave the French service; but the Scotch general replied, that he would obey no commands which came from a king in captivity, and that a prince, while in the hands of his enemy, was nowise entitled to authority. These troops, therefore, continued still to act under the earl of Buchan; and were employed by the dauphin to oppose the progress of the duke of Clarence in Anjou. The two armies encountered at Baugé: The English were defeated: The duke himself was slain by Sir Allan Swinton, a Scotch knight, who commanded a company of men at arms: And the earls of Somerset [i], Dorset, and Huntingdon, were taken prisoners [k]. This was the first action that turned the tide of success against the English; and the dauphin, that he might both attach the Scots to his service, and reward the valour and conduct of the earl of Buchan, honoured that nobleman with the office of constable.

But the arrival of the king of England, with so considerable an army, was more than sufficient to repair this loss. Henry was received at Paris with great expressions of joy; so obstinate were the prejudices of the people: And he immediately conducted his army to Chartres, which had long been besieged by the dauphin. That prince raised the siege on the approach of the English; and being resolved to decline a battle, he retired

[i] His name was John, and he was afterwards created duke of Somerset. He was grandson of John of Gaunt duke of Lancaster. The earl of Dorset was brother to Somerset, and succeeded him in that title.

[k] St Remi, chap. 110. Monstrelet, chap. 239. Hall, fol. 76.

with

with his army [l]. Henry made himſelf maſter of Dreux without a blow: He laid ſiege to Meaux at the ſolicitation of the Pariſians, who were much incommoded by the garriſon of that place. This enterprize employed the Engliſh arms during the ſpace of eight months: The baſtard of Vaurus, governor of Meaux, diſtinguiſhed himſelf by an obſtinate defence; but was at laſt obliged to ſurrender at diſcretion. The cruelty of this officer was equal to his bravery: He was accuſtomed to hang without diſtinction all the Engliſh and Burgundians who fell into his hands: And Henry, in revenge of his barbarity, ordered him immediately to be hanged on the ſame tree, which he had made the inſtrument of his inhuman executions [m]. CHAP. XIX. 1421.

THIS ſucceſs was followed by the ſurrender of many other places in the neighbourhood of Paris, which held for the dauphin: That prince was chaced beyond the Loire, and he almoſt totally abandoned all the northern provinces: He was even purſued into the ſouth by the united arms of the Engliſh and Burgundians, and threatened with total deſtruction. Notwithſtanding the bravery and fidelity of his captains, he ſaw himſelf unequal to his enemies in the field; and found it neceſſary to temporize, and to avoid all hazardous actions with a rival, who had gained ſo much the aſcendant over him. And to crown all the other proſperities of Henry, his queen was delivered of a ſon, who was called by his father's name, and whoſe birth was celebrated by rejoicings no leſs pompous, and no leſs ſincere at Paris than at London. The infant prince ſeemed to be univerſally regarded as the future heir of both monarchies.

BUT the glory of Henry, when it had nearly reached the ſummit, was ſtopped ſhort by the hand of nature; 1422. Death,

[l] St. Remi, chap. 3. [m] Rymer, vol. x. p. 212. T. Livii, p. 92, 93. St. Remi, chap. 116. Monſtrelet, chap. 260.

CHAP. XIX. 1422.

and all his mighty projects vaniſhed into ſmoke. He was ſeized with a fiſtula, a malady, which the ſurgeons at that time had not ſkill enough to cure; and he was at laſt ſenſible, that his diſtemper was mortal, and that his end was approaching. He ſent for his brother the duke of Bedford, the earl of Warwic, and a few noblemen more, whom he had honoured with his confidence; and he delivered to them, in great tranquillity, his laſt will with regard to the government of his kingdom and family. He entreated them to continue, towards his infant ſon, the ſame fidelity and attachment, which they had always profeſſed to himſelf during his lifetime, and which had been cemented by ſo many mutual good offices. He expreſſed his indifference on the approach of death; and though he regreted, that he muſt leave unfiniſhed a work ſo happily begun, he declared himſelf confident, that the final acquiſition of France would be the effect of their prudence and valour. He left the regency of that kingdom to his eldeſt brother, the duke of Bedford; that of England to his younger, the duke of Gloceſter; and the care of his ſon's perſon to the earl of Warwic. He recommended to all of them a great attention to maintain the friendſhip of the duke of Burgundy; and adviſed them never to give liberty to the French princes taken at Azincour, till his ſon were of age, and could himſelf hold the reins of government. And he conjured them, if the ſucceſs of their arms ſhould not enable them to place young Henry on the throne of France, never at leaſt to make peace with that kingdom, unleſs the enemy, by the ceſſion of Normandy, and its annexation to the crown of England, made compenſation for all the hazard and expence of his enterprize [n].

He next applied himſelf to his devotions, and ordered his chaplain to recite the ſeven penitential pſalms. When

[n] Monſtrelet, chap. 265. Hall, fol. 80.

that

that passage of the fifty-first psalm was read; *Build thou the walls of Jerusalem*; he interrupted the chaplain, and declared his serious intention, after he should have fully subdued France, to have made a crusade against the infidels, and recover possession of the Holy Land °. So ingenious are men in deceiving themselves, that Henry forgot, in those moments, all the blood spilt by his ambition; and received comfort from this late and feeble resolve, which, as the mode of these enterprizes was now past, he certainly would never have carried into execution. He expired in the thirty-fourth year of his age and the tenth of his reign. CHAP. XIX. 1422. 31st Aug.

THIS prince possessed many eminent virtues; and if we give indulgence to ambition in a monarch, or rank it, as the vulgar are inclined to do, among his virtues, they were unstained by any considerable blemish. His abilities appeared equally in the cabinet and in the field: The boldness of his enterprizes was no less remarkable than his personal valour in conducting them. He had the talent of attaching his friends by affability, and of gaining his enemies by address and clemency. The English, dazzled by the lustre of his character, still more than by that of his victories, were reconciled to the defects in his title: The French almost forgot that he was an enemy: And his care of maintaining justice in his civil administration, and preserving discipline in his armies, made some amends to both nations for the calamities inseparable from those wars, in which his short reign was almost entirely occupied. That he could forgive the earl of Marche, who had a better title to the crown than himself, is a sure indication of his magnanimity; and that the earl relied so entirely on his friendship is no less a proof of his established character for candour and sincerity. There remain in history few instances of and character of the king.

° St. Remi, chap. 118. Monstrelet, chap. 265.

CHAP. XIX.

such mutual trust; and still fewer where neither party found reason to repent it.

1432. THE exterior figure of this great prince, as well as his deportment, was engaging. His stature was somewhat above the middle size; his countenance beautiful; his limbs genteel and slender, but full of vigour; and he excelled in all warlike and manly exercises [p]. He left by his queen, Catharine of France, only one son, not full nine months old; whose misfortunes, in the course of his life, surpassed all the glories and successes of his father.

IN less than two months after Henry's death, Charles VI. of France, his father-in-law, terminated his unhappy life. He had, for several years, possessed only the appearance of royal authority: Yet was this mere appearance of considerable advantage to the English; and divided the duty and affections of the French between them and the dauphin. This prince was proclaimed and crowned king of France at Poictiers, under the name of Charles VII. Rheims, the place where this ceremony is usually performed, was at that time in the hands of his enemies.

CATHERINE of France, Henry's widow, married, soon after his death, a Welsh gentleman, Sir Owen Tudor, said to be descended from the ancient princes of that country: She bore him two sons, Edmund and Jasper, of whom the eldest was created earl of Richmond; the second earl of Pembroke. The family of Tudor, first raised to distinction by this alliance, mounted afterwards the throne of England.

Miscellaneous transactions.

THE long schism, which had divided the Latin church for near forty years, was finally terminated in this reign by the council of Constance; which deposed the pope, John XXIII. for his crimes, and elected Martin V. in

[p] T. Livii, p. 4.

his

his place, who was acknowledged by almoſt all the kingdoms of Europe. This great and unuſual act of authority in the council gave the Roman pontiffs ever after a mortal antipathy to theſe aſſemblies. The ſame jealouſy, which had long prevailed in moſt European countries, between the civil ariſtocracy and monarchy, now alſo took place between theſe powers in the eccleſiaſtical body. But the great ſeparation of the biſhops in the ſeveral ſtates, and the difficulty of aſſembling them, gave the pope a mighty advantage, and made it more eaſy for him to collect all the powers of the hierarchy in his own perſon. The cruelty and treachery, which attended the puniſhment of John Huſs and Jerome of Prague, the unhappy diſciples of Wickliffe, who, in violation of a ſafe-conduct, were burned alive for their errors by the council of Conſtance, prove this melancholy truth, that toleration is none of the virtues of prieſts in any form of eccleſiaſtical government. But as the Engliſh nation had little or no concern in theſe great tranſactions, we are here the more conciſe in relating them.

CHAP. XIX. 1422.

THE firſt commiſſion of array, which we meet with, was iſſued in this reign [q]. The military part of the feudal ſyſtem, which was the moſt eſſential circumſtance of it, was entirely diſſolved; and could no longer ſerve for the defence of the kingdom. Henry, therefore, when he went to France in 1415, impowered certain commiſſioners to take in each county a review of all the freemen able to bear arms, to divide them into companies, and to keep them in readineſs for reſiſting the enemy. This was the æra, when the feudal militia in England gave place to one which was perhaps ſtill leſs orderly and regular.

WE have an authentic and exact account of the ordinary revenue of the crown during this reign; and it

[q] Rymer, vol. ix. p. 254, 255.

CHAP. XIX.

1422.

amounts only to 55,714 pounds 10 ſhillings and 10 pence a-year [r]. This is nearly the ſame with the revenue of Henry III. and the kings of England had neither become much richer nor poorer in the courſe of ſo many years. The ordinary expence of the government amounted to 42,507 pounds 16 ſhillings and 10 pence: So that the king had a ſurplus only of 13,206 pounds 14 ſhillings for the ſupport of his houſehold; for his wardrobe; for the expence of embaſſies; and other articles. This ſum was nowiſe ſufficient: He was therefore obliged to have frequent recourſe to parliamentary ſupplies, and was thus, even in time of peace, not altogether independant of his people. But wars were attended with a great expence, which neither the prince's ordinary revenue, nor the extraordinary ſupplies were able to bear; and the ſovereign was always reduced to many miſerable ſhifts, in order to make any tolerable figure in them. He commonly borrowed money from all quarters; he pawned his jewels and ſometimes the crown itſelf [s]; he ran in arrears to his army; and he was often obliged, notwithſtanding all theſe expedients, to ſtop in the midſt of his career of victory, and to grant truces to the enemy. The high pay which was given to ſoldiers agreed very ill with this low income. All the extraordinary ſupplies, granted by parliament to Henry during the courſe of his reign, were only ſeven tenths and fifteenths, about 203,000 pounds [t]. It is eaſy to compute how ſoon this money muſt be exhauſted by armies of 24,000 archers, and 6000 horſe; when each archer had ſixpence a-day [u], and each horſeman two ſhillings. The moſt ſplendid ſucceſſes proved commonly very fruitleſs, when ſupported by ſo poor a revenue; and

[r] Rymer, vol x. p. 113. [s] Ibid. p. 190. [t] Parliamentary Hiſtory, vol. ii. p. 168.

[u] It appears from many paſſages of Rymer, particularly vol. ix. p. 258. that the king paid 20 marks a-year for an archer, which is a good deal above ſixpence a day. The price had riſen, as is natural, by raiſing the denomination of money.

the

the debts and difficulties, which the king thereby incurred, made him pay dear for his victories. The civil adminiſtration, likewiſe, even in time of peace, could never be very regular, where the government was ſo ill enabled to ſupport itſelf. Henry till within a year of his death owed debts, which he had contracted when prince of Wales [w]. It was in vain that the parliament pretended to reſtrain him from arbitrary practices, when he was reduced to ſuch neceſſities. Though the right of levying purveyance, for inſtance, had been expreſsly guarded againſt by the Great Charter itſelf, and was frequently complained of by the commons, it was found abſolutely impracticable to aboliſh it; and the parliament at length, ſubmitting to it as a legal prerogative, contented themſelves with enacting laws to limit and confine it. The duke of Gloceſter, in the reign of Richard II. poſſeſſed a revenue of 60,000 crowns, (about 30,000 pounds a-year of our preſent money,) as we learn from Froiſſard [x], and was conſequently richer than the king himſelf, if all circumſtances be duly conſidered.

CHAP. XIX. 1422.

It is remarkable, that the city of Calais alone was an annual expence to the crown of 19,119 pounds [y]; that is, above a third of the common charge of the government in time of peace. This fortreſs was of no uſe to the defence of England, and only gave that kingdom an inlet to annoy France. Ireland coſt two thouſand pounds a-year, over and above its own revenue; which was certainly very low. Every thing contributes to give us a very mean idea of the ſtate of Europe in thoſe ages.

From the moſt early times, till the reign of Edward III. the denomination of money had never been altered: A pound ſterling was ſtill a pound troy; that is, about three pounds of our preſent money. That conqueror was the firſt that innovated in this important article.

[w] Rymer, vol. x. p. 114. [x] Liv. iv. chap. 86. [y] Rymer, vol. x. p. 143.

In

CHAP. XIX. 1422.

In the twentieth year of his reign, he coined twenty-two ſhillings out of a pound troy; in his twenty-ſeventh year he coined twenty-five ſhillings. But Henry V. who was alſo a conqueror, raiſed ſtill farther the denomination, and coined thirty ſhillings from a pound troy [z]: His revenue therefore muſt have been about 110,000 pounds of our preſent money; and by the cheapneſs of proviſions, was equivalent to above 330,000 pounds.

NONE of the princes of the houſe of Lancaſter ventured to impoſe taxes without conſent of parliament: Their doubtful or bad title became ſo far of advantage to the conſtitution. The rule was then fixed, and could not ſafely be broken afterwards, even by more abſolute princes.

[z] Fleetwood's Chronicon Precioſum, p. 52.

CHAP. XX.

HENRY VI.

Government during the minority——State of France——Military operations——Battle of Verneüil——Siege of Orleans——The maid of Orleans——The ſiege of Orleans raiſed——The king of France crowned at Rheims——Prudence of the duke of Bedford——Execution of the maid of Orleans——Defection of the duke of Burgundy——Death of the duke of Bedford——Decline of the Engliſh in France——Truce with France——Marriage of the king with Margaret of Anjou——Murder of the duke of Gloceſter——State of France——Renewal of the war with France——The Engliſh expelled France.

CHAP. XX. 1422.

DURING the reigns of the Lancaſtrian princes, the authority of parliament ſeems to have been more confirmed, and the privileges of the people more regarded, than during any former period; and the two preceding kings, though men of great ſpirit and abilities, abſtained from ſuch exertions of prerogative, as even weak princes, whoſe title was undiſputed, were tempted to think they might venture upon with impunity. The long minority, of which there was now the proſpect, encouraged ſtill farther the lords and commons to extend their influence; and without paying much regard to the verbal deſtination of Henry V. they aſſumed the power of giving a new arrangement to the whole adminiſtration. They declined altogether

Government during the minority.

CHAP. XX. 1422.

altogether the name of *Regent* with regard to England: They appointed the duke of Bedford to be *protector* or *guardian* of that kingdom, a title which they ſuppoſed to imply leſs authority: They inveſted the duke of Gloceſter with the ſame dignity during the abſence of his elder brother [a]; and in order to limit the power of both theſe princes, they appointed a council, without whoſe advice and approbation no meaſure of importance could be determined [b]. The perſon and education of the infant prince was committed to Henry Beaufort, biſhop of Wincheſter, his great uncle and the legitimated ſon of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaſter; a prelate, who, as his family could never have any pretenſions to the crown, might ſafely, they thought, be intruſted with that important charge [c]. The two princes, the dukes of Bedford and Gloceſter, who ſeemed injured by this plan of government, yet, being perſons of great integrity and honour, acquieſced willingly in any appointment, which tended to give ſecurity to the public; and as the wars in France appeared to be the object of greateſt moment, they avoided every diſpute, which might throw an obſtacle in the way of foreign conqueſts.

State of France.

WHEN the ſtate of affairs between the Engliſh and French kings was conſidered with a ſuperficial eye, every advantage ſeemed to be on the ſide of the former; and the total expulſion of Charles appeared to be an event, which might naturally be expected from the ſuperior power of his competitor. Though Henry was yet in his infancy, the adminiſtration was devolved on the duke of Bedford, the moſt accompliſhed prince of his age; whoſe experience, prudence, valour, and generoſity qualified him for his high office, and enabled him both to maintain union among his friends, and to gain the confidence of his

[a] Rymer, vol. x. p. 261. Cotton, p. 564.
[b] Cotton, p. 564.
[c] Hall, fol. 83. Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 27.

enemies.

enemies. The whole power of England was at his command: He was at the head of armies enured to victory: He was seconded by the most renowned generals of the age, the earls of Somerset, Warwic, Salisbury, Suffolk, and Arundel, Sir John Talbot, and Sir John Fastolfe: And besides Guienne, the ancient inheritance of England, he was master of the capital, and of almost all the northern provinces, which were well enabled to furnish him with supplies both of men and money, and to assist and support his English forces. CHAP. XX. 1422.

But Charles, notwithstanding the present inferiority of his power, possessed some advantages derived partly from his situation, partly from his personal character, which promised him success, and served, first to controul, then to overbalance, the superior force and opulence of his enemies. He was the true and undoubted heir of the monarchy: All Frenchmen, who knew the interests, or desired the independance of their country, turned their eyes towards him as its sole resource: The exclusion given him, by the imbecillity of his father, and the forced or precipitate consent of the states, had plainly no validity: That spirit of faction, which had blinded the people, could not long hold them in so gross a delusion: Their national and inveterate hatred against the English, the authors of all their calamities, must soon revive, and inspire them with indignation at bending their necks under the yoke of that hostile people: Great nobles and princes, accustomed to maintain an independance against their native sovereigns, would never endure a subjection to strangers: And though most of the princes of the blood were, since the fatal battle of Azincour, detained prisoners in England, the inhabitants of their demesnes, their friends, their vassals, all declared a zealous attachment to the king, and exerted themselves in resisting the violence of foreign invaders.

CHAP. XX.

1422. CHARLES himſelf, though only in his twentieth year, was of a character well calculated to become the object of theſe benevolent ſentiments; and perhaps from the favour, which naturally attends youth, was the more likely, on account of his tender age, to acquire the good-will of his native ſubjects. He was a prince of the moſt friendly and benign diſpoſition, of eaſy and familiar manners, and of a juſt and ſound, though not a very vigorous underſtanding. Sincere, generous, affable, he engaged from affection the ſervices of his followers, even while his low fortunes might make it their intereſt to deſert him; and the lenity of his temper could pardon in them thoſe ſallies of diſcontent, to which princes in his ſituation are ſo frequently expoſed. The love of pleaſure often ſeduced him into indolence; but amidſt all his irregularities the goodneſs of his heart ſtill ſhone forth; and by exerting at intervals his courage and activity, he proved, that his general remiſſneſs proceeded not from the want, either of a juſt ſpirit of ambition, or of perſonal valour.

THOUGH the virtues of this amiable prince lay ſome time in obſcurity, the duke of Bedford knew, that his title alone made him formidable, and that every foreign aſſiſtance would be requiſite, ere an Engliſh regent could hope to complete the conqueſt of France; an enterprize, which, however it might ſeem to be much advanced, was ſtill expoſed to many and great difficulties. The chief circumſtance, which had procured to the Engliſh all their preſent advantages, was the reſentment of the duke of Burgundy againſt Charles; and as that prince ſeemed intent rather on gratifying his paſſion than conſulting his intereſts, it was the more eaſy for the regent, by demonſtrations of reſpect and confidence, to retain him in the alliance of England. He bent therefore all his endeavours to that purpoſe: He gave the duke every proof of friendſhip and regard: He even offered him the regency of

of France, which Philip declined: And that he might corroborate national connexions by private ties, he concluded his own marriage with the princeſs of Burgundy, which had been ſtipulated by the treaty of Arras. CHAP. XX. 1422.

BEING ſenſible, that next to the alliance of Burgundy, the friendſhip of the duke of Britanny was of the greateſt importance towards forwarding the Engliſh conqueſts; and that, as the provinces of France, already ſubdued, lay between the dominions of theſe two princes, he could never hope for any ſecurity without preſerving his connexions with them; he was very intent on ſtrengthening himſelf alſo from that quarter. The duke of Britanny, having received many juſt reaſons of diſpleaſure from the miniſters of Charles, had already acceded to the treaty of Troye, and had, with other vaſſals of the crown, done homage to Henry V. in quality of heir to the kingdom: But as the regent knew, that the duke was much governed by his brother, the count of Richemont, he endeavoured to fix his friendſhip, by paying court and doing ſervices to this haughty and ambitious prince. 1423.

ARTHUR, count of Richemont, had been taken priſoner at the battle of Azincour, had been treated with great indulgence by the late king, and had even been permitted on his parole to take a journey into Britanny, where the ſtate of affairs required his preſence. The death of that victorious monarch happened before Richemont's return; and this prince pretended, that, as his word was given perſonally to Henry V. he was not bound to fulfil it towards his ſon and ſucceſſor: A chicane which the regent, as he could not force him to compliance, deemed it prudent to overlook. An interview was ſettled at Amiens between the dukes of Bedford, Burgundy, and Britanny, at which the count of Richemont was alſo preſent [d]: The alliance was renewed between theſe princes: 17th April.

[d] Hall, fol. 84. Monſtrelet, vol. i. p. 4. Stowe, p. 364.

And

CHAP. XX. 1423.

And the regent perſuaded Philip to give in marriage to Richemont his eldeſt ſiſter, widow of the deceaſed Dauphin, Lewis, the elder brother of Charles. Thus Arthur was connected both with the regent and the duke of Burgundy, and ſeemed engaged by intereſt to proſecute the ſame object, in forwarding the ſucceſs of the Engliſh arms.

WHILE the vigilance of the duke of Bedford was employed in gaining or confirming theſe allies, whoſe vicinity rendered them ſo important, he did not overlook the ſtate of more remote countries. The duke of Albany, regent of Scotland, had died; and his power had devolved on Murdac, his ſon, a prince of a weak underſtanding and indolent diſpoſition; who, far from poſſeſſing the talents requiſite for the government of that fierce people, was not even able to maintain authority in his own family, or reſtrain the petulance and inſolence of his ſons. The ardour of the Scots to ſerve in France, where Charles treated them with great honour and diſtinction, and where the regent's brother enjoyed the dignity of conſtable, broke out afreſh under this feeble adminiſtration: New ſuccours daily came over, and filled the armies of the French king: The earl of Douglas conducted a reinforcement of 5000 men to his aſſiſtance: And it was juſtly to be dreaded, that the Scots, by commencing open hoſtilities in the north, would occaſion a diverſion ſtill more conſiderable of the Engliſh power, and would eaſe Charles, in part, of that load, by which he was at preſent ſo grievouſly oppreſſed. The duke of Bedford, therefore, perſuaded the Engliſh council to form an alliance with James their priſoner; to free that prince from his long captivity; and to connect him with England, by marrying him to a daughter of the earl of Somerſet and couſin of the young king[e]. As the Scottiſh regent,

[e] Hall, fol. 86. Stowe, p. 364. Grafton, p. 501.

tired

tired of his preſent dignity, which he was not able to ſupport, was now become entirely ſincere in his applications for James's liberty, the treaty was ſoon concluded; a ranſom of forty thouſand pounds was ſtipulated [f]; and the king of Scots was reſtored to the throne of his anceſtors, and proved, in his ſhort reign, one of the moſt illuſtrious princes, that had ever governed that kingdom. He was murdered in 1437 by his traiterous kinſman the earl of Athole. His affections inclined to the party of France; but the Engliſh had never reaſon, during his life-time, to complain of any breach of the neutrality by Scotland. CHAP. XX. 1423.

Military operations.

BUT the regent was not ſo employed in theſe political negociations as to neglect the operations of war, from which alone he could hope to ſucceed in expelling the French monarch. Though the chief ſeat of Charles's power lay in the ſouthern provinces, beyond the Loire; his partizans were poſſeſſed of ſome fortreſſes in the northern, and even in the neighbourhood of Paris; and it behoved the duke of Bedford firſt to clear theſe countries of the enemy, before he could think of attempting more diſtant conqueſts. The caſtle of Dorſoy was taken after a ſiege of ſix weeks: That of Noyelle and the town of Rüe in Picardy underwent the ſame fate: Pont ſur Seine, Vertus, Montaigu were ſubjected by the Engliſh arms: And a more conſiderable advantage was ſoon after gained by the united forces of England and Burgundy. John Stuart, conſtable of Scotland, and the lord of Eſtiſſac had formed the ſiege of Crevant in Burgundy: The earls of Saliſbury and Suffolk, with the count of Toulongeon, were ſent to its relief: A fierce and well diſputed action enſued: The Scots and French were defeated: The conſtable of Scotland and the count of Ventadour were taken priſoners: And above a thouſand men, among whom was Sir Wil-

[f] Rymer, vol. x. p. 299, 300, 326.

CHAP. XX.

liam Hamilton, were left on the field of battle[g]. The taking of Gaillon upon the Seine, and of la Charité upon the Loire was the fruit of this victory: And as this latter place opened an entrance into the ſouthern provinces, the acquiſition of it appeared on that account of the greater importance to the duke of Bedford, and ſeemed to promiſe a ſucceſsful iſſue to the war.

1423.

1424. THE more Charles was threatened with an invaſion in thoſe provinces which adhered to him, the more neceſſary it became, that he ſhould retain poſſeſſion of every fortreſs, which he ſtill held within the quarters of the enemy. The duke of Bedford had beſieged in perſon, during the ſpace of three months, the town of Yvri in Normandy; and the brave governor, unable to make any longer defence, was obliged to capitulate; and he agreed to ſurrender the town, if, before a certain term, no relief arrived. Charles, informed of theſe conditions, determined to make an attempt for ſaving the place. He collected, with ſome difficulty, an army of 14,000 men, of whom the half were Scots; and he ſent them thither under the command of the earl of Buchan, conſtable of France; who was attended by the earl of Douglas, his countryman, the duke of Alençon, the mareſchal de la Fayette, the count of Aumale, and the viſcount of Narbonne. When the conſtable arrived within a few leagues of Yvri, he found that he was come too late, and that the place was already ſurrendered. He immediately turned to the left, and ſat down before Verneüil, which the inhabitants, in ſpite of the garriſon, delivered up to him[h]. Buchan might now have returned in ſafety, and with the glory of making an acquiſition no leſs important than the place which he was ſent to relieve: But hearing of Bedford's approach, he called a council of war,

[g] Hall, fol. 85. Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 8. Holingſhed, p. 586. Grafton, p. 500.

[h] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 14. Grafton, p. 504.

in

in order to deliberate concerning the conduct which he should hold in this emergence. The wiser part of the council declared for a retreat; and represented, that all the past misfortunes of the French had proceeded from their rashness in giving battle when no necessity obliged them; that this army was the last resource of the king, and the only defence of the few provinces which remained to him; and that every reason invited him to embrace cautious measures, which might leave time for his subjects to return to a sense of their duty, and give leisure for discord to arise among his enemies, who, being united by no common band of interest or motive of alliance, could not long persevere in their animosity against him. All these prudential considerations were overborne by a vain point of honour, not to turn their backs to the enemy; and they resolved to await the arrival of the duke of Bedford. CHAP. XX. 1424.

THE numbers were nearly equal in this action; and as the long continuance of war had introduced discipline, which, however imperfect, sufficed to maintain some appearance of order in such small armies, the battle was fierce, and well disputed, and attended with bloodshed on both sides. The constable drew up his forces under the walls of Verneüil, and resolved to abide the attack of the enemy: But the impatience of the viscount of Narbonne, who broke his ranks, and obliged the whole line to follow him in some hurry and confusion, was the cause of the misfortune which ensued. The English archers, fixing their palisadoes before them, according to their usual custom, sent a volley of arrows amidst the thickest of the French army; and though beat from their ground, and obliged to take shelter among the baggage, they soon rallied, and continued to do great execution among the enemy. The duke of Bedford, meanwhile, at the head of the men at arms, made impression on the French, broke 17th Aug. Battle of Verneüil.

CHAP. XX.

1424. their ranks, chaced them off the field, and rendered the victory entirely complete and decisive [i]. The constable himself perished in battle, as well as the earl of Douglas and his son, the counts of Aumale, Tonnerre, and Ventadour, with many other considerable nobility. The duke of Alençon, the mareschal de la Fayette, the lords of Gaucour and Mortemar were taken prisoners. There fell about four thousand of the French; and sixteen hundred of the English; a loss esteemed, at that time, so unusual on the side of the victors, that the duke of Bedford prohibited all rejoicings for his success. Verneüil was surrendered next day by capitulation [k].

THE condition of the king of France appeared now very terrible, and almost desperate. He had lost the flower of his army and the bravest of his nobles in this fatal action: He had no resource either for recruiting or subsisting his troops: He wanted money even for his personal subsistence; and though all parade of a court was banished, it was with difficulty he could keep a table, supplied with the plainest necessaries, for himself and his few followers: Every day brought him intelligence of some loss or misfortune: Towns, which were bravely defended, were obliged at last to surrender for want of relief or supply: He saw his partizans entirely chaced from all the provinces which lay north of the Loire: And he expected soon to lose, by the united efforts of his enemies, all the territories of which he had hitherto continued master; when an incident happened, which saved him on the brink of ruin, and lost the English such an opportunity for completing their conquests, as they never afterwards were able to recall.

JAQUELINE, countess of Hainault and Holland, and heir of these provinces, had espoused John duke of Bra-

[i] Hall, fol. 88, 89, 90. Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 15. Stowe, p. 365. Hollingshed, p. 588.

[k] Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 15.

bant, couſin german to the duke of Burgundy; but having made this choice from the uſual motives of princes, ſhe ſoon found reaſon to repent of the unequal alliance. She was a princeſs of a maſculine ſpirit and uncommon underſtanding; the duke of Brabant was of a ſickly complexion and weak mind: She was in the vigour of her age; he had only reached his fifteenth year: Theſe cauſes had inſpired her with ſuch contempt for her huſband, which ſoon proceeded to antipathy, that ſhe determined to diſſolve a marriage, where, it is probable, nothing but the ceremony had as yet intervened. The court of Rome was commonly very open to applications of this nature, when ſeconded by power and money; but as the princeſs foreſaw great oppoſition from her huſband's relations, and was impatient to effect her purpoſe, ſhe made her eſcape into England, and threw herſelf under the protection of the duke of Gloceſter. That prince, with many noble qualities, had the defect of being governed by an impetuous temper and vehement paſſions; and he was raſhly induced, as well by the charms of the counteſs herſelf, as by the proſpect of poſſeſſing her rich inheritance, to offer himſelf to her as a huſband. Without waiting for a papal diſpenſation; without endeavouring to reconcile the duke of Burgundy to this meaſure; he entered into a contract of marriage with Jaqueline, and immediately attempted to put himſelf in poſſeſſion of her dominions. Philip was diſguſted with ſo precipitate a conduct: He reſented the injury done to the duke of Brabant, his near relation: He dreaded to have the Engliſh eſtabliſhed on all ſides of him: And he foreſaw the conſequences, which muſt attend the extenſive and uncontrouled dominion of that nation, if, before the full ſettlement of their power, they inſulted and injured an ally, to whom they had already been ſo much indebted, and who was ſtill ſo neceſſary for ſupporting them in their farther progreſs. He en-

CHAP. XX. 1424.

CHAP. XX.

1424.

couraged, therefore, the duke of Brabant to make reſiſtance: He engaged many of Jaqueline's ſubjects to adhere to that prince: He himſelf marched troops to his ſupport: And as the duke of Gloceſter ſtill perſevered in his purpoſe, a ſharp war was ſuddenly kindled in the Low Countries. The quarrel ſoon became perſonal as well as political. The Engliſh prince wrote to the duke of Burgundy, complaining of the oppoſition made to his pretenſions; and though in the main he employed amicable terms in his letter, he took notice of ſome falſhoods, into which, he ſaid, Philip had been betrayed during the courſe of theſe tranſactions. This unguarded expreſſion was highly reſented: The duke of Burgundy inſiſted, that he ſhould retract it: And mutual challenges and defiances paſſed between them on this occaſion [l].

THE duke of Bedford could eaſily foreſee the bad effects of ſo ill-timed and imprudent a quarrel. All the ſuccours, which he expected from England, and which were ſo neceſſary in this critical emergence, were intercepted by his brother, and employed in Holland and Hainault: The forces of the duke of Burgundy, which he alſo depended on, were diverted by the ſame wars: And beſides this double loſs, he was in imminent danger of alienating for ever that confederate, whoſe friendſhip was of the utmoſt importance to his intereſts, and whom the late king had injoined him, with his dying breath, to gratify by every mark of regard and attachment. He repreſented all theſe topics to the duke of Gloceſter: He endeavoured to mitigate the reſentment of the duke of Burgundy: He interpoſed with his good offices between theſe princes: But was not ſucceſsful in any of his endeavours; and he found, that the impetuoſity of his brother's temper was ſtill the chief obſtacle to all accommodation [m]. For this reaſon, inſtead of puſhing the victory gained at

[l] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 19, 20, 21.

[m] Monſtrelet, p. 18.

Verneüil,

Verneüil, he found himſelf obliged to take a journey into England, and to try, by his counſels and authority, to moderate the meaſures of the duke of Gloceſter. CHAP. XX. 1424.

THERE had likewiſe broken out ſome differences among the Engliſh miniſtry, which had proceeded to great extremities, and which required the regent's preſence to compoſe them [n]. The biſhop of Wincheſter, to whom the care of the king's perſon and education had been entruſted, was a prelate of great capacity and experience, but of an intriguing and dangerous character; and as he aſpired to the government of affairs, he had continual diſputes with his nephew, the protector; and he gained frequent advantages over the vehement and impolitic temper of that prince. The duke of Bedford employed the 1425. authority of parliament to reconcile them; and theſe rivals were obliged to promiſe before that aſſembly, that they would bury all quarrels in oblivion [o]. Time alſo ſeemed to open expedients for compoſing the difference with the duke of Burgundy. The credit of that prince had procured a bull from the pope; by which not only Jaqueline's contract with the duke of Gloceſter was annulled; but it was alſo declared, that, even in caſe of the duke of Brabant's death, it ſhould never be lawful for her to eſpouſe the Engliſh prince. Humphrey, deſpairing of ſucceſs, married another lady of inferior rank, who had lived ſome time with him as his miſtreſs [p]. The duke of Brabant died; and his widow, before ſhe could recover poſſeſſion of her dominions, was obliged to declare the duke of Burgundy her heir, in caſe ſhe ſhould die without iſſue, and to promiſe never to marry without his conſent. But though the affair was thus terminated to the ſatisfaction of Philip, it left a diſagreeable impreſſion on

[n] Stowe, p. 368. Hollingſhed, p. 590. [o] Hall, fol. 98, 99. Hollingſhed, p. 593, 594. Polydore Virgil, p. 466. Grafton, p. 512, 518. [p] Stowe, p. 367.

CHAP. XX.

his mind: It excited an extreme jealousy of the English, and opened his eyes to his true interests: And as nothing

1425. but his animosity against Charles had engaged him in alliance with them, it counterbalanced that passion by another of the same kind, which in the end became prevalent, and brought him back, by degrees, to his natural connexions with his family and his native country.

About the same time, the duke of Britanny began to withdraw himself from the English alliance. His brother, the count of Richemont, though connected by marriage with the dukes of Burgundy and Bedford, was extremely attached by inclination to the French interest; and he willingly hearkened to all the advances which Charles made him for obtaining his friendship. The high office of constable, vacant by the earl of Buchan's death, was offered him; and as his martial and ambitious temper aspired to the command of armies, which he had in vain attempted to obtain from the duke of Bedford, he not only accepted that trust, but brought over his brother to an alliance with the French monarch. The new constable, having made this one change in his measures, firmly adhered ever after to his engagements with France. Though his pride and violence, which would admit of no rival in his master's confidence, and even prompted him to assassinate the other favourites, had so much disgusted Charles, that he once banished him the court, and refused to admit him to his presence, he still acted with vigour for the service of that monarch, and obtained at last, by his perseverance, the pardon of all his past offences.

1426. In this situation, the duke of Bedford, on his return, found the affairs of France, after passing eight months in England. The duke of Burgundy was much disgusted. The duke of Britanny had entered into engagements with Charles,

Charles, and had done homage to that prince for his dutchy. The French had been allowed to recover from the aſtoniſhment, into which their frequent diſaſters had thrown them. An incident too had happened, which ſerved extremely to raiſe their courage. The earl of Warwic had beſieged Montargis with a ſmall army of 3000 men, and the place was reduced to extremity, when the baſtard of Orleans undertook to throw relief into it. This general, who was natural ſon to the prince aſſaſſinated by the duke of Burgundy, and who was afterwards created count of Dunois, conducted a body of 1600 men to Montargis; and made an attack on the enemy's trenches with ſo much valour, prudence, and good fortune, that he not only penetrated into the place, but gave a ſevere blow to the Engliſh, and obliged Warwic to raiſe the ſiege [q]. This was the firſt ſignal action, which raiſed the fame of Dunois, and opened him the road to thoſe great honours, which he afterwards attained.

CHAP. XX. 1426.

BUT the regent, ſoon after his arrival, revived the reputation of the Engliſh arms, by an important enterprize which he happily atchieved. He ſecretly brought together, in ſeparate detachments, a conſiderable army to the frontiers of Britanny; and fell ſo unexpectedly upon that province, that the duke, unable to make reſiſtance, yielded to all the terms required of him: He renounced the French alliance; he engaged to maintain the treaty of Troye; he acknowledged the duke of Bedford for regent of France; and promiſed to do homage for his dutchy to king Henry [r]. And the Engliſh prince, having thus freed himſelf from a dangerous enemy who lay behind him, reſolved on an undertaking, which, if ſucceſsful, would, he hoped, caſt the balance between the two nations, and prepare the way for the final conqueſt of France.

[q] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 32, 33. Hollingſhed, p. 597.
[r] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 35, 36.

THE

CHAP. XX.

1428. Siege of Orleans.

THE city of Orleans was ſo ſituated between the provinces commanded by Henry, and thoſe poſſeſſed by Charles, that it opened an eaſy entrance to either; and as the duke of Bedford intended to make a great effort for penetrating into the ſouth of France, it behoved him to begin with this place, which, in the preſent circumſtances, was become the moſt important in the kingdom. He committed the conduct of the enterprize to the earl of Saliſbury, who had newly brought him a reinforcement of 6000 men from England, and who had much diſtinguiſhed himſelf, by his abilities, during the courſe of the preſent war. Saliſbury, paſſing the Loire, made himſelf maſter of ſeveral ſmall places, which ſurrounded Orleans on that ſide[s]; and as his intentions were thereby known, the French king uſed every expedient to ſupply the city with a garriſon and proviſions, and enable it to maintain a long and obſtinate ſiege. The lord of Gaucour, a brave and experienced captain, was appointed governor: Many officers of diſtinction threw themſelves into the place: The troops, which they conducted, were enured to war, and were determined to make the moſt obſtinate reſiſtance: And even the inhabitants, diſciplined by the long continuance of hoſtilities, were well qualified, in their own defence, to ſecond the efforts of the moſt veteran forces. The eyes of all Europe were turned towards this ſcene; where, it was reaſonably ſuppoſed, the French were to make their laſt ſtand for maintaining the independance of their monarchy, and the rights of their ſovereign.

THE earl of Saliſbury at laſt approached the place with an army, which conſiſted only of 10,000 men; and not being able, with ſo ſmall a force, to inveſt ſo great a city, that commanded a bridge over the Loire, he ſtationed himſelf on the ſouthern ſide towards Sologne, leav-

[s] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 38, 39. Polyd. Virg. p. 468.

ing

ing the other, towards the Beauſſe, ſtill open to the enemy. He there attacked the fortifications, which guarded the entry to the bridge; and after an obſtinate reſiſtance, he carried ſeveral of them: But was himſelf killed by a cannon ball as he was taking a view of the enemy [t]. The earl of Suffolk ſucceeded to the command; and being reinforced with great numbers of Engliſh and Burgundians, he paſſed the river with the main body of his army, and inveſted Orleans on the other ſide. As it was now the depth of winter, Suffolk, who found it difficult, in that ſeaſon, to throw up intrenchments all around, contented himſelf, for the preſent, with erecting redoubts at different diſtances, where his men were lodged in ſafety, and were ready to intercept the ſupplies, which the enemy might attempt to throw into the place. Though he had ſeveral pieces of artillery in his camp, (and this is among the firſt ſieges in Europe, where cannon were found to be of importance,) the art of engineering was hitherto ſo imperfect, that Suffolk truſted more to famine than to force for ſubduing the city; and he propoſed in the ſpring to render the circumvallation more complete, by drawing intrenchments from one redoubt to another. Numberleſs feats of valour were performed both by the beſiegers and beſieged during this winter: Bold ſallies were made, and repulſed with equal boldneſs: Convoys were ſometimes introduced and often intercepted: The ſupplies were ſtill unequal to the conſumption of the place: And the Engliſh ſeemed daily, though ſlowly, to be advancing towards the completion of their enterprize. CHAP. XX. 1428.

But while they lay in this ſituation, the French parties ravaged all the country around; and the beſiegers, who were obliged to draw their proviſions from a diſtance, were themſelves expoſed to the danger of want and famine. 1429.

[t] Hall, fol. 105. Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 39. Stowe, p. 369. Hollingſhed, p. 599. Graſton, p. 531.

Sir

CHAP. XX. 1429.

Sir John Faſtolffe was bringing up a large convoy, of every kind of ſtores, which he eſcorted with a detachment of 2500 men; when he was attacked by a body of 4000 French, under the command of the counts of Clermont and Dunois. Faſtolffe drew up his troops behind the waggons; but the French generals, afraid of attacking him in that poſture, planted a battery of cannon againſt him, which threw every thing into confuſion, and would have inſured them the victory; had not the impatience of ſome Scotch troops, who broke the line of battle, brought on an engagement, in which Faſtolffe was victorious. The count of Dunois was wounded; and about 500 French were left on the field of battle. This action, which was of great importance in the preſent conjuncture, was commonly called the battle of *Herrings*; becauſe the convoy brought a great quantity of that kind of proviſions, for the uſe of the Engliſh army during the Lent ſeaſon [u].

CHARLES ſeemed now to have but one expedient for ſaving this city, which had been ſo long inveſted. The duke of Orleans, who was ſtill priſoner in England, prevailed on the protector and the council to conſent, that all his demeſnes ſhould be allowed to preſerve a neutrality during the war, and ſhould be ſequeſtered, for greater ſecurity, into the hands of the duke of Burgundy. This prince, who was much leſs cordial in the Engliſh intereſts than formerly, went to Paris, and made the propoſal to the duke of Bedford; but the regent coldly replied, That he was not of a humour to beat the buſhes, while others ran away with the game: An anſwer, which ſo diſguſted the duke, that he recalled all the troops of Burgundy, that acted in the ſiege [w]. The place however was

[u] Hall, fol. 106. Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 41, 42. Stowe, p. 369. Hollingſhed, p. 600. Polyd. Virg. p. 469. Grafton, p. 532.

[w] Hall, fol. 106. Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 42. Stowe, p. 369. Grafton, p. 533.

every

every day more and more closely invested by the English: Great scarcity began already to be felt by the garrison and inhabitants: Charles, in despair of collecting an army, which should dare to approach the enemy's entrenchments, not only gave the city for lost, but began to entertain a very dismal prospect with regard to the general state of his affairs. He saw that the country, in which he had hitherto, with great difficulty, subsisted, would be laid entirely open to the invasion of a powerful and victorious enemy; and he already entertained thoughts of retiring with the remains of his forces into Languedoc and Dauphiny, and defending himself as long as possible in those remote provinces. But it was fortunate for this good prince, that, as he lay under the dominion of the fair, the women, whom he consulted, had the spirit to support his sinking resolution in this desperate extremity. Mary of Anjou, his Queen, a princess of great merit and prudence, vehemently opposed this measure, which, she foresaw, would discourage all his partizans, and serve as a general signal for deserting a prince, who seemed himself to despair of success. His mistress too, the fair Agnes Sorel, who lived in entire amity with the queen, seconded all her remonstrances, and threatened, that, if he thus pusillanimously threw away the sceptre of France, she would seek in the court of England a fortune more correspondent to her wishes. Love was able to rouze in the breast of Charles that courage, which ambition had failed to excite: He resolved to dispute every inch of ground with an imperious enemy; and rather to perish with honour in the midst of his friends than yield ingloriously to his bad fortune: When relief was unexpectedly brought him by another female of a very different character, who gave rise to one of the most singular revolutions, that is to be met with in history.

CHAP. XX. 1429.

The maid of Orleans.

In the village of Domremi near Vaucouleurs, on the borders of Lorraine, there lived a country girl of twenty-seven

CHAP. XX. 1429.

ſeven years of age, called Joan d'Arc, who was ſervant in a ſmall inn, and who in that ſtation had been accuſtomed to tend the horſes of the gueſts, to ride them without a ſaddle to the watering-place, and to perform other offices, which, in well-frequented inns, commonly fall to the ſhare of the men ſervants [x]. This girl was of an irreproachable life, and had not hitherto been remarked for any ſingularity; whether that ſhe had met with no occaſion to excite her genius, or that the unſkilful eyes of thoſe who converſed with her, had not been able to diſcern her uncommon merit. It is eaſy to imagine, that the preſent ſituation of France was an intereſting object even to perſons of the loweſt rank, and would become the frequent ſubject of converſation: A young prince, expelled his throne by the ſedition of native ſubjects, and by the arms of ſtrangers, could not fail to move the compaſſion of all his people, whoſe hearts were uncorrupted by faction; and the peculiar character of Charles, ſo ſtrongly inclined to friendſhip and the tender paſſions, naturally rendered him the hero of that ſex, whoſe generous minds know no bounds in their affections. The ſiege of Orleans, the progreſs of the Engliſh before that place, the great diſtreſs of the garriſon and inhabitants, the importance of ſaving this city and its brave defenders, had turned thither the public eye; and Joan, inflamed by the general ſentiment, was ſeized with a wild deſire of bringing relief to her ſovereign in his preſent diſtreſſes. Her unexperienced mind, working day and night on this favourite object, miſtook the impulſes of paſſion for heavenly inſpirations; and ſhe fancied, that ſhe ſaw viſions, and heard voices, exhorting her to re-eſtabliſh the throne of France, and to expel the foreign invaders. An uncommon intrepidity of temper made her overlook all

[x] Hall, fol. 107. Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 42. Grafton, p. 534.

the

the dangers, which might attend her in ſuch a path; and thinking herſelf deſtined by Heaven to this office, ſhe threw aſide all that baſhfulneſs and timidity, ſo natural to her ſex, her years, and her low ſtation. She went to Vaucouleurs; procured admiſſion to Baudricourt, the governor; informed him of her inſpirations and intentions; and conjured him not to neglect the voice of God, who ſpoke through her, but to ſecond thoſe heavenly revelations, which impelled her to this glorious enterprize. Baudricourt treated her at firſt with ſome neglect; but on her frequent returns to him, and importunate ſolicitations, he began to remark ſomething extraordinary in the maid, and was inclined, at all hazards, to make ſo eaſy an experiment. It is uncertain, whether this gentleman had diſcernment enough to perceive, that great uſe might be made with the vulgar of ſo uncommon an engine; or, what is more likely in that credulous age, was himſelf a convert to this viſionary: But he adopted at laſt the ſcheme of Joan; and he gave her ſome attendants, who conducted her to the French court, which at that time reſided at Chinon. CHAP. XX. 1429.

It is the buſineſs of hiſtory to diſtinguiſh between the *miraculous* and the *marvellous*; to reject the firſt in all narrations merely profane and human; to doubt the ſecond; and when obliged by unqueſtionable teſtimony, as in the preſent caſe, to admit of ſomething extraordinary, to receive as little of it as is conſiſtent with the known facts and circumſtances. It is pretended, that Joan, immediately on her admiſſion, knew the king, though ſhe had never ſeen his face before, and though he purpoſely kept himſelf in the crowd of courtiers, and had laid aſide every thing in his dreſs and apparel which might diſtinguiſh him: That ſhe offered him, in the name of the ſupreme Creator, to raiſe the ſiege of Orleans, and conduct him to Rheims to be there crowned and anointed; and on his

expreſſing

CHAP. XX. 1429.

expreſſing doubts of her miſſion, revealed to him, before ſome ſworn confidents, a ſecret, which was unknown to all the world beſide himſelf, and which nothing but a heavenly inſpiration could have diſcovered to her: And that ſhe demanded, as the inſtrument of her future victories, a particular ſword, which was kept in the church of St. Catharine of Fierbois, and which, though ſhe had never ſeen it, ſhe deſcribed by all its marks, and by the place in which it had long lain neglected [y]. This is certain, that all theſe miraculous ſtories were ſpread abroad, in order to captivate the vulgar. The more the king and his miniſters were determined to give into the illuſion, the more ſcruples they pretended. An aſſembly of grave doctors and theologians cautiouſly examined Joan's miſſion, and pronounced it undoubted and ſupernatural. She was ſent to the parliament, then reſiding at Poictiers; and was interrogated before that aſſembly: The preſidents, the counſellors, who came perſuaded of her impoſture, went away convinced of her inſpiration. A ray of hope began to break through that deſpair, in which the minds of all men were before enveloped. Heaven had now declared itſelf in favour of France, and had laid bare its outſtretched arm to take vengeance on her invaders. Few could diſtinguiſh between the impulſe of inclination and the force of conviction; and none would ſubmit to the trouble of ſo diſagreeable a ſcrutiny.

AFTER theſe artificial precautions and preparations had been for ſome time employed, Joan's requeſts were at laſt complied with: She was armed cap-a-pee, mounted on horſeback, and ſhown in that martial habiliment before the whole people. Her dexterity in managing her ſteed, though acquired in her former occupation, was regarded as a freſh proof of her miſſion; and ſhe was received with the loudeſt acclamations by the ſpectators.

[y] Hall, fol. 107. Hollingſhed, p. 600.

Her

Her former occupation was even denied: She was no longer the ſervant of an inn. She was converted into a ſhepherdeſs, an employment much more agreeable to the imagination. To render her ſtill more intereſting, near ten years were ſubſtracted from her age; and all the ſentiments of love and of chivalry, were thus united to thoſe of enthuſiaſm, in order to inflame the fond fancy of the people with prepoſſeſſions in her favour. CHAP. XX. 1429.

WHEN the engine was thus dreſſed up in full ſplendor, it was determined to eſſay its force againſt the enemy. Joan was ſent to Blois, where a large convoy was prepared for the ſupply of Orleans, and an army of ten thouſand men, under the command of St. Severe, aſſembled to eſcort it. She ordered all the ſoldiers to confeſs themſelves before they ſet out on the enterprize: She baniſhed from the camp all women of bad fame: She diſplayed in her hands a conſecrated banner; where the Supreme Being was repreſented, graſping the globe of earth, and ſurrounded with flower de luces. And ſhe inſiſted, in right of her prophetic miſſion, that the convoy ſhould enter Orleans, by the direct road from the ſide of Beauſſe: But the count of Dunois, unwilling to ſubmit the rules of the military art to her inſpirations, ordered it to approach by the other ſide of the river, where, he knew, the weakeſt part of the Engliſh army was ſtationed.

PREVIOUS to this attempt, the maid had writ to the regent and to the Engliſh generals before Orleans, commanding them, in the name of the omnipotent Creator, by whom ſhe was commiſſioned, immediately to raiſe the ſiege and to evacuate France; and menacing them with divine vengeance in caſe of their diſobedience. All the Engliſh affected to ſpeak with deriſion of the maid and of her heavenly commiſſion; and ſaid, that the French king was now indeed reduced to a ſorry paſs, when he had re-

CHAP. XX. 1429.

course to such ridiculous expedients: But they felt their imagination secretly struck with the vehement persuasion, which prevailed in all around them; and they waited with an anxious expectation, not unmixed with horror, for the issue of these extraordinary preparations.

As the convoy approached the river, a sally was made by the garrison on the side of Beausse, to prevent the English general from sending any detachment to the other
29th April. side: The provisions were peaceably embarked in boats, which the inhabitants of Orleans had sent to receive them: The maid covered with her troops the embarkation: Suffolk did not venture to attack her: And the French general carried back the army in safety to Blois; an alteration of affairs, which was already visible to all the world, and which had a proportional effect on the minds of both parties.

THE maid entered the city of Orleans, arrayed in her military garb, and displaying her consecrated standard; and was received, as a celestial deliverer, by all the inhabitants. They now believed themselves invincible under her influence; and Dunois himself, perceiving such a mighty alteration both in friends and foes, consented, that the next convoy, which was expected in a few days,
4th May. should enter by the side of Beausse. The convoy approached: No sign of resistance appeared in the besiegers: The waggons and troops passed without interruption between the redoubts of the English: A dead silence and astonishment reigned among those troops, formerly so elated with victory, and so fierce for the combat.

THE earl of Suffolk was in a situation very unusual and extraordinary; and which might well confound the man of the greatest capacity and firmest temper. He saw his troops overawed, and strongly impressed with the idea of a divine influence, accompanying the maid. In-

stead

ſtead of baniſhing theſe vain terrors by hurry and action and war, he waited till the ſoldiers ſhould recover from the panic; and he thereby gave leiſure for theſe prepoſſeſſions to ſink ſtill deeper into their minds. The military maxims, which are prudent in common caſes, deceived him in theſe unaccountable events. The Engliſh felt their courage daunted and overwhelmed; and thence inferred a divine vengeance hanging over them. The French drew the ſame inference from an inactivity ſo new and unexpected. Every circumſtance was now reverſed in the opinions of men, on which all depends: The ſpirit, reſulting from a long courſe of uninterrupted ſucceſs, was on a ſudden transferred from the victors to the vanquiſhed.

CHAP. XX. 1429.

THE maid called aloud, that the garriſon ſhould remain no longer on the defenſive; and ſhe promiſed her followers the aſſiſtance of heaven in attacking thoſe redoubts of the enemy, which had ſo long kept them in awe, and which they had never hitherto ventured to inſult. The generals ſeconded her ardour: An attack was made on one redoubt, and it proved ſucceſsful[a]: All the Engliſh, who defended the entrenchments, were put to the ſword or taken priſoners: And Sir John Talbot himſelf, who had drawn together, from the other redoubts, ſome troops to bring them relief, durſt not appear in the open field againſt ſo formidable an enemy.

NOTHING after this ſucceſs ſeemed impoſſible to the maid and her enthuſiaſtic votaries. She urged the generals to attack the main body of the Engliſh in their entrenchments: But Dunois, ſtill unwilling to hazard the fate of France by too great temerity, and ſenſible that the leaſt reverſe of fortune would make all the preſent viſions evaporate, and reſtore every thing to its former condition, checked her vehemence, and propoſed to her

[a] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 45.

CHAP. XX. 1429.

first to expel the enemy from their forts on the other side of the river, and thus lay the communication with the country entirely open, before she attempted any more hazardous enterprize. Joan was persuaded, and these forts were vigorously assailed. In one attack the French were repulsed; the maid was left almost alone; she was obliged to retreat, and join the runaways; but displaying her sacred standard, and animating them with her countenance, her gestures, her exhortations, she led them back to the charge, and overpowered the English in their entrenchments. In the attack of another fort, she was wounded in the neck with an arrow; she retreated a moment behind the assailants; she pulled out the arrow with her own hands; she had the wound quickly dressed; and she hastened back to head the troops, and to plant her victorious banner on the ramparts of the enemy.

By all these successes, the English were entirely chaced from their fortifications on that side: They had lost above six thousand men in these different actions; and what was still more important, their wonted courage and confidence was wholly gone, and had given place to amazement and despair. The maid returned triumphant over the bridge, and was again received as the guardian angel of the city. After performing such miracles, she convinced the most obdurate incredulity of her divine mission: Men felt themselves animated as by a superior energy, and thought nothing impossible to that divine hand, which so visibly conducted them. It was in vain even for the English generals to oppose with their soldiers the prevailing opinion of supernatural influence: They themselves were probably moved by the same belief: The utmost they dared to advance, was, that Joan was not an instrument of God; she was only the implement of the Devil: But as the English had felt, to their sad experience, that the Devil might be allowed some-

times

CHAP. XX.

times to prevail, they derived not much consolation from the enforcing of this opinion.

1429. The siege of Orleans raised. 8th May.

It might prove extremely dangerous for Suffolk, with such intimidated troops, to remain any longer in the presence of so courageous and victorious an enemy; he therefore raised the siege, and retreated with all the precaution imaginable. The French resolved to push their conquests, and to allow the English no leisure to recover from their consternation. Charles formed a body of six thousand men, and sent them to attack Jergeau, whither Suffolk had retired with a detachment of his army. The siege lasted ten days; and the place was obstinately defended. Joan displayed her wonted intrepidity on this occasion. She descended into the fosse, in leading the attack; and she there received a blow on the head with a stone, by which she was confounded and beat to the ground: But she soon recovered herself; and in the end rendered the assault successful: Suffolk was obliged to yield himself prisoner to a Frenchman called Renaud; but before he submitted, he asked his adversary, whether he were a gentleman. On receiving a satisfactory answer, he demanded, whether he were a knight. Renaud replied, that he had not yet attained that honour. *Then I make you one*, replied Suffolk: Upon which, he gave him the blow with his sword, which dubbed him into that fraternity; and he immediately surrendered himself his prisoner.

The remainder of the English army was commanded by Fastolffe, Scales, and Talbot, who thought of nothing but of making their retreat, as soon as possible, into a place of safety; while the French esteemed the overtaking them equivalent to a victory. So much had the events, which passed before Orleans, altered every thing between the two nations! The vanguard of the French under Richemont and Xaintrailles attacked the rear of

CHAP. XX.

1429. 18th June.

the enemy at the village of Patay. The battle laſted not a moment: The Engliſh were diſcomfited and fled: The brave Faſtolffe himſelf ſhowed the example of flight to his troops; and the order of the garter was taken from him, as a puniſhment for this inſtance of cowardice [b]. Two thouſand men were killed in this action; and both Talbot and Scales taken priſoners.

In the account of all theſe ſucceſſes, the French writers, to magnify the wonder, repreſent the maid (who was now known by the appellation of *the Maid of Orleans*) as not only active in combat, but as performing the office of general; directing the troops, conducting the military operations, and ſwaying the deliberations in all councils of war. It is certain, that the policy of the French court endeavoured to maintain this appearance with the public: But it is much more probable, that Dunois and the wiſer commanders prompted her in all her meaſures, than that a country girl, without experience or education, could, on a ſudden, become expert in a profeſſion, which requires more genius and capacity, than any other active ſcene of life. It is ſufficient praiſe, that ſhe could diſtinguiſh the perſons on whoſe judgment ſhe might rely; that ſhe could ſeize their hints and ſuggeſtions, and, on a ſudden, deliver their opinions as her own; and that ſhe could curb, on occaſion, that viſionary and enthuſiaſtic ſpirit, with which ſhe was actuated, and could temper it with prudence and diſcretion.

The raiſing of the ſiege of Orleans was one part of the maid's promiſe to Charles: The crowning him at Rheims was the other: And ſhe now vehemently inſiſted, that he ſhould forthwith ſet out on that enterprize. A few weeks before, ſuch a propoſal would have appeared the moſt extravagant in the world. Rheims lay in a

[b] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 46.

diſtant

distant quarter of the kingdom; was then in the hands of a victorious enemy; the whole road, which led to it, was occupied by their garrisons; and no imagination could be so sanguine as to think, that such an attempt could so soon come within the bounds of possibility. But as it was extremely the interest of Charles to maintain the belief of something extraordinary and divine in these events, and to avail himself of the present consternation of the English; he resolved to follow the exhortations of his warlike prophetess, and to lead his army upon this promising adventure. Hitherto he had kept remote from the scene of war: As the safety of the state depended entirely upon his person, he had been persuaded to restrain his military ardour: But observing this prosperous turn of affairs, he now determined to appear at the head of his armies, and to set the example of valour to all his soldiers. And the French nobility saw at once their young sovereign assuming a new and more brilliant character, seconded by fortune, and conducted by the hand of heaven; and they caught fresh zeal to exert themselves in replacing him on the throne of his ancestors.

CHAP. XX. 1429.

The king of France crowned at Rheims.

CHARLES set out for Rheims at the head of twelve thousand men: He passed by Troye, which opened its gates to him: Chalons imitated the example: Rheims sent him a deputation with its keys, before his approach to it: And he scarcely perceived, as he passed along, that he was marching through an enemy's country. The ceremony of his coronation was here performed [c] with the holy oil, which a pigeon had brought to king Clovis from heaven, on the first establishment of the French monarchy: The maid of Orleans stood by his side, in complete armour, and displayed her sacred ban-

[c] 17th July.

[c] Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 48.

CHAP. XX. 1429.

ner, which had ſo often diſſipated and confounded his fierceſt enemies: And the people ſhouted with the moſt unfeigned joy, on viewing ſuch a complication of wonders. After the completion of the ceremony, the Maid threw herſelf at the king's feet, embraced his knees, and with a flood of tears, which pleaſure and tenderneſs extorted from her, ſhe congratulated him on this ſingular and marvellous event.

CHARLES, thus crowned and anointed, became more reſpectable in the eyes of all his ſubjects, and ſeemed, in a manner, to receive anew, from a heavenly commiſſion, his title to their allegiance. The inclinations of men ſwaying their belief, no one doubted of the inſpirations and prophetic ſpirit of the Maid: So many incidents, which paſſed all human comprehenſion, left little room to queſtion a ſuperior influence: And the real and undoubted facts gave credit to every exaggeration, which could ſcarcely be rendered more wonderful. Laon, Soiſſons, Chateau-Thierri, Provins, and many other towns and fortreſſes in that neighbourhood, immediately after Charles's coronation, ſubmitted to him on the firſt ſummons; and the whole nation was diſpoſed to give him the moſt zealous teſtimonies of their duty and affection.

Prudence of the duke of Bedford.

NOTHING can impreſs us with a higher idea of the wiſdom, addreſs, and reſolution of the duke of Bedford, than his being able to maintain himſelf in ſo perilous a ſituation, and to preſerve ſome footing in France, after the defection of ſo many places, and amidſt the univerſal inclination of the reſt to imitate that contagious example. This prince ſeemed preſent every where by his vigilance and foreſight: He employed each reſource, which fortune had yet left him: He put all the Engliſh garriſons in a poſture of defence: He kept a watchful eye over every attempt among the French towards an inſurrection: He retained

retained the Pariſians in obedience, by alternately employing careſſes and ſeverity: And knowing that the duke of Burgundy was already wavering in his fidelity, he acted with ſo much ſkill and prudence, as to renew, in this dangerous criſis, his alliance with that prince; an alliance of the utmoſt importance to the credit and ſupport of the Engliſh government. CHAP. XX. 1429.

THE ſmall ſupplies which he received from England ſet the talents of this great man in ſtill a ſtronger light. The ardour of the Engliſh for foreign conqueſts was now extremely abated by time and reflection: The parliament ſeems even to have become ſenſible of the danger, which might attend their farther progreſs: No ſupply of money could be obtained by the regent during his greateſt diſtreſſes: And men enliſted ſlowly under his ſtandard, or ſoon deſerted, by reaſon of the wonderful accounts, which had reached England, of the magic, and ſorcery, and diabolical power of the maid of Orleans [d]. It happened fortunately, in this emergency, that the biſhop of Wincheſter, now created a cardinal, landed at Calais with a body of 5000 men, which he was conducting into Bohemia, on a cruſade againſt the Huſſites. He was perſuaded to lend theſe troops to his nephew during the preſent difficulties [e]; and the regent was thereby enabled to take the field; and to oppoſe the French king, who was advancing with his army to the gates of Paris.

THE extraordinary capacity of the duke of Bedford appeared alſo in his military operations. He attempted to reſtore the courage of his troops by boldly advancing to the face of the enemy; but he choſe his poſts with ſo much caution, as always to decline a combat, and to render it impoſſible for Charles to attack him. He ſtill attended that prince in all his movements; covered his own towns and garriſons; and kept himſelf in a poſture to reap

[d] Rymer, vol. x. p. 459, 472.

[e] Ibid. vol. x. p. 421.

advantage

CHAP. XX. 1430.

advantage from every imprudence or falſe ſtep of the enemy. The French army, which conſiſted moſtly of volunteers, who ſerved at their own expence, ſoon after retired and was diſbanded: Charles went to Bourges, the ordinary place of his reſidence; but not till he made himſelf maſter of Compiegne, Beauvais, Senlis, Sens, Laval, Lagni, St. Denis, and of many places in the neighbourhood of Paris, which the affections of the people had put into his hands.

THE regent endeavoured to revive the declining ſtate of his affairs, by bringing over the young king of England, and having him crowned and anointed at Paris[f]. All the vaſſals of the crown, who lived within the provinces poſſeſſed by the Engliſh, ſwore anew allegiance and did homage to him. But this ceremony was cold and inſipid, in compariſon of the luſtre which had attended the coronation of Charles at Rheims; and the duke of Bedford expected more effect from an accident, which put into his hands the perſon that had been the author of all his calamities.

THE maid of Orleans, after the coronation of Charles, declared to the count of Dunois, that her wiſhes were now fully gratified, aud that ſhe had no farther deſire than to return to her former condition, and to the occupations and courſe of life which became her ſex: But that nobleman, ſenſible of the great advantages which might ſtill be reaped from her preſence in the army, exhorted her to perſevere, till, by the final expulſion of the Engliſh, ſhe had brought all her prophecies to their full completion. In purſuance of this advice, ſhe threw herſelf into the town of Compiegne, which was at that time beſieged by the duke of Burgundy, aſſiſted by the earls of Arundel and Suffolk; and the garriſon on her appearance believed themſelves thenceforth invincible. But their joy was of ſhort duration.

[f] Rymer, vol. x. p. 432.

The

The Maid, next day after her arrival, headed a ſally upon the quarters of John of Luxembourg; ſhe twice drove the enemy from their entrenchments; finding their numbers to encreaſe every moment, ſhe ordered a retreat; when hard preſſed by the purſuers, ſhe turned upon them, and made them again recoil; but being here deſerted by her friends, and ſurrounded by the enemy, ſhe was at laſt, after exerting the utmoſt valour, taken priſoner by the Burgundians [g]. The common opinion was, that the French officers, finding the merit of every victory aſcribed to her, had, in envy to her renown, by which they themſelves were ſo much eclipſed, willingly expoſed her to this fatal accident. CHAP. XX. 1430. 25th May.

THE envy of her friends on this occaſion was not a greater proof of her merit than the triumph of her enemies. A complete victory would not have given more joy to the Engliſh and their partizans. The ſervice of *Te Deum*, which has ſo often been profaned by princes, was publicly celebrated on this fortunate event at Paris. The duke of Bedford fancied, that, by the captivity of that extraordinary woman, who had blaſted all his ſucceſſes, he ſhould again recover his former aſcendant over France; and to puſh farther the preſent advantage, he purchaſed the captive from John of Luxembourg, and formed a proſecution againſt her, which, whether it proceeded from vengeance or policy, was equally barbarous and diſhonourable.

THERE was no poſſible reaſon, why Joan ſhould not be regarded as a priſoner of war, and be entitled to all the courteſy and good uſage, which civilized nations practiſe towards enemies on theſe occaſions. She had never, in her military capacity, forfeited, by any act of treachery or cruelty, her claim to that treatment: She was un- 1431.

g Stowe, p. 371.

ſtained

CHAP. XX. 1431.

ſtained by any civil crime: Even the virtues and the very decorums of her ſex had ever been rigidly obſerved by her [h]: And though her appearing in war, and leading armies to battle, may ſeem an exception, ſhe had thereby performed ſuch ſignal ſervice to her prince, that ſhe had abundantly compenſated for this irregularity; and was, on that very account, the more an object of praiſe and admiration. It was neceſſary, therefore, for the duke of Bedford to intereſt religion ſome way in the proſecution; and to cover under that cloak his violation of juſtice and humanity.

THE biſhop of Beauvais, a man wholly devoted to the Engliſh intereſt, preſented a petition againſt Joan, on pretence that ſhe was taken within the bounds of his dioceſe; and he deſired to have her tried by an eccleſiaſtical court for ſorcery, impiety, idolatry, and magic: The univerſity of Paris was ſo mean as to join in the ſame requeſt: Several prelates, among whom the cardinal of Wincheſter was the only Engliſhman, were appointed her judges; They held their court in Roüen, where the young king of England then reſided: And the Maid, clothed in her former military apparel, but loaded with irons, was produced before this tribunal.

SHE firſt deſired to be eaſed of her chains: Her judges anſwered that ſhe had once already attempted an eſcape by throwing herſelf from a tower: She confeſſed the fact, maintained the juſtice of her intention, and owned, that, if ſhe could, ſhe would ſtill execute that purpoſe. All

[h] We learn from her trial in Paſquier, that when accuſed of having put to death Franquet d'Arras her priſoner, ſhe juſtified herſelf by ſaying, that he was a known robber, and lay under ſentence of death by a civil magiſtrate. She was ſo careful of obſerving decorums, that when ſhe was in any town or garriſon, ſhe always went to bed with ſome woman of character in the place: When in the camp, ſhe lay in armour, and always had one of her brothers on each ſide of her. The Engliſh themſelves never reproached her with any thing in regard to her morals.

her

her other ſpeeches ſhowed the ſame firmneſs and intrepi- CHAP. XX.
dity: Though haraſſed with interrogatories, during the courſe of near four months, ſhe never betrayed any weakneſs or womaniſh ſubmiſſion; and no advantage was gained over her. The point, which her judges puſhed moſt vehemently, was her viſions and revelations and intercourſe with departed ſaints; and they aſked her, whether ſhe would ſubmit to the church the truth of theſe inſpirations: She replied, that ſhe would ſubmit them to God, the fountain of truth. They then exclaimed, that ſhe was a heretic, and denied the authority of the church. She appealed to the pope: They rejected her appeal. 1431.

THEY aſked her, why ſhe put truſt in her ſtandard which had been conſecrated by magical incantations: She replied, that ſhe put truſt in the Supreme Being alone, whoſe image was impreſſed upon it. They demanded, why ſhe carried in her hand that ſtandard at the anointment and coronation of Charles at Rheims: She anſwered, that the perſon who had ſhared the danger, was entitled to ſhare the glory. When accuſed of going to war contrary to the decorums of her ſex, and of aſſuming government and command over men; ſhe ſcrupled not to reply, that her ſole purpoſe was to defeat the Engliſh, and to expel them the kingdom. In the iſſue, ſhe was condemned for all the crimes of which ſhe had been accuſed, aggravated by hereſy; her revelations were declared to be inventions of the devil to delude the people; and ſhe was ſentenced to be delivered over to the ſecular arm.

JOAN, ſo long ſurrounded by inveterate enemies, who treated her with every mark of contumely; brow-beaten and overawed by men of ſuperior rank, and men inveſted with the enſigns of a ſacred character, which ſhe had been accuſtomed to revere, felt her ſpirit at laſt ſubdued; and thoſe viſionary dreams of inſpiration, in which ſhe had

CHAP. XX.

1431.

had been buoyed up by the triumphs of ſucceſs and the applauſes of her own party, gave way to the terrors of that puniſhment to which ſhe was ſentenced. She publicly declared herſelf willing to recant; ſhe acknowledged the illuſion of thoſe revelations which the church had rejected; and ſhe promiſed never more to maintain them. Her ſentence was then mitigated: She was condemned to perpetual impriſonment, and to be fed during life on bread and water.

ENOUGH was now done to fulfil all political views, and to convince both the French and the Engliſh, that the opinion of divine influence, which had ſo much encouraged the one and daunted the other, was entirely without foundation. But the barbarous vengeance of Joan's enemies was not ſatisfied with this victory. Suſpecting, that the female dreſs, which ſhe had now conſented to wear, was diſagreeable to her, they purpoſely placed in her apartment a ſuit of men's apparel; and watched for the effects of that temptation upon her. On the ſight of a dreſs, in which ſhe had acquired ſo much renown, and which, ſhe once believed, ſhe wore by the particular appointment of heaven, all her former ideas and paſſions revived; and ſhe ventured in her ſolitude to cloath herſelf again in the forbidden garment. Her inſidious enemies caught her in that ſituation: Her fault was interpreted to be no leſs than a relapſe into hereſy: No recantation would now ſuffice, and no pardon could be granted her. She was condemned to be burned in the market-place of Roüen; and the infamous ſentence was accordingly executed. This admirable heroine, to whom the more generous ſuperſtition of the ancients would have erected altars, was, on pretence of hereſy and magic, delivered over alive to the flames, and expiated by that dreadful puniſhment the ſignal ſervices, which ſhe had rendered to her prince and to her native country.

Execution of the maid of Orleans. 14th June.

CHAP. XX.

1432.

THE affairs of the Engliſh, far from being advanced by this execution, went every day more and more to decay: The great abilities of the regent were unable to reſiſt the ſtrong inclination, which had ſeized the French to return under the obedience of their rightful ſovereign, and which that act of cruelty was ill fitted to remove. Chartres was ſurprized, by a ſtratagem of the count of Dunois: A body of the Engliſh, under lord Willoughby, was defeated at St. Celerin upon the Sarte[h]: The fair in the ſuburbs of Caën, ſeated in the midſt of the Engliſh territories, was pillaged by de Lore, a French officer: The duke of Bedford himſelf was obliged by Dunois to raiſe the ſiege of Lagni with ſome loſs of reputation: And all theſe misfortunes, though light, yet being continued and uninterrupted, brought diſcredit on the Engliſh, and menaced them with an approaching revolution. But the chief detriment, which the regent ſuſtained, was by the death of his dutcheſs, who had hitherto preſerved ſome appearance of friendſhip between him and her brother, the duke of Burgundy[i]: And his marriage ſoon afterwards, with Jaqueline of Luxembourg, was the beginning of a breach between them[k]. Philip complained, that the regent had never had the civility to inform him of his intentions, and that ſo ſudden a marriage was a ſlight on his ſiſter's memory. The cardinal of Wincheſter mediated a reconciliation between theſe princes, and brought both of them to St. Omers for that purpoſe. The duke of Bedford here expected the firſt viſit, both as he was ſon, brother, and uncle to a king, and becauſe he had already made ſuch advances as to come into the duke of Burgundy's territories, in order to have an interview with him: But Philip, proud of his great power and independant dominions, refuſed to pay this compli-

[h] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 100. [i] Ibid. p. 87. [k] Stowe, p. 373. Grafton, p. 554.

ment

CHAP. XX. 1432.

ment to the regent: And the two princes, unable to adjuſt the ceremonial, parted without ſeeing each other [m]. A bad prognoſtic of their cordial intentions to renew paſt amity!

Defection of the duke of Burgundy.

NOTHING could be more repugnant to the intereſts of the houſe of Burgundy, than to unite the crowns of France and England on the ſame head; an event, which, had it taken place, would have reduced the duke to the rank of a petty prince, and have rendered his ſituation entirely dependant and precarious. The title alſo to the crown of France, which, after the failure of the elder branches, might accrue to the duke or his poſterity, had been ſacrificed by the treaty of Troye; and ſtrangers and enemies were thereby irrevocably fixed upon the throne. Revenge alone had carried Philip into theſe impolitic meaſures; and a point of honour had hitherto induced him to maintain them. But as it is the nature of paſſion gradually to decay, while the ſenſe of intereſt maintains a permanent influence and authority; the duke had, for ſome years, appeared ſenſibly to relent in his animoſity againſt Charles, and to hearken willingly to the apologies made by that prince for the murder of the late duke of Burgundy. His extreme youth was pleaded in his favour; his incapacity to judge for himſelf; the aſcendant gained over him by his miniſters; and his inability to reſent a deed, which, without his knowledge, had been perpetrated by thoſe under whoſe guidance he was then placed. The more to gratify the pride of Philip, the king of France had baniſhed from his court and preſence Tanegui de Chatel, and all thoſe who were concerned in that aſſaſſination; and had offered to make every other atonement, which could be required of him. The diſtreſs, which Charles had already ſuffered, had tended to gratify the duke's revenge; the miſeries, to which France had

[m] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 90. Grafton, p. 561.

been

been so long exposed, had begun to move his compassion; and the cries of all Europe admonished him, that his resentment, which might hitherto be deemed pious, would, if carried farther, be universally condemned as barbarous and unrelenting. While the duke was in this disposition, every disgust, which he received from England, made a double impression upon him; the entreaties of the count of Richemont and the duke of Bourbon, who had married his two sisters, had weight; and he finally determined to unite himself to the royal family of France, from which his own was descended. For this purpose, a congress was appointed at Arras under the mediation of deputies from the pope and the council of Basle: The duke of Burgundy came thither in person: The duke of Bourbon, the count of Richemont, and other persons of high rank, appeared as ambassadors from France: And the English having also been invited to attend, the cardinal of Winchester, the archbishop of York, and others, received from the protector and council a commission for that purpose [m]. CHAP. XX. 1432. 1435.

THE conferences were held in the abbey of St. Vaast; and began with discussing the proposals of the two crowns, which were so wide of each other as to admit of no hopes of accommodation. England demanded, that each party should remain in possession of what they had at present, after making some equal exchanges for mutual convenience: France offered to cede Normandy with Guienne, but both of them loaded with the usual homage and vassalage to the crown. As the claims of England upon France were universally unpopular in Europe, the mediators declared the offers of Charles very reasonable; and the cardinal of Winchester, with the other English ambassadors, immediately left the congress. There remained nothing but to discuss the mutual pretensions of Charles August.

[m] Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 110.

CHAP. XX.

1435. and Philip. These were easily adjusted: The vassal was in a situation to give law to his superior; and he exacted conditions, which, had it not been for the present necessity, would have been deemed, to the last degree, dishonourable and disadvantageous to the crown of France. Besides making repeated atonements and acknowledgements for the murder of the duke of Burgundy, Charles was obliged to cede all the towns of Picardy which lay between the Somme and the Low Countries; he yielded several other territories; he agreed, that these and all the other dominions of Philip should be held by him, during his life-time, without doing any homage or swearing fealty to the present king; and he freed his subjects from all obligations to allegiance, if ever he infringed this treaty [n]. Such were the conditions, upon which France purchased the friendship of the duke of Burgundy.

The duke sent a herald to England with a letter, in which he notified the conclusion of the treaty of Arras, and apologized for his departure from that of Troye. The council received the herald with great coldness: They even assigned him his lodgings in a shoemaker's house, by way of insult; and the populace were so incensed, that, if the duke of Gloucester had not given him guards, his life had been exposed to danger, when he appeared in the streets. The Flemings, and other subjects of Philip, were insulted, and some of them murdered by the Londoners; and every thing seemed to tend towards a rupture between the two nations [o]. These violences were not disagreeable to the duke of Burgundy; as they afforded him a pretence for the farther measures which he intended to take against the English, whom he now regarded as implacable and dangerous enemies.

[n] Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 112. Graston, p. 565. [o] Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 120. Hollingshed, p. 612.

A few

CHAP. XX.

A FEW days after the duke of Bedford received intelligence of this treaty, so fatal to the interests of England, he died at Roüen; a prince of great abilities, and of many virtues; and whose memory, except from the barbarous execution of the maid of Orleans, was unsullied by any considerable blemish. Isabella, queen of France, died a little before him, despised by the English, detested by the French, and reduced in her later years to regard, with an unnatural horror, the progress and successes of her own son, in recovering possession of his kingdom. This period was also signalized by the death of the earl of Arundel [p], a great English general, who, though he commanded three thousand men, was foiled by Xaintrailles at the head of six hundred, and soon after expired of the wounds which he received in the action.

1435. 14th Sept. Death of the duke of Bedford.

THE violent factions, which prevailed in the court of England, between the duke of Gloucester and the cardinal of Winchester, prevented the English from taking the proper measures for repairing these multiplied losses; and threw all their affairs into confusion. The popularity of the duke, and his near relation to the crown, gave him advantages in the contest, which he often lost by his open and unguarded temper, unfit to struggle with the politic and interested spirit of his rival. The balance, meanwhile, of these parties, kept every thing in suspence: Foreign affairs were much neglected: And though the duke of York, son to that earl of Cambridge, who was executed in the beginning of the last reign, was appointed successor to the duke of Bedford, it was seven months before his commission passed the seals; and the English remained so long in an enemy's country, without a proper head or governor.

1436.

[p] Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 105. Hollingshed, p. 610.

CHAP. XX.

1436. Decline of the Engliſh in France.

THE new governor on his arrival found the capital already loſt. The Pariſians had always been more attached to the Burgundian than to the Engliſh intereſt; and after the concluſion of the treaty of Arras, their affections, without any farther controul, univerſally led them to return to their allegiance under their native ſovereign. The conſtable, together with Lile-Adam, the ſame perſon who had before put Paris into the hands of the duke of Burgundy, was introduced in the night-time by intelligence with the citizens: Lord Willoughby, who commanded only a ſmall garriſon of 1500 men, was expelled: That nobleman diſcovered valour and preſence of mind on the occaſion; but unable to guard ſo large a place againſt ſuch multitudes, he retired into the Baſtile, and being there inveſted, he delivered up that fortreſs, and was contented to ſtipulate for the ſafe retreat of his troops into Normandy [q].

IN the ſame ſeaſon, the duke of Burgundy openly took part againſt England, and commenced hoſtilities by the ſiege of Calais, the only place which now gave the Engliſh any ſure hold of France, and ſtill rendered them dangerous. As he was beloved among his own ſubjects, and had acquired the epithet of *Good*, from his popular qualities, he was able to intereſt all the inhabitants in the Low Countries in the ſucceſs of this enterprize; and he inveſted that place with an army, formidable from its numbers, but without experience, diſcipline, or military ſpirit [r]. On the firſt alarm of this ſiege, the duke of Gloceſter aſſembled ſome forces, ſent a defiance to Philip, and challenged him to wait the event of a battle, which he promiſed to give, as ſoon as the wind would permit him to reach Calais. The warlike genius of the Engliſh had at that time rendered them terrible to all the northern

[q] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 127. Grafton, p. 568. [r] Monſtrelet, vol. ii. p. 126, 130, 132. Hollingſhed, p. 613. Grafton, p. 571.

parts

parts of Europe; especially to the Flemings, who were more expert in manufactures, than in arms; and the duke of Burgundy, being already foiled in some attempts before Calais, and observing the discontent and terror of his own army, thought proper to raise the siege, and to retreat before the arrival of the enemy [s]. CHAP. XX. 1436. 26th June.

The English were still masters of many fine provinces in France; but retained possession, more by the extreme weakness of Charles, than by the strength of their own garrisons or the force of their armies. Nothing indeed can be more surprising than the feeble efforts made, during the course of several years, by these two potent nations against each other; while the one struggled for independancy, and the other aspired to a total conquest of its rival. The general want of industry, commerce, and police, in that age, had rendered all the European nations, and France and England no less than the others, unfit for bearing the burthens of war, when it was prolonged beyond one season; and the continuance of hostilities had, long ere this time, exhausted the force and patience of both kingdoms. Scarcely could the appearance of an army be brought into the field on either side; and all the operations consisted in the surprisal of places, in the rencounter of detached parties, and in incursions upon the open country; which were performed by small bodies, assembled on a sudden from the neighbouring garrisons. In this method of conducting the war, the French king had much the advantage: The affections of the people were entirely on his side: Intelligence was early brought him of the state and motions of the enemy: The inhabitants were ready to join in any attempts against the garrisons: And thus ground was continually, though slowly, gained upon the English. The duke of York, who was a prince of ability, struggled against these difficulties dur-

[s] Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 136. Hollingshed, p. 614.

CHAP. XX.

ing the course of five years; and being assisted by the valour of lord Talbot, soon after created earl of Shrewsbury,
1436. he performed actions, which acquired him honour, but merit not the attention of posterity. It would have been well, had this feeble war, in sparing the blood of the people, prevented likewise all other oppressions; and had the fury of men, which reason and justice cannot restrain, thus happily received a check from their impotence and inability. But the French and English, though they exerted such small force, were, however, stretching beyond their resources, which were still smaller; and the troops, destitute of pay, were obliged to subsist by plundering and oppressing the country, both of friends and enemies. The fields in all the north of France, which was the seat
1440. of war, were laid waste and left uncultivated [t]. The cities were gradually depopulated, not by the blood spilt in battle, but by the more destructive pillage of the garrisons [u]; And both parties, weary of hostilities, which decided nothing, seemed at last desirous of peace, and they set on foot negociations for that purpose. But the propofals of France and those of England, were still so wide of each other, that all hope of accommodation immediately vanished. The English ambassadors demanded restitution of all the provinces which had once been annexed to England, together with the final cession of Calais and its district; and required the possession of these extensive territories without the burthen of any fealty or homage on the part of their prince: The French offered only part of Guienne, part of Normandy, and Calais, loaded with the usual burthens. It appeared vain to con-

[t] Grafton, p. 562.

[u] Fortescue, who, soon after this period, visited France, in the train of prince Henry, speaks of that kingdom as a desert in comparison of England. See his Treatise *de laudibus Angliæ*. Though we make allowance for the partialities of Fortescue, there must have been some foundation for his account; and these destructive wars are the most likely reason to be assigned for the difference remarked by this author.

tinue

CHAP. XX. 1440.

tinue the negociation, while there was ſo little proſpect of agreement. The Engliſh were ſtill too haughty to ſtoop from the vaſt hopes which they had formerly entertained, and to accept of terms more ſuitable to the preſent condition of the two kingdoms.

THE duke of York ſoon after reſigned his government to the earl of Warwic, a nobleman of reputation, whom death prevented from long enjoying this dignity. The duke, upon the demiſe of that nobleman, returned to his charge, and during his adminiſtration a truce was concluded between the king of England and the duke of Burgundy, which had become neceſſary for the commercial intereſts of their ſubjects [x]. The war with France continued in the ſame languid and feeble ſtate as before.

THE captivity of five princes of the blood, taken priſoners in the battle of Azincour, was a conſiderable advantage which England long enjoyed over its enemy; but this ſuperiority was now entirely loſt. Some of theſe princes had died; ſome had been ranſomed for ſums of money; and the duke of Orleans, the moſt powerful among them, was the laſt that remained in the hands of the Engliſh. He offered the ſum of 54,000 nobles [y] for his liberty; and when this propoſal was laid before the council of England; as every queſtion was there an object of faction, the party of the duke of Gloceſter, and that of the cardinal of Wincheſter, were divided in their ſentiments with regard to it. The duke reminded the council of the dying advice of the late king, that none of theſe priſoners ſhould on any account be releaſed,

[x] Grafton, p. 573. [y] Rymer, vol. x. p. 764, 776, 782, 795, 796. This ſum was equal to 36,000 pounds ſterling of our preſent money. A ſubſidy of a tenth and fifteenth was fixed by Edward III. at 29,000 pounds, which, in the reign of Henry VI. made only 58,000 pounds of our preſent money. The parliament granted only one ſubſidy during the courſe of ſeven years, from 1437 to 1444.

CHAP. XX.

till his ſon ſhould be of ſufficient age to hold, himſelf, the reins of government. The cardinal inſiſted on the greatneſs of the ſum offered, which in reality was near equal to two thirds of all the extraordinary ſupplies, that the parliament, during the courſe of ſeven years, granted for the ſupport of the war. And he added, that the releaſe of this prince was more likely to be advantageous than prejudicial to the Engliſh intereſts; by filling the court of France with faction, and giving a head to thoſe numerous malcontents, whom Charles was at preſent able with great difficulty to reſtrain. The cardinal's party, as uſual, prevailed: The duke of Orleans was releaſed, after a melancholy captivity of twenty-five years [z]: And the duke of Burgundy, as a pledge of his entire reconciliation with the family of Orleans, facilitated to that prince the payment of his ranſom. It muſt be confeſſed, that the princes and nobility, in thoſe ages, went to war on very diſadvantageous terms. If they were taken priſoners, they either remained in captivity during life, or purchaſed their liberty at the price which the victors were pleaſed to impoſe, and which often reduced their families to want and beggary.

1440.

1443. THE ſentiments of the cardinal, ſome time after, prevailed in another point of ſtill greater moment. That prelate had always encouraged every propoſal of accommodation with France; and had repreſented the utter impoſſibility, in the preſent circumſtances, of puſhing farther the conqueſts in that kingdom, and the great difficulty of even maintaining thoſe which were already made. He inſiſted on the extreme reluctance of the parliament to grant ſupplies; the diſorders in which the Engliſh affairs in Normandy were involved; the daily progreſs made by the French king; and the advantage

[z] Grafton, p. 578.

of

of ſtopping his hand by a temporary accommodation, which might leave room for time and accidents to operate in favour of the Engliſh. The duke of Gloceſter, high-ſpirited and haughty, and educated in the lofty pretenſions, which the firſt ſucceſſes of his two brothers had rendered familiar to him, could not yet be induced to relinquiſh all hopes of prevailing over France; much leſs could he ſee with patience, his own opinion thwarted and rejected by the influence of his rival in the Engliſh council. But notwithſtanding his oppoſition, the earl of Suffolk, a nobleman who always adhered to the cardinal's party, was diſpatched to Tours, in order to negociate with the French miniſters. It was found impoſſible to adjuſt the terms of a laſting peace; but a truce for twenty-two months was concluded, which left every thing on the preſent footing between the parties. The numerous diſorders, under which the French government laboured, and which time alone could remedy, induced Charles to aſſent to this truce; and the ſame motives engaged him afterwards to prolong it [a]. But Suffolk, not content with executing this object of his commiſſion, proceeded alſo to finiſh another buſineſs, which ſeems rather to have been implied than expreſſed in the powers that had been granted him [b].

CHAP. XX.

1443.

28th May. Truce with France.

In proportion as Henry advanced in years, his character became fully known in the court, and was no longer ambiguous to either faction. Of the moſt harmleſs, inoffenſive, ſimple manners; but of the moſt ſlender capacity; he was fitted, both by the ſoftneſs of his temper, and the weakneſs of his underſtanding, to be perpetually governed by thoſe who ſurrounded him; and it was eaſy to foreſee, that his reign would prove a perpetual minority. As he had now reached the twenty-third year of his age, it was natural to think of chooſing him a queen;

[a] Rymer, vol. xi. p. 101, 108, 206, 214. [b] Ibid. p. 53.

and

CHAP. XX.

1443.

and each party was ambitious of having him receive one from their hand; as it was probable, that this circumſtance would decide for ever the victory between them. The duke of Gloceſter propoſed a daughter of the count of Armagnac; but had not credit to effectuate his purpoſe. The cardinal and his friends had caſt their eye on Margaret of Anjou, daughter of Regnier, titular king of Sicily, Naples, and Jeruſalem, deſcended from the count of Anjou, brother of Charles V. who had left theſe magnificent titles, but without any real power or poſſeſſions, to his poſterity. This princeſs herſelf was the moſt accompliſhed of her age both in body and mind; and ſeemed to poſſeſs thoſe qualities, which would equally qualify her to acquire the aſcendant over Henry, and to ſupply all his defects and weakneſſes. Of a maſculine, courageous ſpirit, of an enterprizing temper, endowed with ſolidity as well as vivacity of underſtanding, ſhe had not been able to conceal theſe great talents even in the privacy of her father's family; and it was reaſonable to expect, that, when ſhe ſhould mount the throne, they would break out with ſtill ſuperior luſtre. The earl of Suffolk, therefore, in concert with his aſſociates of the Engliſh council, made propoſals of marriage to Margaret, which were accepted. But this nobleman, beſides preoccupying the princeſs's favour by being the chief means of her advancement, endeavoured to ingratiate himſelf with her and her family, by very extraordinary conceſſions: Though Margaret brought no dowry with her, he ventured of himſelf, without any direct authority from the council, but probably with the approbation of the cardinal and the ruling members, to engage by a ſecret article, that the province of Maine, which was at that time in the hands of the Engliſh, ſhould be ceded to Charles of Anjou her uncle [c], who was prime mini-

Marriage of the king with Margaret of Anjou.

[c] Grafton, p. 590.

ſter

ſter and favourite of the French king, and who had already received from his maſter the grant of that province as his appanage. CHAP. XX. 1443.

THE treaty of marriage was ratified in England: Suffolk obtained firſt the title of marquis, then that of duke; and even received the thanks of parliament, for his ſervices in concluding it[d]. The princeſs fell immediately into cloſe connexions with the cardinal and his party, the dukes of Somerſet, Suffolk, and Buckingham[e]; who, fortified by her powerful patronage, reſolved on the final ruin of the duke of Gloceſter.

THIS generous prince, worſted in all court intrigues, for which his temper was not ſuited, but poſſeſſing, in a high degree, the favour of the public, had already received from his rivals a cruel mortification, which he had hitherto born without violating public peace, but which it was impoſſible that a perſon of his ſpirit and humanity could ever forgive. His dutcheſs, the daughter of Reginald, lord Cobham, had been accuſed of the crime of witchcraft, and it was pretended, that there was found in her poſſeſſion a waxen figure of the king, which ſhe and her aſſociates, Sir Roger Bolingbroke a prieſt, and one Margery Jordan of Eye, melted in a magical manner before a ſlow fire, with an intention of making Henry's force and vigour waſte away by like inſenſible degrees. The accuſation was well calculated to affect the weak and credulous mind of the king, and to gain belief in an ignorant age; and the dutcheſs was brought to trial with her confederates. The nature of this crime, ſo oppoſite to all common ſenſe, ſeems always to exempt the accuſers from obſerving the rules of common ſenſe in their evidence: The priſoners were pronounced guilty; the dutcheſs was condemned to do public penance, and to ſuffer perpetual 1447.

[d] Cotton, p. 630. [e] Hollingſhed, p. 626.

impriſon-

CHAP. XX.

1447. imprisonment, and the others were executed [f]. But as these violent proceedings were ascribed solely to the malice of the duke's enemies, the people, contrary to their usual practice in such marvellous trials, acquitted the unhappy sufferers; and encreased their esteem and affection towards a prince, who was thus exposed, without protection, to those mortal injuries.

THESE sentiments of the public made the cardinal of Winchester and his party sensible, that it was necessary to destroy a man, whose popularity might become dangerous, and whose resentment they had so much cause to apprehend. In order to effectuate their purpose, a parliament was summoned to meet, not at London, which was supposed to be too well affected to the duke, but at St. Edmondsbury, where they expected that he would lie entirely at mercy. As soon as he appeared, he was accused of treason, and thrown into prison. He was soon after found dead in his bed [g]; and though it was pretended that his death was natural, and though his body, which was exposed to public view, bore no marks of outward violence, no one doubted but he had fallen a victim to the vengeance of his enemies. An artifice, formerly practised in the case of Edward II. Richard II. and Thomas of Woodstock, duke of Gloucester, could deceive no body. The reason of this assassination of the duke seems not, that the ruling party apprehended his acquittal in parliament on account of his innocence, which, in such times, was seldom much regarded; but that they imagined his public trial and execution would have been more invidious than his private murder, which they pretended to deny. Some gentlemen of his retinue were afterwards tried as accomplices in his treasons, and were condemned to be hanged, drawn and quartered. They

28th Feb. Murder of the duke of Gloucester.

[f] Stowe, p. 381. Hollingshed, p. 622. Grafton, p. 587.
[g] Grafton, p. 597.

were

were hanged and cut down; but just as the executioner was proceeding to quarter them, their pardon was produced, and they were recovered to life [h]. The most barbarous kind of mercy that can possibly be imagined! CHAP. XX. 1447.

THIS prince is said to have received a better education than was usual in his age, to have founded one of the first public libraries in England, and to have been a great patron of learned men. Among other advantages, which he reaped from this turn of mind, it tended much to cure him of credulity; of which the following instance is given by Sir Thomas More. There was a man, who pretended, that, though he was born blind, he had recovered his sight by touching the shrine of St. Albans. The duke, happening soon after to pass that way, questioned the man, and seeming to doubt of his sight, asked him the colour of several cloaks, worn by persons of his retinue. The man told him very readily. *You are a knave*, cried the prince; *had you been born blind, you could not so soon have learned to distinguish colours:* And immediately ordered him to be put in the stocks as an impostor [i].

THE cardinal of Winchester died six weeks after his nephew, whose murder was universally ascribed to him as well as to the duke of Suffolk, and which, it is said, gave him more remorse in his last moments, than could naturally be expected from a man hardened, during the course of a long life, in falsehood and in politics. What share the queen had in this guilt is uncertain; her usual activity and spirit made the public conclude with some reason, that the duke's enemies durst not have ventured on such a deed without her privity. But there happened soon after an event, of which she and her favourite, the duke of Suffolk, bore incontestibly the whole odium.

THAT article of the marriage treaty, by which the province of Maine was to be ceded to Charles of Anjou,

[h] Fabian Chron. anno 1447. [i] Grafton, p. 597.

the

CHAP. XX.

the queen's uncle, had probably been hitherto kept ſecret; and during the lifetime of the duke of Gloceſter, it would

1447. have been dangerous to venture on the execution of it. But as the court of France ſtrenuouſly inſiſted on performance, orders were now diſpatched, under Henry's hand, to Sir Francis Surienne, governor of Mans, commanding him to ſurrender that place to Charles of Anjou. Surienne, either queſtioning the authenticity of the order, or regarding his government as his only fortune, refuſed compliance; and it became neceſſary for a French army, under the count of Dunois, to lay ſiege to the city. The governor made as good a defence as his ſituation could permit; but receiving no relief from Edmund duke of Somerſet, who was at that time governor of Normandy, he was at laſt obliged to capitulate, and to ſurrender not only Mans, but all the other fortreſſes of that province, which was thus entirely alienated from the crown of England.

1448. THE bad effects of this meaſure ſtopped not here. Surienne, at the head of all his garriſons, amounting to 2500 men, retired into Normandy, in expectation of being taken into pay, and of being quartered in ſome towns of that province. But Somerſet, who had no means of ſubſiſting ſuch a multitude, and who was probably incenſed at Surienne's diſobedience, refuſed to admit him; and this adventurer, not daring to commit depredations on the territories either of the king of France or of England, marched into Britanny, ſeized the town of Fougeres, repaired the fortifications of Pontorſon and St. James de Beuvron, and ſubſiſted his troops by the ravages which he exerciſed on all that province [k]. The duke of Britanny complained of this violence to the king of France, his liege lord: Charles remonſtrated with the

[k] Monſtrelet, vol. iii. p. 6.

duke of Somerset: That nobleman replied, that the injury was done without his privity, and that he had no authority over Surienne and his companions [1]. Though this answer ought to have appeared satisfactory to Charles, who had often felt severely the licentious, independant spirit of such mercenary soldiers, he never would admit of the apology. He still insisted, that these plunderers should be recalled, and that reparation should be made to the duke of Britanny for all the damages which he had sustained: And in order to render an accommodation absolutely impracticable, he made the estimation of damages amount to no less a sum than 1,600,000 crowns. He was sensible of the superiority, which the present state of his affairs gave him over England; and he determined to take advantage of it. CHAP. XX. 1448.

No sooner was the truce concluded between the two kingdoms, than Charles employed himself, with great industry and judgment, in repairing those numberless ills, to which France, from the continuance of wars both foreign and domestic, had so long been exposed. He restored the course of public justice; he introduced order into the finances; he established discipline in his troops; he repressed faction in his court; he revived the languid state of agriculture and the arts; and in the course of a few years, he rendered his kingdom flourishing within itself, and formidable to its neighbours. Meanwhile, affairs in England had taken a very different turn. The court was divided into parties, which were enraged against each other: The people were discontented with the government: Conquests in France, which were an object more of glory than of interest, were overlooked amidst domestic incidents, which engrossed the attention of all men: The governor of Normandy, ill supplied with money, was obliged to dismiss the greater part of his troops, and to allow State of France.

[1] Monstrelet, vol. iii. p. 7. Hollingshed, p. 629.

the

CHAP. XX.

1449.

the fortifications of the towns and caſtles to go out of repair: And the nobility and people of that province had, during the open communication with France, enjoyed frequent opportunities of renewing connexions with their ancient maſter, and of concerting the means for expelling the Engliſh. The occaſion therefore ſeemed favourable to Charles for breaking the truce. Normandy was at once invaded by four powerful armies; one commanded by the king himſelf; a ſecond by the duke of Britanny; a third by the duke of Alençon; and a fourth by the count of Dunois. The places opened their gates almoſt as ſoon as the French appeared before them: Verneüil, Nogent, Chateau Gaillard, Ponteau de mer, Giſors, Mante, Vernon, Argentan, Liſieux, Fecamp, Coutances, Beleſme, Pont de l'Arche, fell in an inſtant into the hands of the enemy. The duke of Somerſet, ſo far from having an army, which could take the field, and relieve theſe places, was not able to ſupply them with the neceſſary garriſons and proviſions. He retired with the few troops, of which he was maſter, into Roüen; and thought it ſufficient, if, till the arrival of ſuccours from England, he could ſave that capital from the general fate of the province. The king of France, at the head of a formidable army, fifty thouſand ſtrong, preſented himſelf before the gates: The dangerous example of revolt had infected the inhabitants; and they called aloud for a capitulation. Somerſet, unable to reſiſt at once both the enemies within and from without, retired with his garriſon into the palace and caſtle; which, being places not tenable, he was obliged to ſurrender: He purchaſed a retreat to Harfleur by the payment of 56,000 crowns, by engaging to ſurrender Arques, Tancarville, Caudebec, Honfleur, and other places in the higher Normandy, and by delivering hoſtages for the performance of theſe articles [m]. The governor of Honfleur refuſed to obey his

Renewal of the war with France.

4th Nov.

[m] Monſtrelet, vol iii. p. 21. Graſton, p. 643.

orders;

orders; upon which the earl of Shrewsbury, who was one of the hostages, was detained prisoner; and the English were thus deprived of the only general capable of recovering them from their present distressed situation. Harfleur made a better defence under Sir Thomas Curson the governor; but was finally obliged to open its gates to Dunois. Succours at last appeared from England under Sir Thomas Kyriel, and landed at Cherbourg: But these came very late, amounted only to 4000 men, and were soon after put to rout at Fourmigni by the count of Clermont [n]. This battle, or rather skirmish, was the only action fought by the English for the defence of their dominions in France, which they had purchased at such an expence of blood and treasure. Somerset, shut up in Caën without any prospect of relief, found it necessary to capitulate: Falaise opened its gates, on condition that the earl of Shrewsbury should be restored to liberty: And Cherbourg, the last place of Normandy which remained in the hands of the English, being delivered up, the conquest of that important province was finished in a twelvemonth by Charles, to the great joy of the inhabitants and of his whole kingdom [o].

CHAP. XX. 1450.

A LIKE rapid success attended the French arms in Guienne; though the inhabitants of that province were, from long custom, better inclined to the English government. Dunois was dispatched thither, and met with no resistance in the field, and very little from the towns. Great improvements had been made, during this age, in the structure and management of artillery, and none in fortification; and the art of defence was by that means more unequal, than either before or since, to the art of attack. After all the small places about Bourdeaux were reduced, that city agreed to submit, if not relieved by a certain time; and as no one in England thought seriously

The English expelled France.

[n] Hollingshed, p. 631. [o] Grafton, p. 646.

CHAP. XX. 1450.

of these distant concerns, no relief appeared; the place surrendered; and Bayonne being taken soon after, this whole province, which had remained united to England, since the accession of Henry II. was, after a period of three centuries, finally swallowed up in the French monarchy.

THOUGH no peace or truce was concluded between France and England, the war was in a manner at an end. The English, torn in pieces by the civil dissensions which ensued, made but one feeble effort more for the recovery of Guienne: And Charles, occupied at home in regulating the government, and fencing against the intrigues of his factious son, Lewis the Dauphin, scarcely ever attempted to invade them in their island, or to retaliate upon them, by availing himself of their intestine confusions.

CHAP. XXI.

HENRY VI.

Claim of the duke of York to the crown——The earl of Warwic——Impeachment of the duke of Suffolk——His baniſhment——and death——Popular inſurrection——The parties of York and Lancaſter——Firſt armament of the duke of York——Firſt battle of St. Albans——Battle of Blore-heath——of Northampton——A parliament——Battle of Wakefield——Death of the duke of York——Battle of Mortimer's Croſs——Second Battle of St. Albans——Edward IV. *aſſumes the crown——Miſcellaneous tranſactions of this reign.*

A WEAK prince, ſeated on the throne of England, had never failed, how gentle ſoever and innocent, to be infeſted with faction, diſcontent, rebellion, and civil commotions; and as the incapacity of Henry appeared every day in a fuller light, theſe dangerous conſequences began, from paſt experience, to be univerſally and juſtly apprehended. Men alſo of unquiet ſpirits, no longer employed in foreign wars, whence they were now excluded by the ſituation of the neighbouring ſtates, were the more likely to excite inteſtine diſorders, and by their emulation, rivalſhip, and animoſities, to tear the bowels of their native country. But though theſe cauſes alone were ſufficient to breed confuſion, there concurred another circumſtance of the moſt dangerous nature: A pretender to the crown appeared: The title itſelf of the weak prince, who enjoyed the name of ſovereignty, was diſputed:

CHAP. XXI. 1450.

CHAP. XXI. 1450.

puted: And the Engliſh were now to pay the ſevere, though late penalty, of their turbulence under Richard II. and of their levity in violating, without any neceſſity or juſt reaſon, the lineal ſucceſſion of their monarchs.

Claim of the duke of York to the crown.

ALL the males of the houſe of Mortimer were extinct; but Anne, the ſiſter of the laſt earl of Marche, having eſpouſed the earl of Cambridge, beheaded in the reign of Henry V. had tranſmitted her latent, but not yet forgotten claim to her ſon, Richard, duke of York. This prince, thus deſcended by his mother from Philippa, only daughter of the duke of Clarence, ſecond ſon of Edward III. ſtood plainly in the order of ſucceſſion before the king, who derived his deſcent from the duke of Lancaſter, third ſon of that monarch; and that claim could not, in many reſpects, have fallen into more dangerous hands than thoſe of the duke of York. Richard was a man of valour and abilities, of a prudent conduct and mild diſpoſitions: He had enjoyed an opportunity of diſplaying theſe virtues in his government of France: And though recalled from that command by the intrigues and ſuperior intereſt of the duke of Somerſet, he had been ſent to ſuppreſs a rebellion in Ireland; had ſucceeded much better in that enterprize than his rival in the defence of Normandy; and had even been able to attach to his perſon and family the whole Iriſh nation, whom he was ſent to ſubdue [p]. In the right of his father, he bore the rank of firſt prince of the blood; and by this ſtation, he gave a luſtre to his title derived from the family of Mortimer, which, though of great nobility, was equalled by other families in the kingdom, and had been eclipſed by the royal deſcent of the houſe of Lancaſter. He poſſeſſed an immenſe fortune from the union of ſo many ſucceſſions, thoſe of Cambridge and York on the one hand, with thoſe of Mor-

[p] Stowe, p. 387.

timer

rimer on the other: Which laſt inheritance had before been augmented by an union of the eſtates of Clarence and Ulſter, with the patrimonial poſſeſſions of the family of Marche. The alliances too of Richard, by his marrying the daughter of Ralph Nevil, earl of Weſtmoreland, had widely extended his intereſt among the nobility, and had procured him many connexions in that formidable order. CHAP. XXI. 1450.

THE family of Nevil was perhaps at this time the moſt potent, both from their opulent poſſeſſions and from the characters of the men, that has ever appeared in England. For beſides the earl of Weſtmoreland, and the lords Latimer, Fauconberg, and Abergavenny; the earls of Saliſbury and Warwic were of that family, and were of themſelves, on many accounts, the greateſt noblemen in the kingdom. The earl of Saliſbury, brother-in-law to the duke of York, was the eldeſt ſon by a ſecond marriage of the earl of Weſtmoreland; and inherited by his wife, daughter and heir of Montacute, earl of Saliſbury, killed before Orleans, the poſſeſſions and title of that great family. His eldeſt ſon, Richard, had married Anne, the daughter and heir of Beauchamp, earl of Warwic, who died governor of France; and by that alliance he enjoyed the poſſeſſions, and had acquired the title, of that other family, one of the moſt opulent, moſt ancient, and moſt illuſtrious in England. The perſonal qualities alſo of theſe two earls, eſpecially of Warwic, enhanced the ſplendour of their nobility, and encreaſed their influence over the people. This latter nobleman, commonly known, from the ſubſequent events, by the appellation of the *King-maker*, had diſtinguiſhed himſelf, by his gallantry in the field, by the hoſpitality of his table, by the magnificence, and ſtill more by the generoſity of his expence, and by the ſpirited and bold manner which attended him in all his actions. The undeſigning frankneſs and openneſs of his character rendered his conqueſt over men's The earl of Warwic.

CHAP. XXI.

1450.

affections the more certain and infallible: His preſents were regarded as ſure teſtimonies of eſteem and friendſhip; and his profeſſions as the overflowings of his genuine ſentiments. No leſs than 30,000 perſons are ſaid to have daily lived at his board in the different manors and caſtles which he poſſeſſed in England: The military men, allured by his munificence and hoſpitality, as well as by his bravery, were zealouſly attached to his intereſts: The people in general bore him an unlimited affection: His numerous retainers were more devoted to his will, than to the prince or to the laws: And he was the greateſt, as well as the laſt, of thoſe mighty barons, who formerly overawed the crown, and rendered the people incapable of any regular ſyſtem of civil government.

But the duke of York, beſides the family of Nevil, had many other partizans among the great nobility. Courtney, earl of Devonſhire, deſcended from a very noble family of that name in France, was attached to his intereſts: Moubray, duke of Norfolk, had, from his hereditary hatred to the family of Lancaſter, embraced the ſame party: And the diſcontents, which univerſally prevailed among the people, rendered every combination of the great the more dangerous to the eſtabliſhed government.

Though the people were never willing to grant the ſupplies neceſſary for keeping poſſeſſion of the conquered provinces in France, they repined extremely at the loſs of theſe boaſted acquiſitions; and fancied, becauſe a ſudden irruption could make conqueſts, that, without ſteady counſels and a uniform expence, it was poſſible to maintain them. The voluntary ceſſion of Maine to the queen's uncle, had made them ſuſpect treachery in the loſs of Normandy and Guienne. They ſtill conſidered Margaret as a French woman and a latent enemy of the kingdom. And when they ſaw her father and all her relations active

in

CHAP. XXI. 1450.

in promoting the ſucceſs of the French, they could not be perſuaded, that ſhe, who was all powerful in the Engliſh council, would very zealouſly oppoſe them in their enterprizes.

But the moſt fatal blow, given to the popularity of the crown and to the intereſts of the houſe of Lancaſter, was by the aſſaſſination of the virtuous duke of Gloceſter, whoſe character, had he been alive, would have kept in awe the partizans of York, but whoſe memory, being extremely cheriſhed by the people, ſerved to throw an odium on all his murderers. By this event, the reigning family ſuffered a double prejudice: It was deprived of its firmeſt ſupport; and it was loaded with all the infamy of that imprudent and barbarous aſſaſſination.

As the duke of Suffolk was known to have had an active hand in this crime, he partook deeply of the hatred attending it; and the clamours, which neceſſarily roſe againſt him, as prime miniſter and declared favourite of the queen, were thereby augmented to a ten-fold pitch, and became abſolutely uncontrolable. The great nobility could ill brook to ſee a ſubject exalted above them; much more one who was only great grandſon to a merchant, and who was of a birth ſo much inferior to theirs. The people complained of his arbitrary meaſures; which were, in ſome degree, a neceſſary conſequence of the irregular power then poſſeſſed by the prince, but which the leaſt diſaffection eaſily magnified into tyranny. The great acquiſitions, which he daily made, were the object of envy; and as they were gained at the expence of the crown, which was itſelf reduced to poverty, they appeared on that account, to all indifferent perſons, the more exceptionable and invidious.

The revenues of the crown, which had long been diſproportioned to its power and dignity, had been extremely dilapidated during the minority of Henry [q]; both by the

[q] Cotton, p. 609.

CHAP. XXI.

1450.

rapacity of the courtiers, which the king's uncles could not controul, and by the neceſſary expences of the French war, which had always been very ill ſupplied by the grants of parliament. The royal demeſnes were diſſipated; and at the ſame time the king was loaded with a debt of 372,000 pounds, a ſum ſo great, that the parliament could never think of diſcharging it. This unhappy ſituation forced the miniſters upon many arbitrary meaſures: The houſehold itſelf could not be ſupported without ſtretching to the utmoſt the right of purveyance, and rendering it a kind of univerſal robbery upon the people: The public clamour roſe high upon this occaſion, and no one had the equity to make allowance for the neceſſity of the king's ſituation. Suffolk, once become odious, bore the blame of the whole; and every grievance, in every part of the adminiſtration, was univerſally imputed to his tyranny and injuſtice.

Impeachment of the duke of Suffolk,

THIS nobleman, ſenſible of the public hatred under which he laboured, and foreſeeing an attack from the commons, endeavoured to overawe his enemies, by boldly preſenting himſelf to the charge, and by inſiſting upon his own innocence, and even upon his merits and thoſe of his family in the public ſervice. He roſe in the houſe of peers; took notice of the clamours propagated againſt him; and complained, that, after ſerving the crown in thirty-four campaigns; after living abroad ſeventeen years without once returning to his native country; after loſing a father and three brothers in the wars with France; after being himſelf a priſoner, and purchaſing his liberty by a large ranſom; it ſhould yet be ſuſpected, that he had been debauched from his allegiance by that enemy whom he had ever oppoſed with ſuch zeal and fortitude, and that he had betrayed his prince, who had rewarded his ſervices by the higheſt honours and greateſt offices, that it was in his power to confer [r]. This ſpeech did not an-

[r] Cotton, p. 641.

ſwer

CHAP. XXI. 1450.

swer the purpose intended. The commons, rather provoked at his challenge, opened their charge against him, and sent up to the peers an accusation of high treason, divided into several articles. They insisted, that he had persuaded the French king to invade England with an armed force, in order to depose the king, and to place on the throne his own son, John de la Pole, whom he intended to marry to Margaret, the only daughter of the late John, duke of Somerset, and to whom, he imagined, he would by that means acquire a title to the crown: That he had contributed to the release of the duke of Orleans, in hopes, that that prince would assist king Charles in expelling the English from France, and recovering full possession of his kingdom: That he had afterwards encouraged that monarch to make open war on Normandy and Guienne, and had promoted his conquests by betraying the secrets of England, and obstructing the succours proposed to be sent over to those provinces: And that he had, without any powers or commission, promised by treaty to cede the province of Maine to Charles of Anjou, and had accordingly ceded it; which proved in the issue the chief cause of the loss of Normandy [s].

It is evident, from a review of these articles, that the commons adopted without enquiry all the popular clamours against the duke of Suffolk, and charged him with crimes, of which none but the vulgar could seriously believe him guilty. Nothing can be more incredible, than that a nobleman, so little eminent by his birth and character, could think of acquiring the crown to his family, and of deposing Henry by foreign force, and, together with him, Margaret, his patron, a princess of so much spirit and penetration. Suffolk appealed to many noblemen in the house, who knew, that he had intended to

[s] Cotton, p. 642. Hall, fol. 157. Hollingshed, p. 631. Graston, p. 607.

marry

CHAP. XXI.

1450. marry his ſon to one of the co-heirs of the earl of Warwic, and was diſappointed in his views, only by the death of that lady: And he obſerved, that Margaret of Somerſet could bring to her huſband no title to the crown; becauſe ſhe herſelf was not ſo much as comprehended in the entail, ſettled by act of parliament. It is eaſy to account for the loſs of Normandy and Guienne, from the ſituation of affairs in the two kingdoms, without ſuppoſing any treachery in the Engliſh miniſters; and it may ſafely be affirmed, that greater vigour was requiſite to defend theſe provinces from the arms of Charles VII. than to conquer them at firſt from his predeceſſor. It could never be the intereſt of any Engliſh miniſter to betray and abandon ſuch acquiſitions; much leſs of one, who was ſo well eſtabliſhed in his maſter's favour, who enjoyed ſuch high honours and ample poſſeſſions in his own country, who had nothing to dread but the effects of popular hatred, and who could never think, without the moſt extreme reluctance, of becoming a fugitive and exile in a foreign land. The only article, which carries any face of probability, is his engagement for the delivery of Maine to the queen's uncle: But Suffolk maintained, with great appearance of truth, that this meaſure was known and conſented to by ſeveral at the council board [t]; and it ſeems hard to aſcribe to it, as is done by the parliament, the ſubſequent loſs of Normandy and expulſion of the Engliſh. Normandy lay open on every ſide to the invaſion of the French: Maine, an inland province, muſt ſoon after have fallen without any attack: And as the Engliſh poſſeſſed in other parts more fortreſſes than they could garriſon or provide for, it ſeemed no bad policy to contract their force, and to render the defence practicable, by reducing it into a narrower compaſs.

[t] Cotton, p. 643.

CHAP. XXI.

1450.

THE commons were probably ſenſible, that this charge of treaſon againſt Suffolk would not bear a ſtrict ſcrutiny; and they, therefore, ſoon after, ſent up, againſt him, a new charge of miſdemeanors, which they alſo divided into ſeveral articles. They affirmed, among other imputations, that he had procured exorbitant grants from the crown, had embezzled the public money, had conferred offices on improper perſons, had perverted juſtice by maintaining iniquitous cauſes, and had procured pardons for notorious offenders [u]. The articles are moſtly general; but are not improbable: And as Suffolk ſeems to have been a bad man and a bad miniſter, it will not be raſh in us to think, that he was guilty, and that many of theſe articles could have been proved againſt him. The court was alarmed at the proſecution of a favourite miniſter, who lay under ſuch a load of popular prejudices; and an expedient was fallen upon to ſave him from preſent ruin. The king ſummoned all the lords, ſpiritual and temporal, to his apartment: The priſoner was produced before them, and aſked what he could ſay in his own defence: He denied the charge; but ſubmitted to the king's mercy: Henry expreſſed himſelf not ſatisfied with regard to the firſt impeachment for treaſon; but in conſideration of the ſecond for miſdemeanors, he declared, that, by virtue of Suffolk's own ſubmiſſion, not by any judicial authority, he baniſhed him the kingdom during five years. The lords remained ſilent; but as ſoon as they returned to their own houſe, they entered a proteſt, that this ſentence ſhould nowiſe infringe their privileges, and that, if Suffolk had inſiſted upon his right, and had not ſubmitted voluntarily to the king's commands, he was intitled to a trial by his peers in parliament.

His baniſhment,

IT was eaſy to ſee, that theſe irregular proceedings were meant to favour Suffolk, and that, as he ſtill poſ-

[u] Cotton, p. 643.

ſeſſed

CHAP. XXI.

1450.

ſeſſed the queen's confidence, he would, on the firſt favourable opportunity, be reſtored to his country, and be re-inſtated in his former power and credit. A captain of a veſſel was therefore employed by his enemies to intercept him in his paſſage to France: He was ſeized near Dover; his head ſtruck off on the ſide of a long boat; and his body thrown into the ſea [w]. No enquiry was made after the actors and accomplices in this atrocious deed of violence.

and death.

THE duke of Somerſet ſucceeded to Suffolk's power in the miniſtry, and credit with the queen; and as he was the perſon, under whoſe government the French provinces had been loſt, the public, who always judge by the event, ſoon made him equally the object of their animoſity and hatred. The duke of York was abſent in Ireland during all theſe tranſactions; and however it might be ſuſpected, that his partizans had excited and ſupported the proſecution againſt Suffolk, no immediate ground of complaint could, on that account, lie againſt him. But there happened ſoon after an incident, which rouſed the jealouſy of the court, and diſcovered to them the extreme danger, to which they were expoſed, from the pretenſions of that popular prince.

THE humours of the people, ſet afloat by the parliamentary impeachment, and by the fall of ſo great a favourite as Suffolk, broke out in various commotions, which were ſoon ſuppreſſed; but there aroſe one in Kent, which was attended with more dangerous conſequences. A man of low condition, one John Cade, a native of Ireland, who had been obliged to fly into France for crimes, obſerved, on his return to England, the diſcontents of the people; and he laid on them the foundation of projects, which were at firſt crowned with ſurpriſing

Popular inſurrections.

[w] Hall, fol. 158. Hiſt. Croyland. contin. p. 525. Stowe, p. 388. Grafton, p. 610.

ſucceſs.

CHAP. XXI.

1450.

ſucceſs. He took the name of John Mortimer; intending, as is ſuppoſed, to paſs himſelf for a ſon of that Sir John Mortimer, who had been ſentenced to death by parliament, and executed, in the beginning of this reign, without any trial or evidence, merely upon an indictment of high treaſon, given in againſt him [x]. On the firſt mention of that popular name, the common people of Kent, to the number of 20,000, flocked to Cade's ſtandard; and he excited their zeal by publiſhing complaints againſt the numerous abuſes in government, and demanding a redreſs of grievances. The court, not yet fully ſenſible of the danger, ſent a ſmall force againſt the rioters, under the command of Sir Humphrey Stafford, who was defeated and ſlain in an action near Sevenoke [y]; and Cade, advancing with his followers towards London, encamped on Black-heath. Though elated by his victory, he ſtill maintained the appearance of moderation; and ſending to the court a plauſible liſt of grievances [z], he promiſed, that, when theſe ſhould be redreſſed, and when lord Say, the treaſurer, and Cromer, ſheriff of Kent, ſhould be puniſhed for their malverſations, he would immediately lay down his arms. The council, who obſerved that nobody was willing to fight againſt men ſo reaſonable in their pretenſions, carried the king, for preſent ſafety, to Kenilworth; and the city immediately opened its gates to Cade, who maintained, during ſome time, great order and diſcipline among his followers. He al-

[x] Stowe, p. 364. Cotton, p. 564. This author admires, that ſuch a piece of injuſtice ſhould have been committed in peaceable times: He might have added, and by ſuch virtuous princes as Bedford and Gloceſter. But it is to be preſumed, that Mortimer was guilty; though his condemnation was highly irregular and illegal. The people had at this time a very feeble ſenſe of law and a conſtitution; and power was very imperfectly reſtrained by theſe limits. When the proceedings of a parliament were ſo irregular, it is eaſy to imagine, that thoſe of a king would be more ſo.

[y] Hall, fol. 159. Holingſhed, p. 634. [z] Stowe, p. 388, 389. Holingſhed, p. 633.

ways

CHAP. XXI.

1450. ways led them out into the fields during the night-time; and publiſhed ſevere edicts againſt plunder and violence of every kind: But being obliged, in order to gratify their malevolence againſt Say and Cromer, to put theſe men to death without a legal trial [a]; he found, that, after the commiſſion of this crime, he was no longer maſter of their riotous diſpoſition, and that all his orders were neglected [b]. They broke into a rich houſe, which they plundered; and the citizens, alarmed at this act of violence, ſhut their gates againſt them, and being ſeconded by a detachment of ſoldiers, ſent them by lord Scales, governor of the Tower, they repulſed the rebels with great ſlaughter [c]. The Kentiſhmen were ſo diſcouraged by this blow, that, upon receiving a general pardon from the primate, then chancellor, they retreated towards Rocheſter, and there diſperſed. The pardon was ſoon after annulled, as extorted by violence: A price was ſet on Cade's head [d], who was killed by one Iden, a gentleman of Suſſex; and many of his followers were capitally puniſhed for their rebellion.

It was imagined by the court, that the duke of York had ſecretly inſtigated Cade to this attempt, in order to try, by that experiment, the diſpoſitions of the people towards his title and family [e]: And as the event had, ſo far, ſucceeded to his wiſh, the ruling party had greater reaſon than ever to apprehend the future conſequences of his pretenſions. At the ſame time, they heard that he intended to return from Ireland; and fearing that he meant to bring an armed force along with him, they iſſued orders, in the king's name, for oppoſing him, and for debarring him entrance into England [f]. But the duke refuted his enemies by coming attended with no more than

a Grafton, p. 612. b Hall, fol. 160. c Hiſt. Croyl. contin. p. 526. d Rymer, vol. xi. p. 275. e Cotton, p. 661. Stowe, p. 391. f Stowe, p. 394.

his

his ordinary retinue: The precautions of the miniſters ſerved only to ſhew him their jealouſy and malignity againſt him: He was ſenſible, that his title, by being dangerous to the king, was alſo become dangerous to himſelf: He now ſaw the impoſſibility of remaining in his preſent ſituation, and the neceſſity of proceeding forward in ſupport of his claim. His partizans, therefore, were inſtructed to maintain, in all companies, his right by ſucceſſion, and by the eſtabliſhed laws and conſtitution of the kingdom: Theſe queſtions became every day, more and more, the ſubject of converſation: The minds of men were inſenſibly ſharpened againſt each other by diſputes, before they came to more dangerous extremities: And various topics were pleaded in ſupport of the pretenſions of each party. CHAP. XXI. 1450.

The parties of Lancaſter and York.

THE partizans of the houſe of Lancaſter maintained, that, though the elevation of Henry IV. might at firſt be deemed ſomewhat irregular, and could not be juſtified by any of thoſe principles on which that prince choſe to reſt his title, it was yet founded on general conſent, was a national act, and was derived from the voluntary approbation of a free people, who, being looſened from their allegiance by the tyranny of the preceding government, were moved, by gratitude, as well as by a ſenſe of public intereſt, to entruſt the ſceptre into the hands of their deliverer: That, even if that eſtabliſhment were allowed to be at firſt invalid, it had acquired ſolidity by time; the only principle which ultimately gives authority to government, and removes thoſe ſcruples, which the irregular ſteps, attending almoſt all revolutions, naturally excite in the minds of the people: That the right of ſucceſſion was a rule admitted only for general good, and for the maintenance of public order; and could never be pleaded to the overthrow of national tranquillity, and the ſubverſion of regular eſtabliſhments: That

CHAP. XXI. 1450. That the principles of liberty, no less than the maxims of internal peace, were injured by these pretensions of the house of York; and if so many re-iterated acts of the legislature, by which the crown was entailed on the present family, were now invalidated, the English nation must be considered, not as a free people, who could dispose of their own government, but as a troop of slaves, who were implicitly transmitted by succession from one master to another: That the nation was bound to allegiance under the house of Lancaster by moral, no less than by political duty; and were they to infringe those numerous oaths of fealty, which they had sworn to Henry and his predecessors, they would thenceforth be so thrown loose from all principles, that it would be found difficult ever after to fix and restrain them: That the duke of York himself had frequently done homage to the king as his lawful sovereign, and had thereby, in the most solemn manner, made an indirect renunciation of those claims, with which he now dares to disturb the tranquillity of the public: That, even though the violation of the rights of blood, made on the deposition of Richard, was perhaps rash and imprudent, it was too late to remedy the mischief; the danger of a disputed succession could no longer be obviated; the people, accustomed to a government, which, in the hands of the late king, had been so glorious, and in that of his predecessor, so prudent and salutary, would still ascribe a right to it; by causing multiplied disorders, and by shedding an inundation of blood, the advantage would only be obtained, of exchanging one pretender for another; and the house of York itself, if established on the throne, would, on the first opportunity, be exposed to those revolutions, which the giddy spirit, excited in the people, gave so much reason to apprehend: And that, though the present king enjoyed not the shining talents, which had appeared in

in his father and grandfather, he might ſtill have a ſon, who ſhould be endowed with them; he is himſelf eminent for the moſt harmleſs and inoffenſive manners; and if active princes were dethroned on pretence of tyranny, and indolent ones on the plea of incapacity, there would thenceforth remain in the conſtitution no ſettled and eſtabliſhed rule of obedience to any ſovereign. CHAP. XXI. 1450.

THESE ſtrong topics, in favour of the houſe of Lancaſter, were oppoſed by arguments no leſs convincing on the ſide of the houſe of York. The partizans of this latter family aſſerted, that the maintenance of order in the ſucceſſion of princes, far from doing injury to the people, or invalidating their fundamental title to good government, was eſtabliſhed only for the purpoſes of government, and ſerved to prevent thoſe numberleſs confuſions, which muſt enſue, if no rule were followed but the uncertain and diſputed views of preſent convenience and advantage: That the ſame maxims, which enſured the public peace, were alſo ſalutary to national liberty; the privileges of the people could only be maintained by the obſervance of laws; and if no account were made of the rights of the ſovereign, it could leſs be expected, that any regard would be paid to the property and freedom of the ſubject: That it was never too late to correct any pernicious precedent; an unjuſt eſtabliſhment, the longer it ſtood, acquired the greater ſanction and validity; it could, with more appearance of reaſon, be pleaded as an authority for a like injuſtice; and the maintenance of it, inſtead of favouring public tranquillity, tended to diſjoint every principle, by which human ſociety was ſupported: That uſurpers would be happy, if their preſent poſſeſſion of power, or their continuance for a few years, could convert them into legal princes; but nothing would be more miſerable than the people, if all reſtraints on violence and ambition were thus

CHAP. XXI. 1450.

removed, and a full ſcope given to the attempts of every turbulent innovator: That time indeed might beſtow ſolidity on a government, whoſe firſt foundations were the moſt infirm; but it required both a long courſe of time to produce this effect, and the total extinction of thoſe claimants, whoſe title was built on the original principles of the conſtitution: That the depoſition of Richard II. and the advancement of Henry IV. were not deliberate national acts; but the reſult of the levity and violence of the people, and proceeded from thoſe very defects in human nature, which the eſtabliſhment of political ſociety, and of an order in ſucceſſion, was calculated to prevent: That the ſubſequent entails of the crown were a continuance of the ſame violence and uſurpation; they were not ratified by the legiſlature, ſince the conſent of the rightful king was ſtill wanting; and the acquieſcence, firſt of the family of Mortimer, then of the family of York, proceeded from preſent neceſſity, and implied no renunciation of their pretenſions: That the reſtoration of the true order of ſucceſſion could not be conſidered as a change, which familiarized the people to revolutions; but as the correction of a former change, which had itſelf encouraged the giddy ſpirit of innovation, rebellion, and diſobedience: And that, as the original title of Lancaſter ſtood only, in the perſon of Henry IV. on preſent convenience, even this principle, unjuſtifiable as it was, when not ſupported by laws, and warranted by the conſtitution, had now entirely gone over to the other ſide; nor was there any compariſon between a prince utterly unable to ſway the ſcepter, and blindly governed by corrupt miniſters, or by an imperious queen, engaged in foreign and hoſtile intereſts; and a prince of mature years, of approved wiſdom and experience, a native of England, the lineal heir of the crown, who, by his reſtoration, would replace every thing on ancient foundations.

So

CHAP. XXI.

1450.

So many plauſible arguments could be urged on both ſides of this intereſting queſtion, that the people were extremely divided in their ſentiments; and though the noblemen of greateſt power and influence ſeem to have eſpouſed the party of York, the oppoſite cauſe had the advantage of being ſupported by the preſent laws, and by the immediate poſſeſſion of royal authority. There were alſo many great noblemen in the Lancaſtrian party, who balanced the power of their antagoniſts, and kept the nation in ſuſpence between them. The earl of Northumberland adhered to the preſent government: The earl of Weſtmoreland, in ſpite of his connexions with the duke of York, and with the family of Nevil, of which he was the head, was brought over to the ſame party; and the whole north of England, the moſt warlike part of the kingdom, was, by means of theſe two potent noblemen, warmly engaged in the intereſts of Lancaſter. Edmund Beaufort, duke of Somerſet, and his brother Henry, were great ſupports of that cauſe; as were alſo Henry Holland, duke of Exeter, Stafford, duke of Buckingham, the earl of Shrewſbury, the lords Clifford, Dudley, Scales, Audley, and other noblemen.

WHILE the kingdom was in this ſituation, it might naturally be expected, that ſo many turbulent barons, poſſeſſed of ſo much independant authority, would immediately have flown to arms, and have decided the quarrel, after their uſual manner, by war and battle, under the ſtandards of the contending princes. But there ſtill were many cauſes which retarded theſe deſperate extremities, and made a long train of faction, intrigue, and cabal, precede the military operations. By the gradual progreſs of arts in England, as well as in other parts of Europe, the people were now become of ſome conſequence; laws were beginning to be reſpected by them; and it was requiſite, by various pretences, previouſly to

CHAP. XXI.

reconcile their minds to the overthrow of such an ancient establishment as that of the house of Lancaster, ere their concurrence could reasonably be expected. The duke of York himself, the new claimant, was of a moderate and cautious character, an enemy to violence, and disposed to trust rather to time and policy, than to sanguinary measures, for the success of his pretensions. The very imbecillity itself of Henry tended to keep the factions in suspence, and make them stand long in awe of each other: It rendered the Lancastrian party unable to strike any violent blow against their enemies; it encouraged the Yorkists to hope, that, after banishing the king's ministers, and getting possession of his person, they might gradually undermine his authority, and be able, without the perilous experiment of a civil war, to change the succession, by parliamentary and legal authority.

1450.

1451. 6th Nov.

The dispositions, which appeared in a parliament, assembled soon after the arrival of the duke of York from Ireland, favoured these expectations of his partizans, and both discovered an unusual boldness in the commons, and were a proof of the general discontents which prevailed against the administration. The lower house, without any previous enquiry or examination, without alleging any other ground of complaint than common fame, ventured to present a petition against the duke of Somerset, the dutchess of Suffolk, the bishop of Chester, Sir John Sutton lord Dudley, and several others of inferior rank; and they prayed the king to remove them for ever from his person and councils, and to prohibit them from approaching within twelve miles of the court [a]. This was a violent attack, somewhat arbitrary, and supported but by few precedents, against the ministry; yet the king durst not entirely and openly oppose

[a] Parliamentary History, vol. ii. p. 263.

it: He replied, that, except the lords, he would baniſh all the others from court during a year, unleſs he ſhould have occaſion for their ſervice in ſuppreſſing any rebellion. At the ſame time, he rejected a bill, which had paſſed both houſes, for attainting the late duke of Suffolk, and which, in ſeveral of its clauſes, diſcovered a very general prejudice againſt the meaſures of the court. CHAP. XXI. 1451.

THE duke of York, truſting to theſe ſymptoms, raiſed an army of 10,000 men, with which he marched towards London; demanding a reformation of the government, and the removal of the duke of Somerſet from all power and authority [h]. He unexpectedly found the gates of the city ſhut againſt him; and on his retreating into Kent, he was followed by the king at the head of a ſuperior army; in which ſeveral of Richard's friends, particularly Saliſbury and Warwic, appeared; probably with a view of mediating between the parties, and of ſeconding, on occaſion, the duke of York's pretenſions. A parley enſued; Richard ſtill inſiſted upon the removal of Somerſet, and his ſubmitting to a trial in parliament: The court pretended to comply with his demand; and that nobleman was put under arreſt: The duke of York was then perſuaded to pay his reſpects to the king in his tent; and on repeating his charge againſt the duke of Somerſet, he was ſurpriſed to ſee that miniſter ſtep from behind the curtain, and offer to maintain his innocence. Richard now found, that he had been betrayed; that he was in the hands of his enemies; and that it was become neceſſary, for his own ſafety, to lower his pretenſions. No violence, however, was attempted againſt him: The nation was not in a diſpoſition to bear the deſtruction of ſo popular a prince: He had many friends in Henry's camp: And his ſon, who was not in the power of the court, 1452. The firſt armament of the duke of York.

[h] Stowe, p. 394.

CHAP. XXI.

might ſtill be able to revenge his death on all his enemies: He was therefore diſmiſſed; and he retired to his ſeat of Wigmore on the borders of Wales [i].

1452.

WHILE the duke of York lived in this retreat, there happened an incident, which, by encreaſing the public diſcontents, proved favourable to his pretenſions. Several Gaſcon lords, affectionate to the Engliſh government, and diſguſted at the new dominion of the French, came to London, and offered to return to their allegiance under Henry [k]. The earl of Shrewſbury, with a body of 8000 men, was ſent over to ſupport them. Bourdeaux opened its gates to him: He made himſelf maſter of Fronſac, Caſtillon, and ſome other places: His affairs began to wear a favourable aſpect: But as Charles haſtened to reſiſt this dangerous invaſion, the fortunes of the Engliſh were ſoon reverſed: Shrewſbury, a venerable warrior, above fourſcore years of age, fell in battle; his conqueſts were loſt; Bourdeaux was again obliged to ſubmit to the French king [l]; and all hopes of recovering the province of Gaſcony were for ever extinguiſhed.

1453.
20th July.

THOUGH the Engliſh might deem themſelves happy to be fairly rid of diſtant dominions, which were of no uſe to them, and which they never could defend againſt the growing power of France, they expreſſed great diſcontent on this occaſion; and they threw all the blame on the miniſtry, who had not been able to effect impoſſibilities. While they were in this diſpoſition, the queen's delivery of a ſon, who received the name of Edward, was deemed no joyful incident; and as it removed all hopes of the peaceable ſucceſſion of the duke of York, who was otherwiſe, in the right of his father, and by the laws enacted ſince the acceſſion of the houſe of Lancaſter, next heir to the crown, it had rather a tendency to inflame the

13th Oct.

[i] Graſton, p. 620. [k] Hollingſhed, p. 640.
[l] Polyd. Virg. p. 501. Graſton, p. 623.

quarrel

quarrel between the parties. But the duke was incapable of violent counſels; and even when no viſible obſtacle lay between him and the throne, he was prevented by his own ſcruples from mounting it. Henry, always unfit to exerciſe the government, fell at this time into a diſtemper, which ſo far encreaſed his natural imbecillity, that it rendered him incapable of maintaining even the appearance of royalty. The queen and the council, deſtitute of this ſupport, found themſelves unable to reſiſt the York party; and they were obliged to yield to the torrent. They ſent Somerſet to the Tower; and appointed Richard lieutenant of the kingdom, with powers to open and hold a ſeſſion of parliament [m]. That aſſembly alſo, taking into conſideration the ſtate of the kingdom, created him protector during pleaſure. Men, who thus entruſted ſovereign authority to one that had ſuch evident and ſtrong pretenſions to the crown, were not ſurely averſe to his taking immediate and full poſſeſſion of it: Yet the duke, inſtead of puſhing them to make farther conceſſions, appeared ſomewhat timid and irreſolute even in receiving that power which was tendered to him. He deſired, that it might be recorded in parliament, that this authority was conferred on him from their own free motion, without any application on his part: He expreſſed his hopes, that they would aſſiſt him in the exerciſe of it: He made it a condition of his acceptance, that the other lords, who were appointed to be of his council, ſhould alſo accept of that truſt, and ſhould exerciſe it: And he required, that all the powers of his office ſhould be ſpecified and defined by act of parliament. This moderation of Richard was certainly very unuſual and very amiable; yet was it attended with bad conſequences in the preſent juncture, and by giving time to the animoſities of faction

CHAP. XXI.

1454.

m Rymer, vol. xi. p. 344.

CHAP. XXI.

to rise and ferment, it proved the source of all those furious wars and commotions which ensued.

1454. The enemies of the duke of York soon found it in their power to make advantage of his excessive caution. Henry being so far recovered from his distemper, as to carry the appearance of exercising the royal power; they moved him to resume his authority, to annul the regency

1455 of the duke, to release Somerset from the Tower [n], and to commit the administration into the hands of that nobleman. Richard, sensible of the dangers which might attend his former acceptance of the parliamentary commission, should he submit to the annulling of it, levied an army; but still without advancing any pretensions to the crown. He complained only of the king's ministers, and demanded a reformation of the government. A battle

First battle of St. Albans. 22d May. was fought at St. Albans, in which the Yorkists were superior, and without suffering any material loss on their side, slew about 5000 of their enemies; among whom were the duke of Somerset, the earl of Northumberland, the earl of Stafford, eldest son of the duke of Buckingham, lord Clifford, and many other persons of distinction [o]. The king himself fell into the hands of the duke of York, who treated him with great respect and tenderness: He was only obliged (which he regarded as no hardship) to commit the whole authority of the crown into the hands of his rival.

This was the first blood spilt in that fatal quarrel, which was not finished in less than a course of thirty years, which was signalized by twelve pitched battles, which opened a scene of extraordinary fierceness and cruelty, is computed to have cost the lives of eighty princes of the blood, and almost entirely annihilated the ancient nobility of England. The strong attachments,

[n] Rymer, vol. xi. p. 361. Hollingshed, p. 642. Grafton, p. 626.
[o] Stowe, p. 309. Hollingshed, p. 643.

which,

which, at that time, men of the same kindred bore to each other, and the vindictive spirit, which was considered as a point of honour, rendered the great families implacable in their resentments, and every moment widened the breach between the parties. Yet affairs did not immediately proceed to the last extremities: The nation was kept for some time in suspense: The vigour and spirit of queen Margaret, supporting her small power, still proved a balance to the great authority of Richard, which was checked by his irresolute temper. A parliament, which was soon after assembled, plainly discovered, by the contrariety of their proceedings, the contrariety of the motives by which they were actuated. They granted the Yorkists a general indemnity; and they restored the protectorship to the duke, who, in accepting it, still persevered in all his former precautions: But at the same time, they renewed their oaths of fealty to Henry, and fixed the continuance of the protectorship to the majority of his son, Edward, who was vested with the usual dignities of prince of Wales, duke of Cornwal, and earl of Chester. The only decisive act, passed in this parliament, was a full resumption of all the grants which had been made since the death of Henry V. and which had reduced the crown to great poverty.

CHAP. XXI.

1455. 9th July.

It was not found difficult to wrest power from hands so little tenacious as those of the duke of York. Margaret, availing herself of that prince's absence, produced her husband before the house of lords; and as his state of health permitted him at that time to act his part with some tolerable decency, he declared his intentions of resuming the government, and of putting an end to Richard's authority. This measure, being unexpected, was not opposed by the contrary party: The house of lords, who were many of them disgusted with the late act of re-

1456.

CHAP. XXI.

sumption, assented to Henry's proposal: And the king was declared to be reinstated in sovereign authority.

1456. Even the duke of York acquiesced in this irregular act of the peers; and no disturbance ensued. But that prince's claim to the crown was too well known, and the steps, which he had taken to promote it, were too evident, ever to allow sincere trust and confidence to have place between

1457. the parties. The court retired to Coventry, and invited the duke of York and the earls of Salisbury and Warwic to attend the king's person. When they were on the road, they received intelligence, that designs were formed against their liberties and lives. They immediately separated themselves: Richard withdrew to his castle of Wigmore: Salisbury to Middleham in Yorkshire: And Warwic to his government of Calais, which had been committed to him after the battle of St. Albans, and which, as it gave him the command of the only regular military force maintained by England, was of the utmost importance in the present juncture. Still, men of peaceable dispositions, and among the rest Bourchier, archbishop of Canterbury, thought it not too late to interpose with their good offices, in order to prevent that effusion of blood, with which the kingdom was threatened; and the awe, in which each party stood of the other, rendered the mediation for some time successful. It was agreed, that all the great leaders on both sides should meet in London, and be solemnly reconciled.

1458. The duke of York and his partizans came thither with numerous retinues, and took up their quarters near each other for mutual security. The chieftains of the Lancastrian party used the same precaution. The mayor, at the head of 5000 men, kept a strict watch, night and day; and was extremely vigilant in maintaining peace between them [p]. Terms were adjusted, which removed

[p] Fabian Chron. anno 1458. The author says that some lords brought 500 retainers, some 600, none less than 400. See also Grafton, p. 633.

not the ground of difference. An outward reconciliation only was procured: And in order to notify this accord to the whole people, a ſolemn proceſſion to St. Paul's was appointed, where the duke of York led queen Margaret, and a chieftain of one party marched hand in hand with a chieftain of the oppoſite. The leſs real cordiality prevailed, the more were the exterior demonſtrations of amity redoubled. But it was evident, that a conteſt for a crown could not thus be peaceably accommodated; that each party watched only for an opportunity of ſubverting the other; and that much blood muſt yet be ſpilt, ere the nation could be reſtored to perfect tranquillity, or enjoy a ſettled and eſtabliſhed government. CHAP. XXI. 1458.

EVEN the ſmalleſt accident, without any formed deſign, was ſufficient, in the preſent diſpoſition of men's minds, to diſſolve the ſeeming harmony between the parties; and had the intentions of the leaders been ever ſo amicable, they would have found it difficult to reſtrain the animoſity of their followers. One of the king's retinue inſulted one of the earl of Warwic's: Their companions on both ſides took part in the quarrel: A fierce combat enſued: The earl apprehended his life to be aimed at: He fled to his government of Calais; and both parties, in every county of England, openly made preparations for deciding the conteſt by war and arms. 1459.

THE earl of Saliſbury, marching to join the duke of York, was overtaken, at Blore-heath on the borders of Staffordſhire, by lord Audley, who commanded much ſuperior forces; and a ſmall rivulet with ſteep banks ran between the armies. Saliſbury here ſupplied his defect in numbers by ſtratagem; a refinement, of which there occur few inſtances in the Engliſh civil wars, where a headlong courage, more than military conduct, is commonly Battle of Blore-heath, 23d Sept.

CHAP. XXI.

monly to be remarked. He feigned a retreat, and allured Audley to follow him with precipitation: But when the van of the royal army had paſſed the brook, Saliſbury ſuddenly turned upon them; and partly by the ſurprize, partly by the diviſion, of the enemies' forces, put this body to rout: The example of flight was followed by the reſt of the army: And Saliſbury, obtaining a complete victory, reached the general rendezvous of the Yorkiſts at Ludlow [q].

1459.

THE earl of Warwic brought over to this rendezvous a choice body of veterans from Calais, on whom, it was thought, the fortune of the war would much depend; but this reinforcement occaſioned, in the iſſue, the immediate ruin of the duke of York's party. When the royal army approached, and a general action was every hour expected, Sir Andrew Trollop, who commanded the veterans, deſerted to the king in the night-time; and the Yorkiſts were ſo diſmayed at this inſtance of treachery, which made every man ſuſpicious of his fellow, that they ſeparated next day without ſtriking a ſtroke [r]: The duke fled to Ireland: The earl of Warwic, attended by many of the other leaders, eſcaped to Calais; where his great popularity among all orders of men, particularly among the military, ſoon drew to him partizans, and rendered his power very formidable. The friends of the houſe of York in England kept themſelves every where in readineſs to riſe on the firſt ſummons from their leaders.

1460.

AFTER meeting with ſome ſucceſſes at ſea, Warwic landed in Kent, with the earl of Saliſbury, and the earl of Marche, eldeſt ſon of the duke of York; and being met by the primate, by lord Cobham, and other perſons

[q] Hollingſhed, p. 649. Grafton, p. 936.

[r] Hollingſhed, p. 650. Grafton, p. 537.

of

of distinction, he marched, amidst the acclamations of the people, to London. The city immediately opened its gates to him; and his troops encreasing on every day's march, he soon found himself in a condition to face the royal army, which hastened from Coventry to attack him. CHAP. XXI. 1460.

The battle was fought at Northampton; and was soon decided against the royalists by the infidelity of lord Grey of Ruthin, who, commanding Henry's[s] vanguard, deserted to the enemy during the heat of action, and spread a consternation through the troops. The duke of Buckingham, the earl of Shrewsbury, the lords Beaumont and Egremont, and Sir William Lucie were killed in the action or pursuit: The slaughter fell chiefly on the gentry and nobility; the common people were spared by orders of the earls of Warwic and Marche[t]. Henry himself, that empty shadow of a king, was again taken prisoner; and as the innocence and simplicity of his manners, which bore the appearance of sanctity, had procured him the tender regard of the people[t], the earl of Warwic and the other leaders took care to distinguish themselves by their respectful demeanour towards him. Battle of Northampton. 10th July.

A PARLIAMENT was summoned in the king's name, and met at Westminster; where the duke soon after appeared from Ireland. This prince had never hitherto advanced openly any claim to the crown: He had only complained of ill ministers, and demanded a redress of grievances: And even in the present crisis, when the parliament was surrounded by his victorious army, he showed such a regard to law and liberty, as is unusual during the prevalence of a party in any civil dissensions; and was still less to be expected, in those violent and licentious times. He advanced towards the throne; and being met by the archbishop of Canterbury, who asked him, whether he had yet paid his respects to the king? he replied, A parliament. 7th Oct.

[s] Stowe, p. 409. [t] Hall, fol. 169. Grafton, p. 795.

that

CHAP. XXI.

1460.

that he knew of none to whom he owed that title. He then ſtood near the throne [u], and addreſſing himſelf to the houſe of peers, he gave them a deduction of his title by deſcent, mentioned the cruelties by which the houſe of Lancaſter had paved their way to ſovereign power, inſiſted on the calamities which had attended the government of Henry, exhorted them to return into the right path, by doing juſtice to the lineal ſucceſſor, and thus pleaded his cauſe before them as his natural and legal judges [w]. This cool and moderate manner of demanding a crown, intimidated his friends and encouraged his enemies: The lords remained in ſuſpence [x]; and no one ventured to utter a word on this occaſion. Richard, who had probably expected, that the peers would have invited him to place himſelf on the throne, was much diſappointed at their ſilence; but deſiring them to reflect on what he had propoſed to them, he departed the houſe. The peers took the matter into conſideration, with as great tranquillity as if it had been a common ſubject of debate: They deſired the aſſiſtance of ſome conſiderable members among the commons in their deliberations: They heard, in ſeveral ſucceſſive days, the reaſons alleged for the duke of York: They even ventured to propoſe objections to his claim, founded on former entails of the crown, and on the oaths of fealty ſworn to the houſe of Lancaſter [y]: They alſo obſerved, that, as Richard had all along borne the arms of York, not thoſe of Clarence, he could not claim as ſucceſſor to the latter family: And after receiving anſwers to theſe objections, derived from the violence and power, by which the houſe of Lancaſter ſupported their preſent poſſeſſion of the crown, they proceeded at laſt to give a deciſion. Their ſentence was calculated, as far as poſſible, to pleaſe both parties: They

[u] Hollingſhed, p. 655.
[w] Cotton, p. 665. Grafton, p. 643.
[x] Hollingſhed, p. 657. Grafton, p. 645.
[y] Cotton, p. 666.

declared

declared the title of the duke of York to be certain and indefeasible; but in consideration that Henry had enjoyed the crown, without dispute or controversy, during the course of thirty-eight years, they determined, that he should continue to possess the title and dignity during the remainder of his life; that the administration of the government, meanwhile, should remain with Richard; that he should be acknowledged the true and lawful heir of the monarchy; that every one should swear to maintain his succession, and it should be treason to attempt his life; and that all former settlements of the crown, in this and the two last reigns, should be abrogated and rescinded [z]. The duke acquiesced in this decision: Henry himself, being a prisoner, could not oppose it: Even if he had enjoyed his liberty, he would not probably have felt any violent reluctance against it: And the act thus passed with the unanimous consent of the whole legislative body. Though the mildness of this compromise is chiefly to be ascribed to the moderation of the duke of York, it is impossible not to observe in those transactions visible marks of a higher regard to law, and of a more fixed authority, enjoyed by parliament, than has appeared in any former period of English history.

CHAP. XXI. 1460.

It is probable, that the duke, without employing either menaces or violence, could have obtained from the commons a settlement more consistent and uniform: But as many, if not all the members of the upper house, had received grants, concessions, or dignities, during the last sixty years, when the house of Lancaster was possessed of the government, they were afraid of invalidating their own titles by too sudden and violent an overthrow of that family; and in thus temporizing between the parties, they fixed the throne on a basis, upon which it could not possibly stand. The duke, apprehending his chief dan-

z Cotton, p. 666. Grafton, p. 647.

ger

CHAP. XXI.

1460.

ger to arise from the genius and spirit of queen Margaret, sought a pretence for banishing her the kingdom: He sent her, in the king's name, a summons to come immediately to London; intending, in case of her disobedience, to proceed to extremities against her. But the queen needed not this menace to excite her activity in defending the rights of her family. After the defeat at Northampton, she had fled with her infant son to Durham, and thence to Scotland; but soon returning, she applied to the northern barons, and employed every motive to procure their assistance. Her affability, insinuation, and address, qualities in which she excelled; her caresses, her promises wrought a powerful effect on every one who approached her: The admiration of her great qualities was succeeded by compassion towards her helpless condition: The nobility of that quarter, who regarded themselves as the most warlike in the kingdom, were moved by indignation to find the southern barons pretend to dispose of the crown and settle the government: And that they might allure the people to their standard, they promised them the spoils of all the provinces on the other side of the Trent. By these means, the queen had collected an army twenty thousand strong, with a celerity which was neither expected by her friends, nor apprehended by her enemies.

THE duke of York, informed of her appearance in the north, hastened thither with a body of 5000 men, to suppress, as he imagined, the beginnings of an insurrection; when, on his arrival at Wakefield, he found himself so much outnumbered by the enemy. He threw himself into Sandal castle, which was situated in the neighbourhood; and he was advised by the earl of Salisbury, and other prudent counsellors, to remain in that fortress, till his son, the earl of Marche, who was levying forces in the borders of Wales, could advance to his assistance.

CHAP. XXI.

1460.

assistance [a]. But the duke, though deficient in political courage, possessed personal bravery in an eminent degree; and notwithstanding his wisdom and experience, he thought, that he should be for ever disgraced, if, by taking shelter behind walls, he should for a moment resign the victory to a woman. He descended into the plain, and offered battle to the enemy, which was instantly accepted. The great inequality of numbers was sufficient alone to decide the victory; but the queen, by sending a detachment, who fell on the back of the duke's army, rendered her advantage still more certain and undisputed. The duke himself was killed in the action; and as his body was found among the slain, the head was cut off by Margaret's orders, and fixed on the gates of York, with a paper crown upon it, in derision of his pretended title. His son, the earl of Rutland, a youth of seventeen, was brought to lord Clifford; and that barbarian, in revenge of his father's death, who had perished in the battle of St. Albans, murdered, in cool blood, and with his own hands, this innocent prince, whose exterior figure, as well as other accomplishments, are represented by historians as extremely amiable. The earl of Salisbury was wounded and taken prisoner, and immediately beheaded, with several other persons of distinction, by martial law at Pomfret [b]. There fell near three thousand Yorkists in this battle: The duke himself was greatly and justly lamented by his own party; a prince who merited a better fate, and whose errors in conduct proceeded entirely from such qualities, as render him the more an object of esteem and affection. He perished in the fiftieth year of his age, and left behind him three sons, Edward, George, and Richard, with three daughters, Anne, Elizabeth, and Margaret.

Battle of Wakefield, 24th Dec.

Death of the duke of York.

[a] Stowe, p. 412.

[b] Polyd. Virg. p. 510.

CHAP. XXI.

1461.

THE queen, after this important victory, divided her army. She ſent the ſmaller diviſion under Jaſper Tudor, earl of Pembroke, half brother to the king, againſt Edward, the new duke of York. She herſelf marched with the larger diviſion towards London, where the earl of Warwic was left with the command of the Yorkiſts.

Battle of Mortimer's Croſs.

Pembroke was defeated by Edward at Mortimer's Croſs in Herefordſhire, with the loſs of near 4000 men: His army was diſperſed; he himſelf eſcaped by flight; but his father, Sir Owen Tudor, was taken priſoner, and immediately beheaded by Edward's orders. This barbarous practice, being once begun, was continued by both parties, from a ſpirit of revenge, which covered itſelf under the pretence of retaliation [c].

MARGARET compenſated this defeat by a victory which ſhe obtained over the earl of Warwic. That nobleman, on the approach of the Lancaſtrians, led out his army, re-inforced by a ſtrong body of the Londoners, who were affectionate to his cauſe; and he gave battle to the queen at St. Albans. While the armies were warmly engaged, Lovelace, who commanded a conſiderable body of the Yorkiſts, withdrew from the combat; and this treacherous conduct, of which there are many inſtances in thoſe civil wars, decided the victory in favour of the queen. About 2300 of the vanquiſhed periſhed in the battle and purſuit; and the perſon of the king fell again into the hands of his own party. This weak prince was ſure to be almoſt equally a priſoner whichever faction had the keeping of him; and ſcarce any more decorum was obſerved by one than by the other, in their method of treating him. Lord Bonville, to whoſe care he had been entruſted by the Yorkiſts, ſtaid with him after the defeat, on aſſurances of pardon given him by Henry: But Margaret, regardleſs of her huſband's promiſe, immediately

Second battle of St. Albans.

[c] Hollingſhed, p. 660, Grafton, p. 650.

ordered

ordered the head of that nobleman to be ſtruck off by the executioner [d]. Sir Thomas Kiriel, a brave warrior, who had ſignalized himſelf in the French wars, was treated in the ſame manner. CHAP. XX. 1461.

THE queen made no great advantage of this victory: Young Edward advanced upon her from the other ſide; and collecting the remains of Warwic's army, was ſoon in a condition of giving her battle with ſuperior forces. She was ſenſible of her danger, while ſhe lay between the enemy and the city of London; and ſhe found it neceſſary to retreat with her army to the north [e]. Edward entered the capital amidſt the acclamations of the citizens, and immediately opened a new ſcene to his party. This prince, in the bloom of youth, remarkable for the beauty of his perſon, for his bravery, his activity, his affability, and every popular quality, found himſelf ſo much poſſeſſed of public favour, that, elated with the ſpirit natural to his age, he reſolved no longer to confine himſelf within thoſe narrow limits, which his father had preſcribed to himſelf, and which had been found by experience ſo prejudicial to his cauſe. He determined to aſſume the name and dignity of king; to inſiſt openly on his claim; and thenceforth to treat the oppoſite party as traitors and rebels to his lawful authority. But as a national conſent, or the appearance of it, ſtill ſeemed, notwithſtanding his plauſible title, requiſite to precede this bold meaſure, and as the aſſembling of a parliament might occaſion too many delays, and be attended with other inconveniencies, he ventured to proceed in a leſs regular manner, and to put it out of the power of his enemies to throw obſtacles in the way of his elevation. His army was ordered to aſſemble in St. John's Fields; great numbers of people ſurrounded them; an harangue was pronounced to this mixed multitude, ſetting forth the

[d] Hollingſhed, p. 660. [e] Graſton, p. 652.

CHAP. XXI.

1461. title of Edward, and inveighing againſt the tyranny and uſurpation of the rival family; and the people were then aſked, whether they would have Henry of Lancaſter for king? They univerſally exclaimed againſt the propoſal. It was then demanded, whether they would accept of Edward, eldeſt ſon of the late duke of York? They expreſſed their conſent with loud and joyful acclamations [f].

Edward IV. aſſumes the crown.

A great number of biſhops, lords, magiſtrates, and other perſons of diſtinction were next aſſembled at Baynard's caſtle, who ratified the popular election; and the new king was on the ſubſequent day proclaimed in London, under the title of Edward IV [g].

5th March.

In this manner ended the reign of Henry VI. a monarch, who, while yet in his cradle, had been proclaimed king both of France and England, and who began his life with the moſt ſplendid proſpects that any prince in Europe had ever enjoyed. The revolution was unhappy for his people, as it was the ſource of civil wars; but was almoſt entirely indifferent to Henry himſelf, who was utterly incapable of exerciſing his authority, and who, provided he perſonally met with good uſage, was equally eaſy, as he was equally enſlaved, in the hands of his enemies and of his friends. His weakneſs and his diſputed title were the chief cauſes of the public misfortunes: But whether his queen, and his miniſters, were not alſo guilty of ſome great abuſes of power, it is not eaſy for us at this diſtance of time to determine: There remain no proofs on record of any conſiderable violation of the laws, except in the aſſaſſination of the duke of Gloceſter, which was a private crime, formed no precedent, and was but too much of a piece with the uſual ferocity and cruelty of the times.

Miſcellaneous tranſactions of this reign.

The moſt remarkable law, which paſſed in this reign, was that for the due election of members of parliament in

[f] Stowe, p. 415. Hollingſhed, p. 661. [g] Grafton, p. 653.

counties.

counties. After the fall of the feudal syſtem, the diſtinction of tenures was in ſome meaſure loſt; and every freeholder, as well thoſe who held of meſne lords, as the immediate tenants of the crown, were by degrees admitted to give their votes at elections. This innovation (for ſuch it may probably be eſteemed) was indirectly confirmed by a law of Henry IV. [h]; which gave right to ſuch a multitude of electors, as was the occaſion of great diſorder. In the eighth and tenth of this king, therefore, laws were enacted, limiting the electors to ſuch as poſſeſſed forty ſhillings a-year in land, free from all burden, within the county [i]. This ſum was equivalent to near twenty pounds a-year of our preſent money; and it were to be wiſhed, that the ſpirit, as well as letter of this law, had been maintained. CHAP. XXI. 1461.

THE preamble of the ſtatute is remarkable: "Whereas the elections of knights, have of late, in many "counties of England, been made by outrageous and "exceſſive numbers of people, many of them of ſmall "ſubſtance and value, yet pretending to a right equal to "the beſt knights and eſquires; whereby manſlaughters, "riots, batteries, and diviſions among the gentlemen "and other people of the ſame counties, ſhall very likely "riſe and be, unleſs due remedy be provided in this be-"half, &c." We may learn from theſe expreſſions what an important matter the election of a member of parliament was now become in England: That aſſembly was beginning in this period to aſſume great authority: The commons had it much in their power to enforce the execution of the laws; and if they failed of ſucceſs in this particular, it proceeded leſs from any exorbitant power of the crown, than from the licentious ſpirit of the ariſtocracy, and perhaps from the rude education of the age,

h Statutes at large, 7 Henry IV. cap. 15. cap. 7. 10 Henry VI. cap. 2.

i Ibid. 8 Henry VI.

CHAP. XXI.

and their own ignorance of the advantages reſulting from a regular adminiſtration of juſtice.

1461. When the duke of York, the earls of Saliſbury and Warwic, fled the kingdom upon the deſertion of their troops, a parliament was ſummoned at Coventry in 1460, by which they were all attainted. This parliament ſeems to have been very irregularly conſtituted, and ſcarcely deſerves the name: Inſomuch, that an act paſſed in it, "that all ſuch knights of any county, as were returned "by virtue of the king's letters, without any other elec- "tion, ſhould be valid, and that no ſheriff ſhould, for "returning them, incur the penalty of the ſtatute of "Henry IV [k]." All the acts of that parliament were afterwards reverſed; "becauſe it was unlawfully ſum- "moned, and the knights and barons not duly choſen [l]."

The parliaments in this reign, inſtead of relaxing their vigilance againſt the uſurpations of the court of Rome, endeavoured to enforce the former ſtatutes enacted for that purpoſe. The commons petitioned, that no foreigner ſhould be capable of any church preferment, and that the patron might be allowed to preſent anew upon the non-reſidence of any incumbent [m]: But the king eluded theſe petitions. Pope Martin wrote him a ſevere letter againſt the ſtatute of proviſors; which he calls an abominable ſtatute, that would infallibly damn every one who obſerved it [n]. The cardinal of Wincheſter was legate; and being alſo a kind of prime miniſter, and immenſely rich from the profits of his clerical dignities, the parliament became jealous leſt he ſhould extend the papal power; and they proteſted, that the cardinal ſhould abſent himſelf in all affairs and councils of the king, whenever the pope or ſee of Rome was touched upon [o].

[k] Cotton, p. 664.
[l] Statutes at large, 39 Henry VI. cap. 1.
[m] Cotton, p. 585.
[n] Burnet's Collection of Records, vol. i. p. 99.
[o] Cotton, p. 593.

CHAP. XXI.

1461.

PERMISSION was given by parliament to export corn when it was at low prices; wheat at ſix ſhillings and eight pence a quarter, money of that age; barley at three ſhillings and four pence [p]. It appears from theſe prices, that corn ſtill remained at near half its preſent value; though other commodities were much cheaper. The inland commerce of corn was alſo opened in the eighteenth of the king, by allowing any collector of the cuſtoms to grant a licence for carrying it from one county to another [q]. The ſame year a kind of navigation act was propoſed with regard to all places within the Streights; but the king rejected it [r].

THE firſt inſtance of debt contracted upon parliamentary ſecurity occurs in this reign [s].

[p] Statutes at large, 15 Henry VI. cap. 2. 23 Henry VI. cap. 6.
[q] Cotton, p. 625. [r] Ibid. p. 626. [s] Ibid. p. 593, 614, 638.

CHAP. XXII.

EDWARD IV.

Battle of Touton——Henry escapes into Scotland——A parliament——Battle of Hexham——Henry taken prisoner, and confined to the Tower——King's marriage with the Lady Elizabeth Gray——Warwic disgusted——Alliance with Burgundy——Insurrection in Yorkshire——Battle of Banbury——Warwic and Clarence banished——Warwic and Clarence return——Edward IV. *expelled——Henry* VI. *restored——Edward* IV. *returns——Battle of Barnet, and death of Warwic——Battle of Teukesbury, and murder of prince Edward——Death of Henry* VI.*——Invasion of France——Peace of Pecquigni——Trial and execution of the duke of Clarence——Death and character of Edward* IV.

CHAP. XXII. 1461. YOUNG Edward, now in his twentieth year, was of a temper well fitted to make his way through such a scene of war, havoc, and devastation, as must conduct him to the full possession of that crown, which he claimed from hereditary right, but which he had assumed from the tumultuary election alone of his own party. He was bold, active, enterprising; and his hardness of heart and severity of character rendered him impregnable to all those movements of compassion, which might relax his vigour in the prosecution of the most bloody revenges upon his enemies. The very commence-

ment

ment of his reign gave ſymptoms of his ſanguinary diſpoſition. A tradeſman of London, who kept ſhop at the ſign of the crown, having ſaid, that he would make his ſon heir to the Crown; this harmleſs pleaſantry was interpreted to be ſpoken in deriſion of Edward's aſſumed title; and he was condemned and executed for the offence [t]. Such an act of tyranny was a proper prelude to the events which enſued. The ſcaffold, as well as the field, inceſſantly ſtreamed with the nobleſt blood of England, ſpilt in the quarrel between the two contending families, whoſe animoſity was now become implacable. The people, divided in their affections, took different ſymbols of party: The partizans of the houſe of Lancaſter choſe the red roſe as their mark of diſtinction; thoſe of York were denominated from the white; and theſe civil wars were thus known, over Europe, by the name of the quarrel between the two roſes. CHAP. XXII. 1461.

THE licence, in which queen Margaret had been obliged to indulge her troops, infuſed great terror and averſion into the city of London and all the ſouthern parts of the kingdom; and as ſhe there expected an obſtinate reſiſtance, ſhe prudently retired northwards among her own partizans. The ſame licence, joined to the zeal of faction, ſoon brought great multitudes to her ſtandard; and ſhe was able, in a few days, to aſſemble an army ſixty thouſand ſtrong in Yorkſhire. The king and the earl of Warwic haſtened, with an army of forty thouſand men, to check her progreſs; and when they reached Pomfret, they diſpatched a body of troops, under the command of lord Fitzwalter, to ſecure the paſſage of Ferrybridge over the river Are, which lay between them and the enemy. Fitzwalter took poſſeſſion of the poſt aſſigned him; but was not able to maintain it againſt lord Clifford, who attacked him with ſuperior numbers. The

[t] Habington in Kennet, p. 431. Grafton, p. 791.

Yorkiſts

CHAP. XXII.

1461.

Yorkists were chased back with great slaughter; and lord Fitzwalter himself was slain in the action [u]. The earl of Warwic, dreading the consequences of this misfortune, at a time when a decisive action was every hour expected, immediately ordered his horse to be brought him, which he stabbed before the whole army; and kissing the hilt of his sword, swore, that he was determined to share the fate of the meanest soldier [w]. And to shew the greater security, a proclamation was at the same time issued, giving to every one full liberty to retire; but menacing the severest punishment to those who should discover any symptoms of cowardice in the ensuing battle [x]. Lord Falconberg was sent to recover the post which had been lost: He passed the river some miles above Ferrybridge, and falling unexpectedly on lord Clifford, revenged the former disaster by the defeat of the party and the death of their leader [y].

Battle of Touton. 29th of March.

THE hostile armies met at Touton; and a fierce and bloody battle ensued. While the Yorkists were advancing to the charge, there happened a great fall of snow, which, driving full in the faces of their enemies, blinded them; and this advantage was improved by a stratagem of lord Falconberg. That nobleman ordered some infantry to advance before the line, and after having sent a volley of flight-arrows, as they were called, amidst the enemy, immediately to retire. The Lancastrians, imagining that they were got within reach of the opposite army, discharged all their arrows, which thus fell short of the Yorkists [z]. After the quivers of the enemy were emptyed, Edward advanced his line, and did execution with impunity on the dismayed Lancastrians: The bow however was soon laid aside, and the sword decided the

[u] W. Wyrcester, p. 489. Hall, fol. 186. Holingshed, p. 664.
[w] Habington, p. 432. [x] Holingshed, p. 664. [y] Hist. Croyl. contin. p. 532. [z] Hall, fol. 186.

combat,

CHAP. XXII.

1461.

combat, which ended in a total victory on the side of the Yorkists. Edward issued orders to give no quarter [a]: The routed army was pursued to Tadcaster with great bloodshed and confusion; and above thirty-six thousand men are computed to have fallen in the battle and pursuit [b]: Among these were the earl of Westmoreland, and his brother, Sir John Nevil, the earl of Northumberland, the lords Dacres and Welles, and Sir Andrew Trollop [c]. The earl of Devonshire, who was now engaged in Henry's party, was brought a prisoner to Edward; and was soon after beheaded by martial law at York. His head was fixed on a pole erected over a gate of that city; and the head of duke Richard and that of the earl of Salisbury were taken down, and buried with their bodies. Henry and Margaret had remained at York during the action; but learning the defeat of their army, and being sensible, that no place in England could now afford them shelter, they fled with great precipitation into Scotland. They were accompanied by the duke of Exeter, who, though he had married Edward's sister, had taken part with the Lancastrians, and by Henry duke of Somerset, who had commanded in the unfortunate battle of Touton, and who was the son of that nobleman killed in the first battle of St. Albans.

Henry escapes into Scotland.

NOTWITHSTANDING the great animosity which prevailed between the kingdoms, Scotland had never exerted itself with vigour, to take advantage, either of the wars which England carried on with France, or of the civil commotions which arose between the contending families. James I. more laudably employed, in civilizing his subjects, and taming them to the salutary yoke of law and justice, avoided all hostilities with foreign nations; and though he seemed interested to maintain a balance be-

[a] Habington, p. 432. Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 533.

[b] Holingshed, p. 665. Grafton, p. 656.

[c] Hall, fol. 187. Habington, p. 433.

twee

CHAP. XXII. 1461.

tween France and England, he gave no farther assistance to the former kingdom in its greatest distresses, than permitting, and perhaps encouraging, his subjects to enlist in the French service. After the murder of that excellent prince, the minority of his son and successor, James II. and the distractions incident to it, retained the Scots in the same state of neutrality; and the superiority, visibly acquired by France, rendered it then unnecessary for her ally to interpose in her defence. But when the quarrel commenced between the houses of York and Lancaster, and became absolutely incurable but by the total extinction of one party; James, who had now risen to man's estate, was tempted to seize this opportunity, and he endeavoured to recover those places, which the English had formerly conquered from his ancestors. He laid siege to the castle of Roxborough in 1460, and had provided himself with a small train of artillery for that enterprize: But his cannon were so ill framed, that one of them burst as he was firing it, and put an end to his life in the flower of his age. His son and successor, James III. was also a minor on his accession: The usual distractions ensued in the government: The queen-dowager, Anne of Gueldres, aspired to the regency: The family of Douglas opposed her pretensions: And queen Margaret, when she fled into Scotland, found there a people little less divided by faction, than those by whom she had been expelled. Though she pleaded the connexions between the royal family of Scotland and the house of Lancaster, by the young king's grandmother, a daughter of the earl of Somerset; she could engage the Scottish council to go no farther than to express their good wishes in her favour: But on her offer to deliver to them immediately the important fortress of Berwic, and to contract her son in marriage with a sister of king James, she found a better reception; and the Scots promised

promiſed the aſſiſtance of their arms to re-inſtate her family upon the throne [d]. But as the danger from that quarter ſeemed not very urgent to Edward, he did not purſue the fugitive king and queen into their retreat; but returned to London, where a parliament was ſummoned for ſettling the government. CHAP. XXII. 1461.

On the meeting of this aſſembly, Edward found the good effects of his vigorous meaſure in aſſuming the crown, as well as of his victory at Touton, by which he had ſecured it: The parliament no longer heſitated between the two families, or propoſed any of thoſe ambiguous deciſions, which could only ſerve to perpetuate and inflame the animoſities of party. They recognized the title of Edward, by hereditary deſcent, through the family of Mortimer; and declared, that he was king by right, from the death of his father, who had alſo the ſame lawful title; and that he was in poſſeſſion of the crown from the day that he aſſumed the government, tendered to him by the acclamations of the people [e]. They expreſſed their abhorrence of the uſurpation and intruſion of the houſe of Lancaſter, particularly that of the earl of Derby, otherwiſe called Henry IV. which, they ſaid, had been attended with every kind of diſorder, the murder of the ſovereign and the oppreſſion of the ſubject. They annulled every grant which had paſſed in thoſe reigns; they reinſtated the king in all the poſſeſſions, which had belonged to the crown at the pretended depoſition of Richard II. and though they confirmed judicial deeds and the decrees of inferior courts, they reverſed all attainders paſſed in any pretended parliament; particularly the attainder of the earl of Cambridge, the king's grandfather; as well as that of the earls of Saliſbury and Gloceſter and of lord Lumley, who had been forfeited for adhering to Richard II. [f] 4th Nov. A parliament.

[d] Hall, fol. 137. Habington, p. 434. [e] Cotton, p. 670.
[f] Cotton, p. 672. Statutes at large, 1 Edw. IV. cap. 1.

MANY

CHAP. XXII.

1461.

MANY of these votes were the result of the usual violence of party: The common sense of mankind, in more peaceable times, repealed them: And the statutes of the house of Lancaster, being the deeds of an established government, and enacted by princes long possessed of authority, have always been held as valid and obligatory. The parliament, however, in subverting such deep foundations, had still the pretence of replacing the government on its ancient and natural basis: But in their subsequent measures, they were more guided by revenge, or at least the views of convenience, than by the maxims of equity and justice. They passed an act of forfeiture and attainder against Henry VI. and queen Margaret, and their infant son, prince Edward: The same act was extended to the dukes of Somerset and Exeter; to the earls of Northumberland, Devonshire, Pembroke, Wilts; to the viscount Beaumont, the lords Roos, Nevil, Clifford, Welles, Dacre, Gray of Rugemont, Hungerford; to Alexander Hedie, Nicholas Latimer, Edmond Mountfort, John Heron, and many other persons of distinction [g]. The parliament vested the estates of all these attainted persons in the crown; though their sole crime was the adhering to a prince, whom every individual of the parliament had long recognized, and whom that very king himself, who was now seated on the throne, had acknowledged and obeyed as his lawful sovereign.

THE necessity of supporting the government established will more fully justify some other acts of violence; though the method of conducting them may still appear exceptionable. John earl of Oxford and his son, Aubrey de Vere, were detected in a correspondence with Margaret, were tried by martial law before the constable, were condemned and executed [h]. Sir William Tyrrel,

[g] Cotton, p. 670. W. Wyrcester, p. 490.

[h] W. de Wyrcester, p. 492. Hall, fol. 189. Grafton, p. 658. Fabian, fol. 215. Fragm. ad finem T. Sproti.

Sir Thomas Tudenham, and John Montgomery were convicted in the same arbitrary court; were executed, and their estates forfeited. This introduction of martial law into civil government was a high strain of prerogative; which, were it not for the violence of the times, would probably have appeared exceptionable to a nation so jealous of their liberties as the English were now become [i]. It was impossible but such a great and sudden revolution must leave the roots of discontent and dissatisfaction in the subject, which would require great art, or in lieu of it, great violence to extirpate them. The latter was more suitable to the genius of the nation in that uncultivated age. CHAP. XXII. 1461.

But the new establishment still seemed precarious and uncertain; not only from the domestic discontents of the people, but from the efforts of foreign powers. Lewis, the eleventh of the name, had succeeded to his father, Charles, in 1460; and was led, from the obvious motives of national interest, to feed the flames of civil discord among such dangerous neighbours, by giving support to the weaker party. But the intriguing and politic genius of this prince was here checked by itself: Having attempted to subdue the independant spirit of his own vassals, he had excited such an opposition at home, as prevented him from making all the advantage, which the opportunity afforded, of the dissensions among the English. He sent however a small body to Henry's assistance under Varenne, Seneschal of Normandy [k]; who landed in Northumberland, and got possession of the castle of Alnewic: But as the indefatigable Margaret went in person to France where she solicited larger supplies; and promised Lewis to deliver up Calais, if her family should by his means be restored to the throne of England; he 1462.

[i] See note [H] at the end of the volume.

[k] Monstrelet, vol. iii. p. 95.

was

CHAP. XXII.

1464. was perſuaded to ſend along with her a body of 2000 men at arms, which enabled her to take the field, and to make an inroad into England. Though reinforced by a numerous train of adventurers from Scotland, and by many partizans of the family of Lancaſter; ſhe received a check at Hedgley-more from lord Montacute or Montague, brother to the earl of Warwic, and warden of the eaſt Marches between Scotland and England. Montague was ſo elated with this ſucceſs, that, while a numerous reinforcement was on their march to join him by orders from Edward, he yet ventured, with his own troops alone, to attack the Lancaſtrians at Hexham; and he obtained a complete victory over them. The duke of Somerſet, the lords Roos, and Hungerford, were taken in the purſuit, and immediately beheaded by martial law at Hexham. Summary juſtice was in like manner exerciſed at Newcaſtle on Sir Humphrey Nevil, and ſeveral other gentlemen. All thoſe who were ſpared in the field, ſuffered on the ſcaffold; and the utter extermination of their adverſaries was now become the plain object of the York party; a conduct, which received but too plauſible an apology from the preceding practice of the Lancaſtrians.

25th April.

Battle of Hexham. 15th May.

THE fate of the unfortunate royal family, after this defeat, was ſingular. Margaret, flying with her ſon into a foreſt, where ſhe endeavoured to conceal herſelf, was beſet, during the darkneſs of the night, by robbers, who, either ignorant or regardleſs of her quality, deſpoiled her of her rings and jewels, and treated her with the utmoſt indignity. The partition of this rich booty raiſed a quarrel among them; and while their attention was thus engaged, ſhe took the opportunity of making her eſcape with her ſon into the thickeſt of the foreſt, where ſhe wandered for ſome time, over-ſpent with hunger and fatigue, and ſunk with terror and affliction. While in this wretched condition, ſhe ſaw a robber approach with his

naked ſword; and finding that ſhe had no means of eſcape, ſhe ſuddenly embraced the reſolution of truſting entirely for protection to his faith and generoſity. She advanced towards him; and preſenting to him the young prince, called out to him, *Here, my friend, I commit to your care the ſafety of your king's ſon.* The man, whoſe humanity and generous ſpirit had been obſcured, not entirely loſt, by his vicious courſe of life, was ſtruck with the ſingularity of the event, was charmed with the confidence repoſed in him; and vowed, not only to abſtain from all injury againſt the princeſs, but to devote himſelf entirely to her ſervice [l]. By his means ſhe dwelt ſome time concealed in the foreſt, and was at laſt conducted to the ſea-coaſt, whence ſhe made her eſcape into Flanders. She paſſed thence into her father's court, where ſhe lived ſeveral years in privacy and retirement. Her huſband was not ſo fortunate or ſo dextrous in finding the means of eſcape. Some of his friends took him under their protection, and conveyed him into Lancaſhire; where he remained concealed during a twelvemonth; but he was at laſt detected, delivered up to Edward, and thrown into the Tower [m]. The ſafety of his perſon was owing leſs to the generoſity of his enemies, than to the contempt which they had entertained of his courage and his underſtanding.

CHAP. XXII. 1463.

THE impriſonment of Henry, the expulſion of Margaret, the execution and confiſcation of all the moſt conſiderable Lancaſtrians, ſeemed to give full ſecurity to Edward's government; whoſe title by blood, being now recognized by parliament, and univerſally ſubmitted to by the people, was no longer in danger of being impeached by any antagoniſt. In this proſperous ſituation, the king delivered himſelf up, without controul, to thoſe pleaſures which his youth, his high fortune, and his na-

[l] Monſtrelet, vol. iii. p. 96.

[m] Hall, fol. 191. Fragm. ad finem Sproti.

CHAP. XXII. 1464.

tural temper invited him to enjoy; and the cares of royalty were leſs attended to, than the diſſipation of amuſement, or the allurements of paſſion. The cruel and unrelenting ſpirit of Edward, though enured to the ferocity of civil wars, was at the ſame time extremely devoted to the ſofter paſſions, which, without mitigating his ſevere temper, maintained a great influence over him, and ſhared his attachment with the purſuits of ambition, and the thirſt of military glory. During the preſent interval of peace, he lived in the moſt familiar and ſociable manner with his ſubjects [n], particularly with the Londoners; and the beauty of his perſon, as well as the gallantry of his addreſs, which, even unaſſiſted by his royal dignity, would have rendered him acceptable to the fair, facilitated all his applications for their favour. This eaſy and pleaſurable courſe of life augmented every day his popularity among all ranks of men: He was the peculiar favourite of the young and gay of both ſexes. The diſpoſition of the Engliſh, little addicted to jealouſy, kept them from taking umbrage at theſe liberties: And his indulgence in amuſements, while it gratified his inclination, was thus become, without deſign, a means of ſupporting and ſecuring his government. But as it is difficult to confine the ruling paſſion within ſtrict rules of prudence, the amorous temper of Edward led him into a ſnare, which proved fatal to his repoſe, and to the ſtability of his throne.

King's marriage with the lady Elizabeth Grey.

JAQUELINE OF LUXEMBOURG, dutcheſs of Bedford, had, after her huſband's death, ſo far ſacrificed her ambition to love, that ſhe eſpouſed, in ſecond marriage, Sir Richard Wideville, a private gentleman, to whom ſhe bore ſeveral children; and among the reſt, Elizabeth, who was remarkable for the grace and beauty of her perſon, as well as for other amiable accompliſhments. This young

[n] Polyd. Virg. p. 513. Biondi.

lady

lady had married Sir John Gray of Groby, by whom she had children; and her husband being slain in the second battle of St. Albans, fighting on the side of Lancaster, and his estate being for that reason confiscated, his widow retired to live with her father, at his seat of Grafton in Northamptonshire. The king came accidentally to the house after a hunting party, in order to pay a visit to the dutchess of Bedford; and as the occasion seemed favourable for obtaining some grace from this gallante monarch, the young widow flung herself at his feet, and with many tears, entreated him to take pity on her impoverished and distressed children. The sight of so much beauty in affliction strongly affected the amorous Edward; love stole insensibly into his heart under the guise of compassion; and her sorrow, so becoming a virtuous matron, made his esteem and regard quickly correspond to his affection. He raised her from the ground with assurances of favour; he found his passion encrease every moment, by the conversation of the amiable object; and he was soon reduced in his turn to the posture and stile of a supplicant at the feet of Elizabeth. But the lady, either averse to dishonourable love from a sense of duty, or perceiving that the impression, which she had made, was so deep as to give her hopes of obtaining the highest elevation, obstinately refused to gratify his passion; and all the endearments, caresses, and importunities of the young and amiable Edward, proved fruitless against her rigid and inflexible virtue. His passion, irritated by opposition, and encreased by his veneration for such honourable sentiments, carried him at last beyond all bounds of reason; and he offered to share his throne, as well as his heart, with the woman, whose beauty of person, and dignity of character seemed so well to entitle her to both. The marriage was privately celebrated at Grafton *: The secret was carefully

CHAP. XXII. 1464.

* Hall, fol. 193. Fabian, fol. 276.

CHAP. XXII.

1464.

kept for some time: No one suspected, that so libertine a prince could sacrifice so much to a romantic passion: And there were in particular strong reasons, which at that time rendered this step, to the highest degree, dangerous and imprudent.

THE king, desirous to secure his throne, as well by the prospect of issue, as by foreign alliances, had, a little before, determined to make application to some neighbouring princess; and he had cast his eye on Bona of Savoy, sister to the queen of France, who, he hoped, would, by her marriage, ensure him the friendship of that power, which was alone both able and inclined to give support and assistance to his rival. To render the negociation more successful, the earl of Warwic had been dispatched to Paris, where the princess than resided; he had demanded Bona in marriage for the king; his proposals had been accepted; the treaty was fully concluded; and nothing remained but the ratification of the terms agreed on, and the bringing over the princess to England [p]. But when the secret of Edward's marriage broke out, the haughty earl, deeming himself affronted, both by being employed in this deceitful negociation, and by being kept a stranger to the king's intentions, who had owed every thing to his friendship, immediately returned to England, inflamed with rage and indignation. The influence of passion over so young a man as Edward, might have served as an excuse for his imprudent conduct, had he deigned to acknowledge his error, or had pleaded his weakness as an apology: But his faulty shame or pride prevented him from so much as mentioning the affair to Warwic; and that nobleman was allowed to depart the court, full of the same ill-humour and discontent, which he brought to it.

Warwic disgusted.

[p] Hall, fol. 193. Habington, p. 437. Holingshed, p. 667. Grafton, p. 665. Polyd. Virg. p. 513.

EVERY

CHAP. XXII. 1466.

EVERY incident now tended to widen the breach between the king and this powerful ſubject. The Queen, who loſt not her influence by marriage, was equally ſolicitous to draw every grace and favour to her own friends and kindred, and to exclude thoſe of the earl, whom ſhe regarded as her mortal enemy. Her father was created earl of Rivers: He was made treaſurer in room of lord Mountjoy [q]: He was inveſted in the office of conſtable for life; and his ſon received the ſurvivance of that high dignity [r]. The ſame young nobleman was married to the only daughter of lord Scales, enjoyed the great eſtate of that family, and had the title of Scales conferred upon him. Catherine, the queen's ſiſter, was married to the young duke of Buckingham, who was a ward of the crown [s]: Mary, another of her ſiſters, eſpouſed William Herbert, created earl of Huntingdon: Anne, a third ſiſter, was given in marriage to the ſon and heir of Gray, lord Ruthyn, created earl of Kent [t]. The daughter and heir of the duke of Exeter, who was alſo the king's niece, was contracted to Sir Thomas Gray, one of the queen's ſons by her former huſband; and as lord Montague was treating of a marriage between his ſon and this lady, the preference given to young Gray was deemed an injury and affront to the whole family of Nevil.

THE earl of Warwic could not ſuffer with patience the leaſt diminution of that credit, which he had long enjoyed, and which, he thought, he had merited by ſuch important ſervices. Though he had received ſo many grants from the crown, that the revenue ariſing from them amounted, beſides his patrimonial eſtate, to 80,000 crowns a-year, according to the computation of Philip de Comines [u]; his ambitious ſpirit was ſtill diſſatisfied, ſo long

q W. Wyrceſter, p. 506.
r Rymer, vol. xi. p. 581.
s W. Wyrceſter, p. 505.
t Ibid. p. 506.
u Liv. 3. chap. 4.

CHAP. XXII. 1466.

as he saw others surpass him in authority and influence with the king [w]. Edward also, jealous of that power which had supported him, and which he himself had contributed still higher to exalt, was well pleased to raise up rivals in credit to the earl of Warwic; and he justified, by this political view, his extreme partiality to the queen's kindred. But the nobility of England, envying the sudden growth of the Widevilles [x], were more inclined to take part with Warwic's discontent, to whose grandeur they were already accustomed, and who had reconciled them to his superiority by his gracious and popular manners. And as Edward obtained from parliament a general resumption of all grants, which he had made since his accession, and which had extremely impoverished the crown [y]; this act, though it passed with some exceptions, particularly one in favour of the earl of Warwic, gave a general alarm to the nobility, and disgusted many, even zealous, partizans of the family of York.

But the most considerable associate, that Warwic acquired to his party, was George, duke of Clarence, the king's second brother. This prince deemed himself no less injured than the other grandees, by the uncontrouled influence of the queen and her relations; and as his fortunes were still left on a precarious footing, while theirs were fully established, this neglect, joined to his unquiet and restless spirit, inclined him to give countenance to all the malcontents [z]. The favourable opportunity of gaining him was espied by the earl of Warwic, who offered him in marriage his elder daughter, and co-heir of his immense fortunes; a settlement which, as it was superior to any that the king himself could confer upon him, immediately attached him to the party of the earl [a]. Thus an extensive and

[w] Polyd. Virg. p. 514. [x] Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 539.
[y] W. Wyrcester, p. 508. [z] Grafton, p. 673.
[a] W. Wyrcester, p. 511. Hall, fol. 200. Habington, p. 439. Holingshed, p. 673. Polyd. Virg. p. 515.

dangerous combination was insensibly formed against Edward and his ministry. Though the immediate object of the malcontents was not to overturn the throne, it was difficult to foresee the extremities, to which they might be carried: And as opposition to an administration was usually in those ages prosecuted by force of arms, civil convulsions and disorders were likely to be soon the result of these intrigues and confederacies. CHAP. XXII. 1466.

Alliance with the duke of Burgundy.

While this cloud was gathering at home, Edward carried his views abroad, and endeavoured to secure himself against his factious nobility, by entering into foreign alliances. The dark and dangerous ambition of Louis XI. the more it was known, the greater alarm it excited among his neighbours and vassals; and as it was supported by great abilities, and unrestrained by any principle of faith or humanity, they found no security to themselves but by a jealous combination against him. Philip, duke of Burgundy, was now dead: His rich and extensive dominions were devolved to Charles, his only son, whose martial disposition acquired him the surname of *Bold*, and whose ambition, more outrageous than that of Lewis, but seconded by less power and policy, was regarded with a more favourable eye by the other potentates of Europe. The opposition of interests, and still more, a natural antipathy of character, produced a declared animosity between these two bad princes; and Edward was thus secure of the sincere attachment of either of them, for whom he should chuse to declare himself. The duke of Burgundy, being descended by his mother, a daughter of Portugal, from John of Gaunt, was naturally inclined to favour the house of Lancaster [b]: But this consideration was easily overbalanced by political motives; and Charles, perceiving the interest of that house to be extremely decayed in England, sent over his natural brother, com-

[b] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 4, 6.

CHAP. XXII.

monly called the baſtard of Burgundy, to carry in his name propoſals of marriage to Margaret, the king's ſiſter.

1466. The alliance of Burgundy was more popular among the Engliſh than that of France; the commercial intereſts of the two nations invited the princes to a cloſe union; their common jealouſy of Lewis was a natural cement

1468. between them; and Edward, pleaſed with ſtrengthening himſelf by ſo potent a confederate, ſoon concluded the alliance, and beſtowed his ſiſter upon Charles [c]. A league, which Edward at the ſame time concluded with the duke of Britanny, ſeemed both to encreaſe his ſecurity, and to open to him the proſpect of rivalling his predeceſſors in thoſe foreign conqueſts, which, however ſhort-lived and unprofitable, had rendered their reigns ſo popular and illuſtrious [d].

1469. BUT whatever ambitious ſchemes the king might have built on theſe alliances, they were ſoon fruſtrated by inteſtine commotions, which engroſſed all his attention. Theſe diſorders probably aroſe not immediately from the intrigues of the earl of Warwic, but from accident, aided by the turbulent ſpirit of the age, by the general humour of diſcontent which that popular nobleman had inſtilled into the nation, and perhaps by ſome remains of attachment to the houſe of Lancaſter. The hoſpital of St. Leonards near York had received, from an ancient grant of king Athelſtane, a right of levying a thrave of corn from every plough-land in the county; and as theſe charitable eſtabliſhments are liable to abuſe, the country people complained, that the revenue of the hoſpital was no longer expended for the relief of the poor, but was ſecreted by the managers, and employed to their private purpoſes. After long repining at the contribution, they

Inſurrection in York-ſhire.

[c] Hall, fol. 169, 197. Hiſt. vol. ii. p. 332.

[d] W. Wyrcheſter, p. 5. Parliament.

refuſed

refuſed payment: Eccleſiaſtical and civil cenſures were iſſued againſt them: Their goods were diſtrained, and their perſons thrown into jail: Till, as their ill-humour daily encreaſed, they roſe in arms; fell upon the officers of the hoſpital, whom they put to the ſword; and proceeded in a body, fifteen thouſand ſtrong, to the gates of York. Lord Montague, who commanded in thoſe parts, oppoſed himſelf to their progreſs; and having been ſo fortunate in a ſkirmiſh as to ſeize Robert Hulderne their leader, he ordered him immediately to be led to execution; according to the practice of the times. The rebels, however, ſtill continued in arms; and being ſoon headed by men of greater diſtinction, Sir Henry Nevil, ſon of lord Latimer, and Sir John Coniers, they advanced ſouthwards, and began to appear formidable to the government. Herbert, earl of Pembroke, who had received that title on the forfeiture of Jaſper Tudor, was ordered by Edward to march againſt them at the head of a body of Welſhmen; and he was joined by five thouſand archers under the command of Stafford, earl of Devonſhire, who had ſucceeded in that title to the family of Courtney, which had alſo been attainted. But a trivial difference about quarters having begot an animoſity between theſe two noblemen, the earl of Devonſhire retired with his archers, and left Pembroke alone to encounter the rebels. The two armies approached each other near Banbury; and Pembroke, having prevailed in a ſkirmiſh, and having taken Sir Henry Nevil priſoner, ordered him immediately to be put to death, without any form of proceſs. This execution enraged, without terrifying, the rebels: They attacked the Welſh army, routed them, put them to the ſword without mercy; and having ſeized Pembroke, they took immediate revenge upon him for the death of their leader. The king, imputing this misfortune to the earl of Devonſhire, who had deſerted Pembroke,

CHAP. XXII.

1469.

Battle of Banbury.

26th July.

CHAP. XXII. 1469.

broke, ordered him to be executed in a like ſummary manner. But theſe ſpeedy executions, or rather open murders, did not ſtop there: The northern rebels, ſending a party to Grafton, ſeized the earl of Rivers and his ſon John; men who had become obnoxious by their near relation to the king and his partiality towards them: And they were immediately executed by orders from Sir John Coniers [e].

THERE is no part of Engliſh hiſtory ſince the Conqueſt, ſo obſcure, ſo uncertain, ſo little authentic or conſiſtent, as that of the wars between the two Roſes: Hiſtorians differ about many material circumſtances; ſome events of the utmoſt conſequence, in which they almoſt all agree, are incredible and contradicted by records [f]; and it is remarkable, that this profound darkneſs falls upon us juſt on the eve of the reſtoration of letters, and when the art of Printing was already known in Europe. All we can diſtinguiſh with certainty through the deep cloud, which covers that period, is a ſcene of horror and bloodſhed, ſavage manners, arbitrary executions, and treacherous, diſhonourable conduct in all parties. There is no poſſibility, for inſtance, of accounting for the views and intentions of the earl of Warwic at this time. It is agreed, that he reſided, together with his ſon-in-law, the duke of Clarence, in his government of Calais, during the commencement of this rebellion; and that his brother Montague acted with vigour againſt the northern rebels. We may thence preſume, that the inſurrection had not proceeded from the ſecret counſels and inſtigation of Warwic; though the murder, committed by the rebels, on the earl of Rivers, his capital enemy, forms, on the other hand, a violent preſumption againſt him. He and Clarence came over to England, offered their ſervice to Edward, were received without any ſuſpicion, were

[e] Fabian, fol. 217.

[f] See note [I] at the end of the volume.

entruſted

entrusted by him in the highest commands [g], and still persevered in their fidelity. Soon after, we find the rebels quieted and dispersed by a general pardon granted by Edward from the advice of the earl of Warwic: But why so courageous a prince, if secure of Warwic's fidelity, should have granted a general pardon to men, who had been guilty of such violent and personal outrages against him, is not intelligible; nor why that nobleman, if unfaithful, should have endeavoured to appease a rebellion, of which he was able to make such advantages. But it appears, that, after this insurrection, there was an interval of peace, during which the king loaded the family of Nevil with honours and favours of the highest nature: He made lord Montague a marquess, by the same name: He created his son, George, duke of Bedford [h]: He publicly declared his intention of marrying that young nobleman to his eldest daughter, Elizabeth, who, as he had yet no sons, was presumptive heir of the crown: Yet we find, that, soon after, being invited to a feast by the archbishop of York, a younger brother of Warwic and Montague, he entertained a sudden suspicion, that they intended to seize his person or to murder him: And he abruptly left the entertainment [i]. CHAP. XXII. 1469.

Soon after, there broke out another rebellion, which is as unaccountable as all the preceding events; chiefly because no sufficient reason is assigned for it, and because, so far as appears, the family of Nevil had no hand in exciting and fomenting it. It arose in Lincolnshire, and was headed by Sir Robert Welles, son to the lord of that name. The army of the rebels amounted to 30,000 men; but lord Welles himself, far from giving countenance to them, fled into a sanctuary, in order to secure 1470.

[g] Rymer, vol. xi. p. 647, 649, 650.
[h] Cotton, p. 702.
[i] Fragm. Ed. IV. ad fin. Sprotti.

his

CHAP. XXII. 1470.

his person against the king's anger or suspicions. He was allured from this retreat by a promise of safety; and was soon after, notwithstanding this assurance, beheaded, along with Sir Thomas Dymoc, by orders from Edward [k]. The king fought a battle with the rebels, defeated them, took Sir Robert Welles and Sir Thomas Launde prisoners, and ordered them immediately to be beheaded.

15th March.

EDWARD, during these transactions, had entertained so little jealousy of the earl of Warwic or duke of Clarence, that he granted them commissions of array for levying forces against the rebels [l]: But these malcontents, as soon as they left the court, raised troops in their own name, issued declarations against the government, and complained of grievances, oppressions, and bad ministers. The unexpected defeat of Welles disconcerted all their measures; and they retired northwards into Lancashire, where they expected to be joined by lord Stanley, who had married the earl of Warwic's sister. But as that nobleman refused all concurrence with them, and as lord Montague also remained quiet in Yorkshire; they were obliged to disband their army, and to fly into Devonshire, where they embarked and made sail towards Calais [m].

Warwic and Clarence banished.

THE deputy governor, whom Warwic had left at Calais, was one Vaucler, a Gascon, who, seeing the earl return in this miserable condition, refused him admittance into the place; and would not so much as permit the dutchess of Clarence to land; though, a few days before, she had been delivered on ship-board of a son, and was at that time extremely disordered by sickness. With diffi-

[k] Hall, fol. 204. Fabrian, fol. 218. Habington, p. 442. Holingshed, p. 674. [l] Rymer, vol. xi. p. 652.

[m] The king offered by proclamation a reward of 1000 pounds, or 100 pounds a-year in land, to any that would seize them. Whence we may learn that land was at that time sold for about ten years purchase. See Rymer, vol. xi. p. 654.

culty,

culty, he would allow a few flaggons of wine to be carried to the ſhip for the uſe of the ladies: But as he was a man of ſagacity, and well acquainted with the revolutions to which England was ſubject, he ſecretly apologized to Warwic for this appearance of infidelity, and repreſented it as proceeding entirely from zeal for his ſervice. He ſaid, that the place was ill ſupplied with proviſions; that he could not depend on the attachment of the garriſon; that the inhabitants, who lived by the Engliſh commerce, would certainly declare for the eſtabliſhed government; that the place was at preſent unable to reſiſt the power of England on the one hand, and that of the duke of Burgundy on the other; and that, by ſeeming to declare for Edward, he would acquire the confidence of that prince, and ſtill keep it in his power, when it ſhould become ſafe and prudent, to reſtore the fortreſs to its ancient maſter [n]. It is uncertain, whether Warwic was ſatisfied with this apology, or ſuſpected a double infidelity in Vaucler; but he feigned to be entirely convinced by him; and having ſeized ſome Flemiſh veſſels, which he found lying off Calais, he immediately made ſail towards France. CHAP. XXII. 1470.

THE king of France, uneaſy at the cloſe conjunction between Edward and the duke of Burgundy, received with the greateſt demonſtrations of regard and friendſhip the unfortunate Warwic [o], with whom he had formerly maintained a ſecret correſpondence, and whom he hoped ſtill to make his inſtrument, in overturning the government of England, and re-eſtabliſhing the houſe of Lancaſter. No animoſity was ever greater than that which had long prevailed between that houſe and the earl of Warwic. His father had been executed by orders from Margaret: He himſelf had twice reduced Henry to cap-

[n] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 4. Hall, fol. 205.

[o] Polyd. Virg. p. 519.

tivity,

CHAP. XXII. 1470.

tivity, had baniſhed the queen, had put to death all their moſt zealous partizans either in the field or on the ſcaffold, and had occaſioned innumerable ills to that unhappy family. For this reaſon, believing that ſuch inveterate rancour could never admit of any cordial reconciliation, he had not mentioned Henry's name, when he took arms againſt Edward; and he rather endeavoured to prevail by means of his own adherents, than revive a party, which he ſincerely hated. But his preſent diſtreſſes and the entreaties of Lewis, made him hearken to terms of accommodation; and Margaret being ſent for from Angers, where ſhe then reſided, an agreement was from common intereſt ſoon concluded between them. It was ſtipulated, that Warwic ſhould eſpouſe the cauſe of Henry, and endeavour to reſtore him to liberty and to re-eſtabliſh him on the throne; that the adminiſtration of the government, during the minority of young Edward, Henry's ſon, ſhould be entruſted conjointly to the earl of Warwic and the duke of Clarence; that prince Edward ſhould marry the lady Anne, ſecond daughter of that nobleman; and that the crown, in caſe of the failure of male iſſue in that prince, ſhould deſcend to the duke of Clarence, to the entire excluſion of king Edward and his poſterity. Never was confederacy, on all ſides, leſs natural or more evidently the work of neceſſity: But Warwic hoped, that all former paſſions of the Lancaſtrians might be loſt in preſent political views; and that at worſt, the independant power of his family, and the affections of the people, would ſuffice to give him ſecurity, and enable him to exact the full performance of all the conditions agreed on. The marriage of prince Edward with the lady Anne was immediately celebrated in France.

EDWARD reaſonably foreſaw, that it would be eaſy to diſſolve an alliance, compoſed of ſuch diſcordant parts. For

CHAP. XXII.

1470.

For this purpose, he sent over a lady of great sagacity and address, who belonged to the train of the dutchess of Clarence, and who, under colour of attending her mistress, was empowered to negociate with the duke, and to renew the connexions of that prince with his own family [p]. She represented to Clarence, that he had unwarily, to his own ruin, become the instrument of Warwic's vengeance, and had thrown himself entirely in the power of his most inveterate enemies; that the mortal injuries, which the one royal family had suffered from the other, were now past all forgiveness, and no imaginary union of interests could ever suffice to obliterate them; that even if the leaders were willing to forget past offences, the animosity of their adherents would prevent a sincere coalition of parties, and would, in spite of all temporary and verbal agreements, preserve an eternal opposition of measures between them; and that a prince, who deserted his own kindred, and joined the murderers of his father, left himself single, without friends, without protection, and would not, when misfortunes inevitably fell upon him, be so much as entitled to any pity or regard from the rest of mankind. Clarence was only one and twenty years of age, and seems to have possessed but a slender capacity; yet could he easily see the force of these reasons; and upon the promise of forgiveness from his brother, he secretly engaged, on a favourable opportunity, to desert the earl of Warwic, and abandon the Lancastrian party.

During this negociation, Warwic was secretly carrying on a correspondence of the same nature with his brother, the marquess of Montague, who was entirely trusted by Edward; and like motives produced a like resolution in that nobleman. The marquess also, that he might render the projected blow the more deadly and

[p] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 5. Hall, fol. 207. Holingshed, p. 675.

incurable,

CHAP. XXII.

1470. incurable, reſolved, on his ſide, to watch a favourable opportunity for committing *his* perfidy, and ſtill to maintain the appearance of being a zealous adherent to the houſe of York.

AFTER theſe mutual ſnares were thus carefully laid, the deciſion of the quarrel advanced apace. Lewis prepared a fleet to eſcort the earl of Warwic, and offered him a ſupply of men and money [q]. The duke of Burgundy, on the other hand, enraged at that nobleman for his ſeizure of the Flemiſh ſhips before Calais, and anxious to ſupport the reigning family in England, with whom his own intereſts were now connected, fitted out a larger fleet, with which he guarded the Channel; and he inceſſantly warned his brother-in-law of the imminent perils, to which he was expoſed. But Edward, though always brave and often active, had little foreſight or penetration. He was not ſenſible of his danger: He made no ſuitable preparations againſt the earl of Warwic [r]: He even ſaid, that the duke might ſpare himſelf the trouble of guarding the ſeas, and that he wiſhed for nothing more than to ſee Warwic ſet foot on Engliſh ground [s]. A vain confidence in his own proweſs, joined to the immoderate love of pleaſure, had made him incapable of all ſound reaſon and reflection.

September. Warwic and Clarence return.

THE event ſoon happened, of which Edward ſeemed ſo deſirous. A ſtorm diſperſed the Flemiſh navy, and left the ſeas open to Warwic [t]. That nobleman ſeized the opportunity, and ſetting ſail, quickly landed at Dartmouth, with the duke of Clarence, the earls of Oxford and Pembroke, and a ſmall body of troops; while the king was in the north, engaged in ſuppreſſing an inſurrection, which had been raiſed by lord Fitz-Hugh;

[q] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 4. Hall, fol. 207.
[r] Grafton, p. 687.
[s] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 5. Hall, fol. 208.
[t] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 5.

brother-in-law to Warwic. The ſcene, which enſues, reſembles more the fiction of a poem or romance than an event in true hiſtory. The prodigious popularity of Warwic [u], the zeal of the Lancaſtrian party, the ſpirit of diſcontent with which many were infected, and the general inſtability of the Engliſh nation, occaſioned by the late frequent revolutions, drew ſuch multitudes to his ſtandard, that, in a very few days, his army amounted to ſixty thouſand men, and was continually encreaſing. Edward haſtened ſouthwards to encounter him; and the two armies approached each other near Nottingham, where a deciſive action was every hour expected. The rapidity of Warwic's progreſs had incapacitated the duke of Clarence from executing *his* plan of treachery; and the marqueſs of Montague had here the opportunity of ſtriking the firſt blow. He communicated the deſign to his adherents, who promiſed him their concurrence: They took to arms in the night-time, and haſtened with loud acclamations to Edward's quarters: The king was alarmed at the noiſe, and ſtarting from bed, heard the cry of war, uſually employed by the Lancaſtrian party. Lord Haſtings, his chamberlain, informed him of the danger, and urged him to make his eſcape by ſpeedy flight from an army, where he had ſo many concealed enemies, and where few ſeemed zealouſly attached to his ſervice. He had juſt time to get on horſeback, and to hurry with a ſmall retinue to Lynne in Norfolk, where he luckily found ſome ſhips ready, on board of which he inſtantly embarked [w]. And after this manner, the earl of Warwic, in no longer ſpace than eleven days after his firſt landing, was left entire maſter of the kingdom.

CHAP. XXII. 1470.

Edward IV. expelled.

But Edward's danger did not end with his embarkation. The Eaſterlings or Hanſe-Towns were then at

[u] Hall, fol. 205.

[w] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 5. Hall, fol. 208.

CHAP. XXII.

1470. war both with France and England; and ſome ſhips of theſe people, hovering on the Engliſh coaſt, eſpied the king's veſſels, and gave chace to them; nor was it without extreme difficulty that he made his eſcape into the port of Alcmaer in Holland. He had fled from England with ſuch precipitation, that he had carried nothing of value along with him; and the only reward, which he could beſtow on the captain of the veſſel that brought him over, was a robe lined with ſables; promiſing him an ample recompence, if fortune ſhould ever become more propitious to him [x].

It is not likely, that Edward could be very fond of preſenting himſelf in this lamentable condition before the duke of Burgundy; and that having ſo ſuddenly, after his mighty vaunts, loſt all footing in his own kingdom, he could be inſenſible to the ridicule which muſt attend him in the eyes of that prince. The duke, on his part, was no leſs embarraſſed how he ſhould receive the dethroned monarch. As he had ever borne a greater affection to the houſe of Lancaſter than to that of York, nothing but political views had engaged him to contract an alliance with the latter; and he foreſaw, that probably the revolution in England would now turn this alliance againſt him, and render the reigning family his implacable and jealous enemy. For this reaſon, when the firſt rumour of that event reached him, attended with the circumſtance of Edward's death, he ſeemed rather pleaſed with the cataſtrophe; and it was no agreeable diſappointment to find, that he muſt either undergo the burthen of ſupporting an exiled prince, or the diſhonour of abandoning ſo near a relation. He began already to ſay, that his connexions were with the kingdom of England, not with the king; and it was indifferent to him, whether the name of Edward or that of Henry were

[x] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 5.

employed

employed in the articles of treaty. These sentiments were continually strengthened by the subsequent events. Vaucler, the deputy governor of Calais, though he had been confirmed in his command by Edward, and had even received a pension from the duke of Burgundy on account of his fidelity to the crown, no sooner saw his old master, Warwic, reinstated in authority, than he declared for him, and with great demonstrations of zeal and attachment, put the whole garrison in his livery. And the intelligence, which the duke received every day from England, seemed to promise an entire and full settlement in the family of Lancaster. CHAP. XXII. 1470.

Henry VI. restored.

IMMEDIATELY after Edward's flight had left the kingdom at Warwic's disposal, that nobleman hastened to London; and taking Henry from his confinement in the Tower, into which he himself had been the chief cause of throwing him, he proclaimed him king with great solemnity. A parliament was summoned, in the name of that prince, to meet at Westminster; and as this assembly could pretend to no liberty, while surrounded by such enraged and insolent victors, governed by such an impetuous spirit as Warwic, their votes were entirely dictated by the ruling faction. The treaty with Margaret was here fully executed: Henry was recognized as lawful king; but his incapacity for government being avowed, the regency was entrusted to Warwic and Clarence till the majority of prince Edward; and in default of that prince's issue, Clarence was declared successor to the crown. The usual business also of reversals went on without opposition: Every statute, made during the reign of Edward, was repealed; that prince was declared to be an usurper; he and his adherents were attainted; and in particular, Richard, duke of Gloucester, his younger brother: All the attainders of the Lancastrians, the dukes of Somerset and Exeter, the earls of Richmond, Pembroke,

CHAP. XXII. 1470.

broke, Oxford, and Ormond, were reverſed; and every one was reſtored, who had loſt either honours or fortune, by his former adherence to the cauſe of Henry.

THE ruling party were more ſparing in their executions, than was uſual after any revolution during thoſe violent times. The only victim of diſtinction was John Tibetot, earl of Worceſter. This accompliſhed perſon, born in an age and nation where the nobility valued themſelves on ignorance as their privilege, and left learning to monks and ſchoolmaſters, for whom indeed the ſpurious erudition, that prevailed, was beſt fitted, had been ſtruck with the firſt rays of true ſcience, which began to penetrate from the ſouth, and had been zealous, by his exhortation and example, to propagate the love of letters among his unpoliſhed countrymen. It is pretended, that knowledge had not produced, on this nobleman himſelf, the effect which ſo naturally attends it, of humanizing the temper, and ſoftening the heart [y]; and that he had enraged the Lancaſtrians againſt him, by the ſeverities which he exerciſed upon them, during the prevalence of his own party. He endeavoured to conceal himſelf after the flight of Edward; but was caught on the top of a tree in the foreſt of Weybridge, was conducted to London, tried before the earl of Oxford, condemned and executed. All the other conſiderable Yorkiſts either fled beyond ſea, or took ſhelter in ſanctuaries; where the eccleſiaſtical privileges afforded them protection. In London alone, it is computed, that no leſs than 2000 perſons ſaved themſelves in this manner [z]; and among the reſt, Edward's queen, who was there delivered of a ſon, called by his father's name [a].

QUEEN Margaret, the other rival queen, had not yet appeared in England, but on receiving intelligence of

y Hall, fol. 210. Stowe, p. 422. z Comines, liv. 3. chap. 7.
a Hall, fol. 210. Stowe, p. 423. Holingſhed, p. 677. Grafton, p. 690.

CHAP. XXII. 1470.

Warwic's ſucceſs, was preparing with prince Edward for her journey. All the baniſhed Lancaſtrians flocked to her; and among the reſt, the duke of Somerſet, ſon of the duke beheaded after the battle of Hexham. This nobleman, who had long been regarded as the head of the party, had fled into the Low Countries on the diſcomfiture of his friends; and as he concealed his name and quality, he had there languiſhed in extreme indigence. Philip de Comines tells us [b], that he himſelf ſaw him, as well as the duke of Exeter, in a condition no better than that of a common beggar; till being diſcovered by Philip duke of Burgundy, they had ſmall penſions allotted them, and were living in ſilence and obſcurity, when the ſucceſs of their party called them from their retreat. But both Somerſet and Margaret were detained by contrary winds from reaching England [c], till a new revolution in that kingdom, no leſs ſudden and ſurpriſing than the former, threw them into greater miſery than that from which they had juſt emerged.

THOUGH the duke of Burgundy, by neglecting Edward, and paying court to the eſtabliſhed government, had endeavoured to conciliate the friendſhip of the Lancaſtrians, he found that he had not ſucceeded to his wiſh; and the connexions between the king of France and the earl of Warwic, ſtill held him in great anxiety [d]. This nobleman, too haſtily regarding Charles as a determined enemy, had ſent over to Calais a body of 4000 men, who made inroads on the Low Countries [e]; and the duke of Burgundy ſaw himſelf in danger of being oppreſſed by the united arms of England and of France. He reſolved therefore to grant ſome aſſiſtance to his brother-in-law; but in ſuch a covert manner, as ſhould

[b] Liv. 3. chap. 4.
[c] Grafton, p. 692. Polyd. Virg. p. 522.
[d] Hall, fol. 205.
[e] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 6.

CHAP. XXII.

1471. give the leaſt offence poſſible to the Engliſh government. He equipped four large veſſels, in the name of ſome private merchants, at Terveer in Zealand; and cauſing fourteen ſhips to be ſecretly hired from the Eaſterlings, he delivered this ſmall ſquadron to Edward, who, receiving alſo a ſum of money from the duke, immediately ſet ſail for England. No ſooner was Charles informed of his departure, than he iſſued a proclamation inhibiting all his ſubjects from giving him countenance or aſſiſtance [f]; an artifice which could not deceive the earl of Warwic, but which might ſerve as a decent pretence, if that nobleman were ſo diſpoſed, for maintaining friendſhip with the duke of Burgundy.

EDWARD, impatient to take revenge on his enemies, and to recover his loſt authority, made an attempt to land with his forces, which exceeded not 2000 men, on the coaſt of Norfolk; but being there repulſed, he ſailed northwards, and diſembarked at Ravenſpur in Yorkſhire. Finding, that the new magiſtrates, who had been appointed by the earl of Warwic, kept the people every where from joining him, he pretended, and even made oath, that he came not to challenge the crown, but only the inheritance of the houſe of York, which of right belonged to him, and that he did not intend to raiſe a civil war in the kingdom. His partizans every moment flocked to his ſtandard: He was admitted into the city of York: And he was ſoon in ſuch a ſituation, as gave him hopes of ſucceeding in all his claims and pretenſions. The marquis of Montague commanded in the northern counties; but from ſome myſterious reaſons, which, as well as many other important tranſactions in that age, no hiſtorian has cleared up, he totally neglected the beginnings of an inſurrection, which he ought to have eſteemed ſo formidable. Warwic aſſembled an

25th March. Edward IV. returns.

[f] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 6.

army

army at Leiceſter, with an intention of meeting and of giving battle to the enemy; but Edward, by taking another road, paſſed him unmoleſted, and preſented himſelf before the gates of London. Had he here been refuſed admittance, he was totally undone: But there were many reaſons, which inclined the citizens to favour him. His numerous friends, iſſuing from their ſanctuaries, were active in his cauſe; many rich merchants, who had formerly lent him money, ſaw no other chance for their payment but his reſtoration; the city-dames, who had been liberal of their favours to him, and who ſtill retained an affection for this young and gallante prince, ſwayed their huſbands and friends in his favour [g]; and above all, the archbiſhop of York, Warwic's brother, to whom the care of the city was committed, had ſecretly, from unknown reaſons, entered into a correſpondence with him; and he facilitated Edward's admiſſion into London. The moſt likely cauſe, which can be aſſigned for thoſe multiplied infidelities, even in the family of Nevil itſelf, is the ſpirit of faction, which, when it becomes inveterate, it is very difficult for any man entirely to ſhake off. Theſe perſons, who had long diſtinguiſhed themſelves in the York party, were unable to act with zeal and cordiality for the ſupport of the Lancaſtrians; and they were inclined, by any proſpect of favour or accommodation offered them by Edward, to return to their ancient connexions. However this may be, Edward's entrance into London, made him maſter not only of that rich and powerful city, but alſo of the perſon of Henry, who, deſtined to be the perpetual ſport of fortune, thus fell again into the hands of his enemies [h].

CHAP. XXII. 1471. 11th April.

It appears not, that Warwic, during his ſhort adminiſtration, which had continued only ſix months, had

[g] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 7. [h] Grafton, p. 702.

CHAP. XXII. 1471.

been guilty of any unpopular act, or had anywise deserved to lose that general favour, with which he had so lately overwhelmed Edward. But this prince, who was formerly on the defensive, was now the aggressor; and having overcome the difficulties, which always attend the beginnings of an insurrection, possessed many advantages above his enemy: His partizans were actuated by that zeal and courage, which the notion of an attack inspires; his opponents were intimidated for a like reason; every one, who had been disappointed in the hopes, which he had entertained from Warwic's elevation, either became a cool friend, or an open enemy to that nobleman; and each malcontent, from whatever cause, proved an accession to Edward's army. The king, therefore, found himself in a condition to face the earl of Warwic; who, being reinforced by his son-in-law, the duke of Clarence, and his brother the marquis of Montague, took post at Barnet, in the neighbourhood of London. The arrival of queen Margaret was every day expected, who would have drawn together all the genuine Lancastrians, and have brought a great accession to Warwic's forces: But this very consideration proved a motive to the earl rather to hurry on a decisive action, than to share the victory with rivals and ancient enemies, who, he foresaw, would, in case of success, claim the chief merit in the enterprize [i]. But while his jealousy was all directed towards that side, he overlooked the dangerous infidelity of friends, who lay the nearest to his bosom. His brother, Montague, who had lately temporized, seems now to have remained sincerely attached to the interests of his family: But his son-in-law, though bound to him by every tie of honour and gratitude, though he shared the power of the regency, though he had been invested by Warwic in all the honours and patrimony of the house of York, resolved to

[i] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 7.

fulfil

CHAP. XXII.

1471.

fulfil the secret engagements, which he had formerly taken with his brother, and to support the interests of his own family: He deserted to the king in the night-time, and carried over a body of 12,000 men along with him [k]. Warwic was now too far advanced to retreat; and as he rejected with disdain all terms of peace offered him by Edward and Clarence, he was obliged to hazard a general engagement. The battle was fought with obstinacy on both sides: The two armies, in imitation of their leaders, exerted uncommon acts of valour: And the victory remained long undecided between them. But an accident threw at last the balance to the side of the Yorkists. Edward's cognisance was a sun; that of Warwic a star with rays; and the mistiness of the morning rendering it difficult to distinguish them, the earl of Oxford, who fought on the side of the Lancastrians, was, by mistake, attacked by his friends, and chaced off the field of battle [l]. Warwic, contrary to his more usual practice, engaged that day on foot, resolving to show his army, that he meant to share every fortune with them; and he was slain in the thickest of the engagement [m]: His brother underwent the same fate: And as Edward had issued orders not to give any quarter, a great and undistinguished slaughter was made in the pursuit [n]. There fell about 1500 on the side of the victors.

14th April. Battle of Barnet, and death of Warwic.

The same day, on which this decisive battle was fought [o], queen Margaret and her son, now about eighteen years of age, and a young prince of great hopes, landed at Weymouth, supported by a small body of French forces. When this princess received intelligence of her husband's captivity, and of the defeat and death of the earl of Warwic, her courage, which had supported her under so many disas-

[k] Grafton, p. 700. Comines, liv. 3. chap. 7. Leland's collect. vol. ii. p. 505.
[l] Habington, p. 449.
[m] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 7.
[n] Hall, fol. 218.
[o] Leland's Collect. vol. ii. p. 505.

trous

CHAP. XXII.

1471.

trous events, here quite left her; and ſhe immediately foreſaw all the diſmal conſequences of this calamity. She took ſanctuary at firſt in the abbey of Beaulieu [p]; but being encouraged by the appearance of Tudor, earl of Pembroke, and Courtney, earl of Devonſhire, of the lords Wenloc and St John, with other men of rank, who exhorted her ſtill to hope for ſucceſs, ſhe reſumed her former ſpirit, and determined to defend to the utmoſt the ruins of her fallen fortunes. She advanced through the counties of Devon, Somerſet, and Gloceſter, encreaſing her army on each day's march; but was at laſt overtaken by the rapid and expeditious Edward, at Teukeſbury, on the banks of the Severne. The Lancaſtrians were here totally defeated: The earl of Devonſhire and lord Wenloc were killed in the field: The duke of Somerſet, and about twenty other perſons of diſtinction, having taken ſhelter in a church, were ſurrounded, dragged out, and immediately beheaded: About 3000 of their ſide fell in battle: And the army was entirely diſperſed.

Battle of Teukeſbury. 4th May.

QUEEN Margaret and her ſon were taken priſoners, and brought to the king, who aſked the prince, after an inſulting manner, how he dared to invade his dominions? The young prince, more mindful of his high birth than of his preſent fortune, replied, that he came thither to claim his juſt inheritance. The ungenerous Edward, inſenſible to pity, ſtruck him on the face with his gauntlet; and the dukes of Clarence and Gloceſter, lord Haſtings and Sir Thomas Gray, taking the blow as a ſignal for farther violence, hurried the prince into the next apartment, and there diſpatched him with their daggers [q]. Margaret was thrown into the Tower: King Henry expired in that confinement a few days after the battle of

Murder of prince Edward. 21ſt May.

p Hall, fol. 219. Habington, p. 451. Grafton, p. 706. Polyd. Virg. p. 528. q Hall, fol. 221. Habington, p. 453. Hollingſhed, p. 688. Polyd. Virg. p. 530.

Teukesbury; but whether he died a natural or violent death is uncertain. It is pretended, and was generally believed, that the duke of Gloceſter killed him with his own hands [r]: But the univerſal odium, which that prince had incurred, inclined perhaps the nation to aggravate his crimes without any ſufficient authority. It is certain, however, that Henry's death was ſudden; and though he laboured before under an ill ſtate of health, this circumſtance, joined to the general manners of the age, gave a natural ground of ſuſpicion; which was rather increaſed than diminiſhed, by the expoſing of his body to public view. That precaution ſerved only to recal many ſimilar inſtances in the Engliſh hiſtory, and to ſuggeſt the compariſon.

CHAP. XXII. 1471. Death of Henry VI.

All the hopes of the houſe of Lancaſter ſeemed now to be utterly extinguiſhed. Every legitimate prince of that family was dead: Almoſt every great leader of the party had periſhed in battle or on the ſcaffold: The earl of Pembroke, who was levying forces in Wales, diſbanded his army, when he received intelligence of the battle of Teukeſbury; and he fled into Britanny with his nephew, the young earl of Richmond [s]. The baſtard of Falconberg, who had levied ſome forces, and advanced to London during Edward's abſence, was repulſed; his men deſerted him; he was taken priſoner and immediately executed [t]: And peace being now fully reſtored to the nation, a parliament was ſummoned, which ratified, as uſual, all the acts of the victor, and recognized his legal authority. 6th Octob.

But this prince, who had been ſo firm, and active, and intrepid during the courſe of adverſity, was ſtill unable to reſiſt the allurements of a proſperous fortune; and he

[r] Comines, Hall, fol. 223. Graſton, p. 703. [s] Habington, p. 454. Polyd. Virg. p. 531. [t] Hollingſhed, p. 689, 690, 693. Hiſt. Croyl. cont. p. 554.

wholly

CHAP. XXII.

wholly devoted himſelf, as before, to pleaſure and amuſement, after he became entirely maſter of his kingdom, and had no longer any enemy who could give him anxiety or alarm. He recovered, however, by this gay and inoffenſive courſe of life, and by his eaſy, familiar manners, that popularity, which, it is natural to imagine, he had loſt by the repeated cruelties exerciſed upon his enemies; and the example alſo of his jovial feſtivity ſerved to abate the former acrimony of faction among his ſubjects, and to reſtore the ſocial diſpoſition, which had been ſo long interrupted between the oppoſite parties. All men ſeemed to be fully ſatisfied with the preſent government; and the memory of paſt calamities ſerved only to impreſs the people more ſtrongly with a ſenſe of their allegiance, and with the reſolution of never incurring any more the hazard of renewing ſuch direful ſcenes.

1472.

1474. BUT while the king was thus indulging himſelf in pleaſure, he was rouzed from his lethargy by a proſpect of foreign conqueſts, which, it is probable, his deſire of popularity, more than the ſpirit of ambition, had made him covet. Though he deemed himſelf little beholden to the duke of Burgundy, for the reception which that prince had given him during his exile [u], the political intereſt of their ſtates maintained ſtill a cloſe connection between them; and they agreed to unite their arms in making a powerful invaſion on France. A league was formed, in which Edward ſtipulated to paſs the ſeas with an army, exceeding 10,000 men, and to invade the French territories: Charles promiſed to join him with all his forces: The king was to challenge the crown of France, and to obtain at leaſt the provinces of Normandy and Guienne: The duke was to acquire Champaigne and ſome other territories, and to free all his dominions from the burthen

[u] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 7.

of

of homage to the crown of France: And neither party was to make peace without the consent of the other [w]. They were the more encouraged to hope for success from this league, as the count of St. Pol, constable of France, who was master of St. Quintin, and other towns on the Somme, had secretly promised them his assistance; and there were also hopes of engaging the duke of Britanny to enter into the confederacy. CHAP. XXII. 1474.

THE prospect of a French war was always a sure means of making the parliament open their purses, as far as the habits of that age would permit. They voted the king a tenth of rents, or two shillings in the pound; which must have been very inaccurately levied, since it produced only 31,460 pounds; and they added to this supply a whole fifteenth, and three quarters of another [x]: But as the king deemed these sums still unequal to the undertaking, he attempted to levy money by way of *benevolence*; a kind of exaction, which, except during the reign of Richard II. had scarcely ever been practised in former times, and which, though the consent of the parties was pretended to be gained, could not be deemed entirely voluntary [y]. The clauses, annexed to the parliamentary grant, show sufficiently the spirit of the nation in this respect. The money levied by the fifteenth was not to be put into the king's hands, but to be kept in religious houses; and if the expedition into France should not take place, it was immediately to be refunded to the people. After these grants, the parliament was dissolved, which had sat near two years and a half, and had undergone several prorogations; a practice not very usual at that time in England.

[w] Rymer, vol. xi. p. 806, 807, 808, &c.

[x] Cotton, p. 696, 700. Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 558.

[y] Hall, fol. 226. Habington, p. 461. Graston, p. 719. Fabian, fol. 221.

THE

CHAP. XXII.

1475. Invasion of France.

THE king passed over to Calais with an army of 1500 men at arms, and 15000 archers; attended by all the chief nobility of England, who, prognosticating future successes from the past, were eager to appear on this great theatre of honour [z]. But all their sanguine hopes were damped, when they found, on entering the French territories, that neither did the constable open his gates to them, nor the duke of Burgundy bring them the smallest assistance. That prince, transported by his ardent temper, had carried all his armies to a great distance, and had employed them in wars on the frontiers of Germany, and against the duke of Lorrain: And though he came in person to Edward, and endeavoured to apologize for this breach of treaty, there was no prospect that they would be able this campaign to make a conjunction with the English. This circumstance gave great disgust to the king, and inclined him to hearken to those advances, which Lewis continually made him for an accommodation.

THAT monarch, more swayed by political views than by the point of honour, deemed no submissions too mean, which might free him from enemies, who had proved so formidable to his predecessors, and who, united to so many other enemies, might still shake the well-established government of France. It appears from Comines, that discipline was, at this time, very imperfect among the English; and that their civil wars, though long continued, yet, being always decided by hasty battles, had still left them ignorant of the improvements, which the military art was beginning to receive upon the continent [a]. But as Lewis was sensible, that the warlike genius of the

[z] Comines, liv. 4. chap. 5. This author says, (chap. 11.) that the king artfully brought over some of the richest of his subjects, who, he knew, would be soon tired of the war, and would promote all proposals of peace, which, he foresaw, would be soon necessary.

[a] Comines, liv. 4. chap. 5.

people

people would soon render them excellent soldiers, he was far from despising them for their present want of experience; and he employed all his art to detach them from the alliance of Burgundy. When Edward sent him a herald to claim the crown of France, and to carry him a defiance in case of refusal; so far from answering to this bravado in like haughty terms, he replied with great temper, and even made the herald a considerable present [b]: He took afterwards an opportunity of sending a herald to the English camp; and having given him directions to apply to the lords Stanley and Howard, who, he heard, were friends to peace, he desired the good offices of these noblemen in promoting an accommodation with their master [c]. As Edward was now fallen into like dispositions, a truce was soon concluded on terms more advantageous than honourable to Lewis. He stipulated to pay Edward immediately 75,000 crowns, on condition that he should withdraw his army from France, and promised to pay him 50,000 crowns a year during their joint lives: It was added, that the dauphin, when of age, should marry Edward's eldest daughter [d]. In order to ratify this treaty, the two monarchs agreed to have a personal interview; and for this purpose, suitable preparations were made at Pecquigni near Amiens: A close rail was drawn across a bridge in that place, with no larger intervals than would allow the arm to pass; a precaution against a similar accident to that which befel the duke of Burgundy in his conference with the dauphin at Montereau. Edward and Lewis came to the opposite sides; conferred privately together; and having confirmed their friendship, and interchanged many mutual civilities, they soon after parted [e].

CHAP. XXII.

1475.

29th Aug.

Peace of Pecquigni.

[b] Comines, liv. 4. chap. 5. Hall, fol. 227. [c] Comines, liv. 4. chap. 7. [d] Rymer, vol. xii. p. 17. [e] Comines, liv. 4. chap. 9.

LEWIS

CHAP. XXII.

1475.

LEWIS was anxious not only to gain the king's friendſhip; but alſo that of the nation, and of all the conſiderable perſons in the Engliſh court. He beſtowed penſions, to the amount of 16,000 crowns a year, on ſeveral of the king's favourites; on lord Haſtings two thouſand crowns; on lord Howard and others in proportion; and theſe great miniſters were not aſhamed thus to receive wages from a foreign prince [f]. As the two armies, after the concluſion of the truce, remained ſome time in the neighbourhood of each other, the Engliſh were not only admitted freely into Amiens, where Lewis reſided, but had alſo their charges defrayed, and had wine and victuals furniſhed them in every inn, without any payment's being demanded. They flocked thither in ſuch multitudes, that once above nine thouſand of them were in the town, and they might have made themſelves maſters of the king's perſon; but Lewis, concluding from their jovial and diſſolute manner of living, that they had no bad intentions, was careful not to betray the leaſt ſign of fear or jealouſy. And when Edward, informed of this diſorder, deſired him to ſhut the gates againſt them; he replied, that he would never agree to exclude the Engliſh from the place where he reſided; but that Edward, if he pleaſed, might recall them, and place his own officers at the gates of Amiens to prevent their returning [g].

LEWIS's deſire of confirming a mutual amity with England, engaged him even to make imprudent advances, which coſt him afterwards ſome pains to evade. In the conference at Pecquigni, he had ſaid to Edward, that he wiſhed to have a viſit from him at Paris; that he would there endeavour to amuſe him with the ladies; and that, in caſe any offences were then committed, he would aſſign him the cardinal of Bourbon for confeſſor, who, from fellow-feeling, would not be over and above ſevere in the

[f] Hall, fol. 235. [g] Comines, liv. 4. chap. 9. Hall, fol. 233.

penances

penances which he would enjoin. This hint made deeper impreſſion than Lewis intended. Lord Howard, who accompanied him back to Amiens, told him, in confidence, that, if he were ſo diſpoſed, it would not be impoſſible to perſuade Edward to take a journey with him to Paris, where they might make merry together. Lewis pretended at firſt not to hear this offer; but on Howard's repeating it, he expreſſed his concern, that his wars with the duke of Burgundy would not permit him to attend his royal gueſt, and do him the honours he intended. "Edward," ſaid he, privately to Comines, "is a very "handſome and a very amorous prince: Some lady at "Paris may like him as well as he ſhall do her; and may "invite him to return in another manner. It is bet-"ter that the ſea be between us [h]."

CHAP. XXII. 1475.

THIS treaty did very little honour to either of theſe monarchs: It diſcovered the imprudence of Edward, who had taken his meaſures ſo ill with his allies, as to be obliged, after ſuch expenſive preparations, to return without making any acquiſitions, adequate to them: It ſhowed the want of dignity in Lewis, who, rather than run the hazard of a battle, agreed to ſubject his kingdom to a tribute, and thus acknowledge the ſuperiority of a neighbouring prince, poſſeſſed of leſs power and territory than himſelf. But as Lewis made intereſt the ſole teſt of honour, he thought, that all the advantages of the treaty were on his ſide, and that he had over-reached Edward, by ſending him out of France on ſuch eaſy terms. For this reaſon, he was very ſolicitous to conceal his triumph; and he ſtrictly enjoined his courtiers never to ſhow the Engliſh the leaſt ſign of mockery or deriſion. But he did not himſelf very carefully obſerve ſo prudent a rule: He could not forbear, one day, in the joy of his heart, throwing out ſome raillery on the eaſy ſimplicity

[h] Comines, liv. 4. chap. 10. Habington, p. 469.

CHAP. XXII.

1475. of Edward and his council; when he perceived, that he was overheard by a Gascon, who had settled in England. He was immediately sensible of his indiscretion; sent a message to the gentleman; and offered him such advantages in his own country, as engaged him to remain in France. *It is but just*, said he, *that I pay the penalty of my talkativeness* [1].

THE most honourable part of Lewis's treaty with Edward was the stipulation for the liberty of queen Margaret, who, though after the death of her husband and son she could no longer be formidable to government, was still detained in custody by Edward. Lewis paid fifty thousand crowns for her ransom; and that princess, who had been so active on the stage of the world, and who had experienced such a variety of fortune, passed the remainder of her days in tranquillity and privacy, till the year 1482, when she died: An admirable princess, but more illustrious by her undaunted spirit in adversity, than by her moderation in prosperity. She seems neither to have enjoyed the virtues, nor been subject to the weaknesses of her sex; and was as much tainted with the ferocity, as endowed with the courage, of that barbarous age, in which she lived.

THOUGH Edward had so little reason to be satisfied with the conduct of the duke of Burgundy, he reserved to that prince a power of acceding to the treaty of Pecquigni: But Charles, when the offer was made him, haughtily replied, that he was able to support himself without the assistance of England, and that he would make no peace with Lewis, till three months after Edward's return into his own country. This prince possessed all the ambition and courage of a conqueror; but being defective in policy and prudence, qualities no less essential, he was unfortunate in all his enterprizes; and perished

[1] Comines, liv. 3. chap. 10.

at

at last in battle against the Swiss [k]; a people whom he despised, and who, though brave and free, had hitherto been in a manner overlooked in the general system of Europe. This event, which happened in the year 1477, produced a great alteration in the views of all the princes, and was attended with consequences which were felt for many generations. Charles left only one daughter, Mary, by his first wife; and this princess, being heir of his opulent and extensive dominions, was courted by all the potentates of Christendom, who contended for the possession of so rich a prize. Lewis, the head of her family, might, by a proper application, have obtained this match for the dauphin, and have thereby united to the crown of France all the provinces of the Low Countries, together with Burgundy, Artois, and Picardy; which would at once have rendered his kingdom an overmatch for all his neighbours. But a man wholly interested is as rare as one entirely endowed with the opposite quality; and Lewis, though impregnable to all the sentiments of generosity and friendship, was, on this occasion, carried from the road of true policy by the passions of animosity and revenge. He had imbibed so deep a hatred of the house of Burgundy, that he rather chose to subdue the princess by arms, than unite her to his family by marriage: He conquered the dutchy of Burgundy and that part of Picardy, which had been ceded to Philip the Good by the treaty of Arras: But he forced the states of the Netherlands to bestow their sovereign in marriage on Maximilian of Austria, son of the emperor, Frederic, from whom they looked for protection in their present distresses: And by these means, France lost the opportunity, which she never could recover, of making that important acquisition of power and territory.

CHAP. XXII.

1477.

[k] Comines, liv. 5. chap. 8.

CHAP. XXII.

1477. DURING this intereſting criſis, Edward was no leſs defective in policy, and was no leſs actuated by private paſſions, unworthy of a ſovereign and a ſtateſman. Jealouſy of his brother, Clarence, had cauſed him to neglect the advances which were made of marrying that prince, now a widower, to the heireſs of Burgundy [l]; and he ſent her propoſals of eſpouſing Anthony earl of Rivers, brother to his queen, who ſtill retained an entire aſcendant over him. But the match was rejected with diſdain [m]; and Edward, reſenting this treatment of his brother-in-law, permitted France to proceed without interruption in her conqueſts over his defenceleſs ally. Any pretence ſufficed him for abandoning himſelf entirely to indolence and pleaſure, which were now become his ruling paſſions. The only object, which divided his attention, was the improving of the public revenue, which had been dilapidated by the neceſſities or negligence of his predeceſſors; and ſome of his expedients for that purpoſe, though unknown to us, were deemed, during the time, oppreſſive to the people [n]. The detail of private wrongs naturally eſcapes the notice of hiſtory; but an act of tyranny, of which Edward was guilty in his own family, has been taken notice of by all writers, and has met with general and deſerved cenſure.

Trial and execution of the duke of Clarence.

THE duke of Clarence, by all his ſervices in deſerting Warwic, had never been able to regain the king's friendſhip, which he had forfeited by his former confederacy with that nobleman. He was ſtill regarded at court as a man of a dangerous and a fickle character; and the imprudent openneſs and violence of his temper, though it rendered him much leſs dangerous, tended extremely to multiply his enemies, and to enrage them againſt him. Among theſe, he had had the misfortune to give diſplea-

l Polyd. Virg. Hall, fol. 240. Hollingſhed, p. 703. Habington, p. 474. Grafton, p. 742. m Hall, fol. 240. n Ibid. 241. Hiſt. Croyl. cont. p. 559.

ſure

sure to the queen herself, as well as to his brother, the duke of Gloucester, a prince of the deepest policy, of the most unrelenting ambition, and the least scrupulous in the means which he employed for the attainment of his ends. A combination between these potent adversaries being secretly formed against Clarence, it was determined to begin by attacking his friends; in hopes, that, if he patiently endured this injury, his pusillanimity would dishonour him in the eyes of the public; if he made resistance and expressed resentment, his passion would betray him into measures, which might give them advantages against him. The king, hunting one day in the park of Thomas Burdet of Arrow, in Warwickshire, had killed a white buck, which was a great favourite of the owner; and Burdet, vexed at the loss, broke into a passion, and wished the horns of the deer in the belly of the person, who had advised the king to commit that insult upon him. This natural expression of resentment, which would have been overlooked or forgotten, had it fallen from any other person, was rendered criminal and capital in that gentleman, by the friendship in which he had the misfortune to live with the duke of Clarence: He was tried for his life; the judges and jury were found servile enough to condemn him; and he was publicly beheaded at Tyburn for this pretended offence [o]. About the same time, one John Stacey, an ecclesiastic, much connected with the duke, as well as with Burdet, was exposed to a like iniquitous and barbarous prosecution. This person, being more learned in mathematics and astronomy than was usual in that age, lay under the imputation of necromancy with the ignorant vulgar; and the court laid hold of this popular rumour to effect his destruction. He was brought to his trial for that imaginary crime; many of the greatest peers

CHAP. XXII. 1477.

[o] Habington, p. 475. Holingshed, p. 703. Sir Thomas More in Kennet, p. 498.

CHAP. XXII.

countenanced the prosecution by their presence; he was condemned, put to the torture, and executed [p].

1477. THE duke of Clarence was alarmed, when he found these acts of tyranny exercised on all around him: He reflected on the fate of the good duke of Gloucester in the last reign, who, after seeing the most infamous pretences employed for the destruction of his nearest connections, at last fell himself a victim to the vengeance of his enemies. But Clarence, instead of securing his own life against the present danger, by silence and reserve, was open and loud in justifying the innocence of his friends, and in exclaiming against the iniquity of their prosecutors. The king, highly offended with his freedom, or using that pretence against him, committed him to the Tower [q], summoned a parliament, and tried him for his life before the house of peers, the supreme tribunal of the nation.

1478. 16th Jan.

THE duke was accused of arraigning public justice, by maintaining the innocence of men, who had been condemned in courts of judicature; and of inveighing against the iniquity of the king, who had given orders for their prosecution [r]. Many rash expressions were imputed to him, and some too reflecting on Edward's legitimacy; but he was not accused of any overt act of treason; and even the truth of these speeches may be doubted of, since the liberty of judgment was taken from the court, by the king's appearing personally as his brother's accuser [s], and pleading the cause against him. But a sentence of condemnation, even when this extraordinary circumstance had not place, was a necessary consequence, in those times, of any prosecution by the court or the prevailing party; and the duke of Clarence was accordingly pronounced guilty by the peers. The house of

[p] Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 561. [q] Ibid. p. 562. [r] Stowe, p. 430. [s] Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 562.

commons

commons were no leſs ſlaviſh and unjuſt: They both petitioned for the execution of the duke, and afterwards paſſed a bill of attainder againſt him [t]. The meaſures of the parliament, during that age, furniſh us with examples of a ſtrange contraſt of freedom and ſervility: They ſcruple to grant, and ſometimes refuſe, to the king the ſmalleſt ſupplies, the moſt neceſſary for the ſupport of government, even the moſt neceſſary for the maintenance of wars, for which the nation, as well as the parliament itſelf, expreſſed great fondneſs: But they never ſcruple to concur in the moſt flagrant act of injuſtice or tyranny, which falls on any individual, however diſtinguiſhed by birth or merit. Theſe maxims, ſo ungenerous, ſo oppoſite to all principles of good government, ſo contrary to the practice of preſent parliaments, are very remarkable in all the tranſactions of the Engliſh hiſtory for more than a century after the period in which we are now engaged. CHAP. XXII. 1478.

THE only favour, which the king granted his brother after his condemnation, was to leave him the choice of his death; and he was privately drowned in a butt of Malmeſey in the Tower: A whimſical choice, which implies that he had an extraordinary paſſion for that liquor. The duke left two children, by the eldeſt daughter of the earl of Warwic; a ſon created an earl by his grandfather's title, and a daughter, afterwards counteſs of Saliſbury. Both this prince and princeſs were alſo unfortunate in their end, and died a violent death; a fate, which, for many years, attended almoſt all the deſcendants of the royal blood in England. There prevails a report, that a chief ſource of the violent proſecution of the duke of Clarence, whoſe name was George, was a current prophecy, that the king's ſons ſhould be murdered by one, the initial letter of whoſe name was G [u]. It 18th Feb.

[t] Stowe, p. 430. Hiſt. Croyl. cont. p. 562.

[u] Hall, fol. 239. Holingſhed, p. 703. Grafton, p. 741. Polyd. Virg. p. 537. Sir Thomas More in Kennet, p. 497.

CHAP. XXII.

1478. is not impoſſible, but, in thoſe ignorant times, ſuch a ſilly reaſon might have ſome influence: But it is more probable, that the whole ſtory is the invention of a ſubſequent period, and founded on the murder of theſe children by the duke of Gloceſter. Comines remarks, that, at that time, the Engliſh never were without ſome ſuperſtitious prophecy or other, by which they accounted for every event.

ALL the glories of Edward's reign terminated with the civil wars; where his laurels too were extremely ſullied with blood, violence, and cruelty. His ſpirit ſeems afterwards to have been ſunk in indolence and pleaſure, or his meaſures were fruſtrated by imprudence and the want of foreſight. There was no object, on which he was more intent, than to have all his daughters ſettled by ſplendid marriages, though moſt of theſe princeſſes were yet in their infancy, and though the completion of his views, it was obvious, muſt depend on numberleſs accidents, which were impoſſible to be foreſeen or prevented. His eldeſt daughter, Elizabeth, was contracted to the dauphin; his ſecond, Cicely, to the eldeſt ſon of James III. king of Scotland; his third, Anne, to Philip, the eldeſt ſon of Maximilian and the dutcheſs of Burgundy; his fourth, Catharine, to John, ſon and heir to Ferdinand, king of Arragan, and Iſabella, queen of Caſtile [w]. None of theſe projected marriages took place; and the king himſelf ſaw in his life-time the rupture of the firſt, that with the dauphin, for which he had always diſcovered a peculiar fondneſs. Lewis, who paid no regard to treaties or engagements, found his advantage in contracting the dauphin to the princeſs Margaret, daughter of Maximilian; and the king, notwithſtanding his indolence, prepared
1482. to revenge this indignity. The French monarch, eminent for prudence, as well as perfidy, endeavoured to guard againſt the blow; and by a proper diſtribution of

[w] Rymer, vol. xi. p. 110.

preſents

CHAP. XXII.

1482.

preſents in the court of Scotland, he incited James to make war upon England. This prince, who lived on bad terms with his own nobility, and whoſe force was very unequal to the enterprize, levied an army; but when he was ready to enter England, the barons, conſpiring againſt his favourites, put them to death without trial; and the army preſently diſbanded. The duke of Gloceſter, attended by the duke of Albany, James's brother, who had been baniſhed his country, entered Scotland at the head of an army, took Berwic, and obliged the Scots to accept of a peace, by which they reſigned that fortreſs to Edward. This ſucceſs emboldened the king to think more ſeriouſly of a French war; but while he was making preparations for that enterprize, he was ſeized with a diſtemper, of which he expired in the forty-ſecond year of his age, and the twenty-third of his reign: A prince more ſplendid and ſhowy, than either prudent or virtuous; brave, though cruel; addicted to pleaſure, though capable of activity in great emergencies; and leſs fitted to prevent ills by wiſe precautions, than to remedy them, after they took place, by his vigour and enterprize. Beſides five daughters, this king left two ſons; Edward, prince of Wales, his ſucceſſor, then in his thirteenth year, and Richard, duke of York, in his ninth.

9th April. Death and character of Edward IV.

CHAP. XXIII.

EDWARD V. and RICHARD III.

Edward V. —— *State of the court* —— *The earl of Rivers arrested* —— *Duke of Gloceſter protector* —— *Execution of Lord Haſtings* —— *The protector aims at the crown* —— *Aſſumes the crown* —— *Murder of Edward* V. *and of the duke of York* —— *Richard* III. —— *Duke of Buckingham diſcontented* —— *The earl of Richmond* —— *Buckingham executed* —— *Invaſion by the earl of Richmond* —— *Battle of Boſworth* —— *Death and character of Richard* III.

EDWARD V.

CHAP. XXIII.

1483.

State of the court.

DURING the later years of Edward IV. the nation, having, in a great meaſure, forgot the bloody feuds between the two roſes, and peaceably acquieſcing in the eſtabliſhed government, was agitated only by ſome court-intrigues, which, being reſtrained by the authority of the king, ſeemed nowiſe to endanger the public tranquillity. Theſe intrigues aroſe from the perpetual rivalſhip between two parties; one conſiſting of the queen and her relations, particularly the earl of Rivers, her brother, and the marquis of Dorſet, her ſon; the other compoſed of the ancient nobility, who envied the ſudden growth and unlimited credit of that aſpiring family [x]. At the head of this latter party was the duke of Buckingham, a man of very noble birth, of ample

[x] Sir Thomas More, p. 481.

poſſeſſions,

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

poſſeſſions, of great alliances, of ſhining parts; who, though he had married the queen's ſiſter, was too haughty to act in ſubſerviency to her inclinations, and aimed rather at maintaining an independant influence and authority. Lord Haſtings, the chamberlain, was another leader of the ſame party; and as this nobleman had, by his bravery and enterprize, as well as by his approved fidelity, acquired the confidence and favour of his maſter, he had been able, though with ſome difficulty, to ſupport himſelf againſt the credit of the queen. The Lords Howard and Stanley maintained a connexion with theſe two noblemen, and brought a conſiderable acceſſion of influence and reputation to their party. All the other barons, who had no particular dependance on the queen, adhered to the ſame intereſt; and the people in general, from their natural envy againſt the prevailing power, bore great favour to the cauſe of theſe noblemen.

But Edward knew, that, though he himſelf had been able to overawe thoſe rival factions, many diſorders might ariſe from their conteſts during the minority of his ſon; and he therefore took care, in his laſt illneſs, to ſummon together ſeveral of the leaders on both ſides, and, by compoſing their ancient quarrels, to provide, as far as poſſible, for the future tranquillity of the government. After expreſſing his intentions, that his brother, the duke of Gloceſter, then abſent in the north, ſhould be entruſted with the regency, he recommended to them peace and unanimity during the tender years of his ſon; repreſented to them the dangers which muſt attend the continuance of their animoſities; and engaged them to embrace each other with all the appearance of the moſt cordial reconciliation. But this temporary or feigned agreement laſted no longer than the king's life: He had no ſooner expired, than the jealouſies of the parties broke out afreſh: And each of them applied, by ſeparate meſ-

CHAP. XXIII.

1483.

sages, to the duke of Gloceſter, and endeavoured to acquire his favour and friendſhip.

THIS prince, during his brother's reign, had endeavoured to live on good terms with both parties; and his high birth, his extenſive abilities, and his great ſervices, had enabled him to ſupport himſelf without falling into a dependance on either. But the new ſituation of affairs, when the ſupreme power was devolved upon him, immediately changed his meaſures; and he ſecretly determined to preſerve no longer that neutrality which he had hitherto maintained. His exorbitant ambition, unreſtrained by any principle either of juſtice or humanity, made him carry his views to the poſſeſſion of the crown itſelf; and as this object could not be attained without the ruin of the queen and her family, he fell, without heſitation, into concert with the oppoſite party. But being ſenſible, that the moſt profound diſſimulation was requiſite for effecting his criminal purpoſes, he redoubled his profeſſions of zeal and attachment to that princeſs; and he gained ſuch credit with her, as to influence her conduct in a point, which, as it was of the utmoſt importance, was violently diſputed between the oppoſite factions.

THE young king, at the time of his father's death, reſided in the caſtle of Ludlow, on the borders of Wales; whither he had been ſent, that the influence of his preſence might overawe the Welſh, and reſtore the tranquillity of that country, which had been diſturbed by ſome late commotions. His perſon was committed to the care of his uncle, the earl of Rivers, the moſt accompliſhed nobleman in England, who, having united an uncommon taſte for literature [y] to great abilities in buſineſs, and valour in the field, was entitled, by his

[y] This nobleman firſt introduced the noble art of printing into England. Caxton was recommended by him to the patronage of Edward IV. See Catalogue of royal and noble authors.

talents,

talents, ſtill more than by nearneſs of blood, to direct the education of the young monarch. The queen, anxious to preſerve that aſcendant over her ſon, which ſhe had long maintained over her huſband, wrote to the earl of Rivers, that he ſhould levy a body of forces, in order to eſcort the king to London, to protect him during his coronation, and to keep him from falling into the hands of their enemies. The oppoſite faction, ſenſible that Edward was now of an age when great advantages could be made of his name and countenance, and was approaching to the age when he would be legally intitled to exert in perſon his authority, foreſaw, that the tendency of this meaſure was to perpetuate their ſubjection under their rivals; and they vehemently oppoſed a reſolution, which they repreſented as the ſignal for renewing a civil war in the kingdom. Lord Haſtings threatened to depart inſtantly to his government of Calais [z]: The other nobles ſeemed reſolute to oppoſe force by force: And as the duke of Gloceſter, on pretence of pacifying the quarrel, had declared againſt all appearance of an armed power, which might be dangerous, and was nowiſe neceſſary, the queen, truſting to the ſincerity of his friendſhip, and overawed by ſo violent an oppoſition, revoked her orders to her brother, and deſired him to bring up no greater retinue than ſhould be neceſſary to ſupport the ſtate and dignity of the young ſovereign [a].

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

THE duke of Gloceſter, meanwhile, ſet out from York, attended by a numerous train of the northern gentry. When he reached Northampton, he was joined by the duke of Buckingham, who was alſo attended by a ſplendid retinue; and as he heard that the king was every hour expected on that road, he reſolved to await his arrival, under colour of conducting him thence in perſon to London. The earl of Rivers, apprehenſive that the place would be

[z] Hiſt. Croyl. cont. p. 564, 565.

[a] Sir T. More, p. 483.

too

CHAP. XXIII.

1483. too narrow to contain so many attendants, sent his pupil forward by another road to Stony-Stratford; and came himself to Northampton, in order to apologize for this measure, and to pay his respects to the duke of Gloucester. He was received with the greatest appearance of cordiality: He passed the evening in an amicable manner with Gloucester and Buckingham: He proceeded on the road with them next day to join the king: But as he was entering Stony-Stratford, he was arrested by orders from the duke of Gloucester [b]: Sir Richard Gray, one of the queen's sons, was at the same time put under a guard, together with Sir Thomas Vaughan, who possessed a considerable office in the king's household; and all the prisoners were instantly conducted to Pomfret. Gloucester approached the young prince with the greatest demonstrations of respect; and endeavoured to satisfy him with regard to the violence committed on his uncle and brother: But Edward, much attached to these near relations, by whom he had been tenderly educated, was not such a master of dissimulation as to conceal his displeasure [c].

The earl of Rivers arrested. 1st of May.

THE people, however, were extremely rejoiced at this revolution; and the duke was received in London with the loudest acclamations: But the queen no sooner received intelligence of her brother's imprisonment, than she foresaw, that Gloucester's violence would not stop there, and that her own ruin, if not that of all her children, was finally determined. She therefore fled into the sanctuary of Westminster, attended by the marquis of Dorset; and she carried thither the five princesses, together with the duke of York [d]. She trusted, that the ecclesiastical privileges, which had formerly, during the total ruin of her husband and family, given her pro-

4th May.

[b] Hist. Croyl cont. p. 564, 565. [c] Sir T. More, p. 484. [d] Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 563.

tection

tection againſt the fury of the Lancaſtrian faction, would not now be violated by her brother-in-law, while her ſon was on the throne; and ſhe reſolved to await there the return of better fortune. But Gloceſter, anxious to have the duke of York in his power, propoſed to take him by force from the ſanctuary; and he repreſented to the privy council, both the indignity put upon the government by the queen's ill-grounded apprehenſions, and the neceſſity of the young prince's appearance at the enſuing coronation of his brother. It was farther urged, that eccleſiaſtical privileges were originally intended only to give protection to unhappy men, perſecuted for their debts or crimes; and were entirely uſeleſs to a perſon, who, by reaſon of his tender age, could lie under the burden of neither, and who, for the ſame reaſon, was utterly incapable of claiming ſecurity from any ſanctuary. But the two archbiſhops, cardinal Bourchier, the primate, and Rotherham archbiſhop of York, proteſting againſt the ſacrilege of this meaſure; it was agreed, that they ſhould firſt endeavour to bring the queen to compliance by perſuaſion, before any violence ſhould be employed againſt her. Theſe prelates were perſons of known integrity and honour; and being themſelves entirely perſuaded of the duke's good intentions, they employed every argument, accompanied with earneſt entreaties, exhortations, and aſſurances, to bring her over to the ſame opinion. She continued long obſtinate, and inſiſted, that the duke of York, by living in the ſanctuary, was not only ſecure himſelf, but gave ſecurity to the king, whoſe life no one would dare to attempt, while his ſucceſſor and avenger remained in ſafety. But finding, that none ſupported her in theſe ſentiments, and that force, in caſe of refuſal, was threatened by the council, ſhe at laſt complied, and produced her ſon to the two prelates. She was here on a ſudden ſtruck with a kind of preſage of his future fate: She tenderly embraced

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

braced him; she bedewed him with her tears; and bidding him an eternal adieu, delivered him, with many expressions of regret and reluctance, into their custody [e].

Duke of Gloucester protector.

The duke of Gloucester, being the nearest male of the royal family, capable of exercising the government, seemed intitled, by the customs of the realm, to the office of protector; and the council, not waiting for the consent of parliament, made no scruple of investing him with that high dignity [f]. The general prejudice, entertained by the nobility against the queen and her kindred, occasioned this precipitation and irregularity; and no one foresaw any danger to the succession, much less to the lives, of the young princes, from a measure so obvious and so natural. Besides that the duke had hitherto been able to cover, by the most profound dissimulation, his fierce and savage nature; the numerous issue of Edward, together with the two children of Clarence, seemed to be an eternal obstacle to his ambition; and it appeared equally impracticable for him to destroy so many persons possessed of a preferable title, and imprudent to exclude them. But a man, who had abandoned all principles of honour and humanity, was soon carried by his predominant passion beyond the reach of fear or precaution; and Gloucester, having so far succeeded in his views, no longer hesitated in removing the other obstructions, which lay between him and the throne. The death of the earl of Rivers, and of the other prisoners detained in Pomfret, was first determined; and he easily obtained the consent of the duke of Buckingham, as well as of lord Hastings, to this violent and sanguinary measure. However easy it was, in those times, to procure a sentence against the most innocent person, it appeared still more easy to dispatch an enemy, without any trial or form of process; and orders were accordingly issued to Sir Richard Ratcliffe, a proper instrument in the

[e] Sir T. More, p. 491.

[f] Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 566.

hands of this tyrant, to cut off the heads of the pri- CHAP. XXIII.
ſoners. The protector then aſſailed the fidelity of
Buckingham by all the arguments capable of ſwaying a 1483.
vicious mind, which knew no motive of action but intereſt and ambition. He repreſented, that the execution of perſons ſo nearly related to the king, whom that prince ſo openly profeſſed to love, and whoſe fate he ſo much reſented, would never paſs unpuniſhed; and all the actors in that ſcene were bound in prudence to prevent the effects of his future vengeance: That it would be impoſſible to keep the queen for ever at a diſtance from her ſon, and equally impoſſible to prevent her from inſtilling into his tender mind the thoughts of retaliating, by like executions, the ſanguinary inſults committed on her family: That the only method of obviating theſe miſchiefs was by putting the ſceptre in the hands of a man, of whoſe friendſhip the duke might be aſſured, and whoſe years and experience taught him to pay reſpect to merit and to the rights of ancient nobility: And that the ſame neceſſity, which had carried them ſo far in reſiſting the uſurpation of theſe intruders, muſt juſtify them in attempting farther innovations, and in making, by national conſent, a new ſettlement of the ſucceſſion. To theſe reaſons, he added the offers of great private advantages to the duke of Buckingham; and he eaſily obtained from him a promiſe of ſupporting him in all his enterprizes.

THE duke of Gloceſter, knowing the importance of gaining lord Haſtings, ſounded at a diſtance his ſentiments, by means of Cateſby, a lawyer, who was a great confident of that nobleman; but found him impregnable in his allegiance and fidelity to the children of Edward, who had ever honoured him with his friendſhip[g]. He ſaw, therefore, that there were no longer any meaſures

[g] Sir T. More, p. 493.

CHAP. XXIII.

1483. 13th June.

to be kept with him; and he determined to ruin utterly the man, whom he despaired of engaging to concur in his usurpation. On the very day when Rivers, Gray, and Vaughan were executed, or rather murdered, at Pomfret, by the advice of Hastings, the protector summoned a council in the Tower; whither that nobleman, suspecting no design against him, repaired without hesitation. The duke of Gloucester was capable of committing the most bloody and treacherous murders with the utmost coolness and indifference. On taking his place at the council-board, he appeared in the easiest and most jovial humour imaginable. He seemed to indulge himself in familiar conversation with the counsellors, before they should enter on business; and having paid some compliments to Morton, bishop of Ely, on the good and early strawberries which he raised in his garden at Holborn, he begged the favour of having a dish of them, which that prelate immediately dispatched a servant to bring to him. The protector then left the council, as if called away by some other business; but soon after returning with an angry and enflamed countenance, he asked them, what punishment those deserved that had plotted against *his* life, who was so nearly related to the king, and was entrusted with the administration of government? Hastings replied, that they merited the punishment of traitors. *These traitors*, cried the protector, *are the sorceress, my brother's wife, and Jane Shore, his mistress, with others, their associates: See to what a condition they have reduced me by their incantations and witchcraft:* Upon which he laid bare his arm, all shrivelled and decayed. But the counsellors, who knew that this infirmity had attended him from his birth, looked on each other with amazement; and above all, lord Hastings, who, as he had, since Edward's death, engaged in an intrigue with Jane Shore [h], was naturally anxious con-

[h] See note [K] at the end of the volume.

cerning

cerning the iſſue of theſe extraordinary proceedings. *Certainly, my lord*, ſaid he, *if they be guilty of theſe crimes, they deſerve the ſevereſt puniſhment. And do you reply to me*, exclaimed the protector, *with your* ifs *and your* ands? *You are the chief abettor of that witch, Shore: You are yourſelf a traitor: And I ſwear by St. Paul, that I will not dine before your head be brought me.* He ſtruck the table with his hand: Armed men ruſhed in at the ſignal: The counſellors were thrown into the utmoſt conſternation: And one of the guards, as if by accident or miſtake, aimed a blow with a poll-ax at lord Stanley, who, aware of the danger, ſlunk under the table, and though he ſaved his life, received a ſevere wound on the head, in the protector's preſence. Haſtings was ſeized, was hurried away, and inſtantly beheaded on a timber-log, which lay in the court of the Tower [i]. Two hours after, a proclamation, well penned and fairly written, was read to the citizens of London, enumerating his offences, and apologizing to them, from the ſuddenneſs of the diſcovery, for the ſudden execution of that nobleman, who was very popular among them: But the ſaying of a merchant was much talked of on that occaſion, who remarked, that the proclamation was certainly drawn by the ſpirit of prophecy [k].

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

Execution of lord Haſtings.

Lord Stanley, the archbiſhop of York, the biſhop of Ely, and other counſellors, were committed priſoners in different chambers of the Tower: And the protector, in order to carry on the farce of his accuſations, ordered the goods of Jane Shore to be ſeized; and he ſummoned her to anſwer before the council for ſorcery and witchcraft. But as no proofs, which could be received even in that ignorant age, were produced againſt her, he directed her to be tried in the ſpiritual court, for her adulteries and lewdneſs; and ſhe did public penance in a white

[i] Hiſt. Croyl. cont. p. 566. [k] Sir. T. More, p. 496.

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

ſheet at St. Paul's. This lady was born of reputable parents in London, was well educated, and married to a ſubſtantial citizen; but unhappily, views of intereſt, more than the maid's inclinations, had been conſulted in the match, and her mind, though framed for virtue, had proved unable to reſiſt the allurements of Edward, who ſolicited her favours. But while ſeduced from her duty by this gay and amorous monarch, ſhe ſtill made herſelf reſpectable by her other virtues; and the aſcendant, which her charms and vivacity long maintained over him, was all employed in acts of beneficence and humanity. She was ſtill forward to oppoſe calumny, to protect the oppreſſed, to relieve the indigent; and her good offices, the genuine dictates of her heart, never waited the ſolicitation of preſents, or the hopes of reciprocal ſervices. But ſhe lived not only to feel the bitterneſs of ſhame impoſed on her by this tyrant, but to experience, in old age and poverty, the ingratitude of thoſe courtiers, who had long ſolicited her friendſhip, and been protected by her credit. No one, among the great multitudes, whom ſhe had obliged, had the humanity to bring her conſolation or relief: She languiſhed out her life in ſolitude and indigence: And amidſt a court, inured to the moſt atrocious crimes, the frailties of this woman juſtified all violations of friendſhip towards her, and all neglect of former obligations.

The protector aims at the crown.

THESE acts of violence, exerciſed againſt all the neareſt connexions of the late king, prognoſticated the ſevereſt fate to his defenceleſs children; and after the murder of Haſtings, the protector no longer made a ſecret of his intentions to uſurp the crown. The licentious life of Edward, who was not reſtrained in his pleaſures either by honour or prudence, afforded a pretence for declaring his marriage with the queen invalid, and all his poſterity illegitimate. It was aſſerted, that, before eſpouſing the lady

Elizabeth Gray, he had paid court to the lady Eleanor Talbot, daughter of the earl of Shrewſbury; and being repulſed by the virtue of that lady, he was obliged, ere he could gratify his deſires, to conſent to a private marriage, without any witneſſes, by Stillington, biſhop of Bath, who afterwards divulged the ſecret [1]. It was alſo maintained, that the act of attainder, paſſed againſt the duke of Clarence, had virtually incapacitated his children from ſucceeding to the crown; and theſe two families being ſet aſide, the protector remained the only true and legitimate heir of the houſe of York. But as it would be difficult, if not impoſſible, to prove the preceding marriage of the late king; and as the rule, which excludes the heirs of an attainted blood from private ſucceſſions, was never extended to the crown; the protector reſolved to make uſe of another plea ſtill more ſhameful and ſcandalous. His partizans were taught to maintain, that both Edward IV. and the duke of Clarence, were illegitimate; that the dutcheſs of York had received different lovers into her bed, who were the fathers of theſe children; that their reſemblance to thoſe gallants was a ſufficient proof of their ſpurious birth; and that the duke of Gloceſter alone, of all her ſons, appeared, by his features and countenance, to be the true offſpring of the duke of York. Nothing can be imagined more impudent than this aſſertion, which threw ſo foul an imputation on his own mother, a princeſs of irreproachable virtue, and then alive; yet the place choſen for firſt promulgating it was the pulpit, before a large congregation, and in the protector's preſence. Dr. Shaw was appointed to preach in St. Paul's; and having choſen this paſſage for his text, *Baſtard ſlips ſhall not thrive*, he enlarged on all the topics, which could diſcredit the birth of Edward IV. the duke of Clarence, and of all their children. He then broke

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

22d June.

[1] Hiſt. Croyl. cont. p. 567. Comines. Sir Thomas More, p. 482.

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

out in a panegyric on the duke of Gloceſter; and exclaimed, "Behold this excellent prince, the expreſs image "of his noble father, the genuine deſcendant of the "houſe of York; bearing, no leſs in the virtues of his "mind, than in the features of his countenance, the cha- "racter of the gallant Richard, once your hero and fa- "vourite: He alone is entitled to your allegiance: He "muſt deliver you from the dominion of all intruders: "He alone can reſtore the loſt glory and honour of the "nation." It was previouſly concerted, that, as the doctor ſhould pronounce theſe words, the duke of Gloceſter ſhould enter the church; and it was expected that the audience would cry out, *God ſave King Richard*; which would immediately have been laid hold of as a popular conſent, and interpreted to be the voice of the nation: But by a ridiculous miſtake, worthy of the whole ſcene, the duke did not appear, till after this exclamation was already recited by the preacher. The doctor was therefore obliged to repeat his rhetorical figure out of its proper place: The audience, leſs from the abſurd conduct of the diſcourſe, than from their deteſtation of theſe proceedings, kept a profound ſilence: And the protector and his preacher were equally abaſhed at the ill ſucceſs of their ſtratagem.

BUT the duke was too far advanced to recede from his criminal and ambitious purpoſe. A new expedient was tried to work on the people. The mayor, who was brother to Dr. Shaw, and entirely in the protector's intereſts, called an aſſembly of the citizens; where the duke of Buckingham, who poſſeſſed ſome talents for eloquence, harangued them on the protector's title to the crown, and diſplayed thoſe numerous virtues, of which, he pretended, that prince was poſſeſſed. He next aſked them, whether they would have the duke for king? and then ſtopped, in expectation of hearing the cry, *God ſave King Richard.* He was ſurprized

prized to obſerve them ſilent; and turning about to the mayor, aſked him the reaſon. The mayor replied, that perhaps they did not underſtand him. Buckingham then repeated his diſcourſe with ſome variation; inforced the ſame topics, aſked the ſame queſtion, and was received with the ſame ſilence. "I now ſee the cauſe," ſaid the mayor; "the citizens are not accuſtomed to be "harangued by any but their recorder; and know not "how to anſwer a perſon of your grace's quality." The recorder, Fitz-Williams, was then commanded to repeat the ſubſtance of the duke's ſpeech; but the man, who was averſe to the office, took care, throughout his whole diſcourſe, to have it underſtood, that he ſpoke nothing of himſelf, and that he only conveyed to them the ſenſe of the duke of Buckingham. Still the audience kept a profound ſilence: "This is wonderful obſtinacy," cried the duke: "Expreſs your meaning, my friends, one way or "other: When we apply to you on this occaſion, it is "merely from the regard which we bear to you. The "lords and commons have ſufficient authority, without "your conſent, to appoint a king: But I require you "here to declare in plain terms, whether or not you will "have the duke of Gloceſter for your ſovereign." After all theſe efforts, ſome of the meaneſt apprentices, incited by the protector's and Buckingham's ſervants, raiſed a feeble cry, *God ſave King Richard*[m]: The ſentiments of the nation were now ſufficiently declared: The voice of the people was the voice of God: And Buckingham, with the mayor, haſtened to Baynard's caſtle, where the protector then reſided, that they might make him a tender of the government. CHAP. XXIII. 1483. 25th June.

WHEN Richard was told, that a great multitude was in the court, he refuſed to appear to them, and pretended to be apprehenſive for his perſonal ſafety: A circumſtance

[m] Sir Thomas More, p. 496.

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

taken notice of by Buckingham, who obſerved to the citizens, that the prince was ignorant of the whole deſign. At laſt, he was perſuaded to ſtep forth, but he ſtill kept at ſome diſtance; and he aſked the meaning of their intruſion and importunity. Buckingham told him, that the nation was reſolved to have him for king: The protector declared his purpoſe of maintaining his loyalty to the preſent ſovereign, and exhorted them to adhere to the ſame reſolution. He was told, that the people had determined to have another prince; and if he rejected their unanimous voice, they muſt look out for one, who would be more compliant. This argument was too powerful to be reſiſted: He was prevailed on to accept of the crown: And he thenceforth acted as legitimate and rightful ſovereign.

The protector aſſumes the throne.

THIS ridiculous farce was ſoon after followed by a ſcene truly tragical: The murder of the two young princes. Richard gave orders to Sir Robert Brakenbury, conſtable of the Tower, to put his nephews to death; but this gentleman, who had ſentiments of honour, refuſed to have any hand in the infamous office. The tyrant then ſent for Sir James Tyrrel, who promiſed obedience; and he ordered Brakenbury to reſign to this gentleman the keys and government of the Tower for one night. Tyrrel, chuſing three aſſociates, Slater, Dighton and Foreſt, came in the night-time to the door of the chamber where the princes were lodged; and ſending in the aſſaſſins, he bade them execute their commiſſion, while he himſelf ſtaid without. They found the young princes in bed, and fallen into a profound ſleep. After ſuffocating them with the bolſter and pillows, they ſhowed their naked bodies to Tyrrel, who ordered them to be buried at the foot of the ſtairs, deep in the ground, under a heap of ſtones [n]. Theſe circumſtances were all confeſſed by the actors, in the following reign; and they were never

Murder of Edward V. and of the duke of York.

[n] Sir T. More, p. 50.

puniſhed

punished for the crime: Probably, because Henry, whose maxims of government were extremely arbitrary, desired to establish it as a principle, that the commands of the reigning sovereign ought to justify every enormity in those who paid obedience to them. But there is one circumstance not so easy to be accounted for: It is pretended, that Richard, displeased with this indecent manner of burying his nephews, whom he had murdered, gave his chaplain orders to dig up the bodies, and to inter them in consecrated ground; and as the man died soon after, the place of their burial remained unknown, and the bodies could never be found by any search, which Henry could make for them. Yet in the reign of Charles II. when there was occasion to remove some stones and to dig in the very spot, which was mentioned as the place of their first interment, the bones of two persons were there found, which by their size exactly corresponded to the age of Edward and his brother: They were concluded with certainty to be the remains of those princes, and were interred under a marble monument by orders of king Charles [o]. Perhaps, Richard's chaplain had died before he found an opportunity of executing his master's commands; and the bodies being supposed to be already removed, a diligent search was not made for them by Henry, in the place where they had been buried.

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

[o] Kennet, p. 551.

RICHARD

RICHARD III.

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

THE first acts of Richard's administration were to bestow rewards on those who had assisted him in usurping the crown, and to gain by favours those, who, he thought, were best able to support his future government. Thomas, lord Howard, was created duke of Norfolk; Sir Thomas Howard, his son, earl of Surrey; lord Lovel, a viscount, by the same name; even lord Stanley was set at liberty and made steward of the household. This nobleman had become obnoxious by his first opposition to Richard's views, and also by his marrying the countess dowager of Richmond, heir of the Somerset family; but sensible of the necessity of submitting to the present government, he feigned such zeal for Richard's service that he was received into favour, and even found means to be entrusted with the most important commands by that politic and jealous tyrant.

BUT the person, who, both from the greatness of his services, and the power and splendor of his family, was best intitled to favours under the new government, was the duke of Buckingham; and Richard seemed determined to spare no pains or bounty in securing him to his interests. Buckingham was descended from a daughter of Thomas of Woodstock, duke of Gloucester, uncle to Richard II. and by this pedigree, he not only was allied to the royal family, but had claims for dignities as well as estates, of a very extensive nature. The duke of Gloucester, and Henry earl of Derby, afterwards Henry IV. had married the two daughters and co-heirs of Bohun, earl of Hereford, one of the greatest of the ancient barons, whose immense property came thus to be divided into two shares. One was inherited by the family of Buckingham;

Buckingham; the other was united to the crown by the houſe of Lancaſter, and after the attainder of that royal line, was ſeized as legally devolved to them, by the ſovereigns of the houſe of York. The duke of Buckingham laid hold of the preſent opportunity, and claimed the reſtitution of that portion of the Hereford eſtate, which had eſcheated to the crown, as well as of the great office of conſtable, which had long continued by inheritance in his anceſtors of that family. Richard readily complied with theſe demands, which were probably the price ſtipulated to Buckingham for his aſſiſtance in promoting the uſurpation. That nobleman was inveſted with the office of conſtable; he received a grant of the eſtate of Hereford [p]; many other dignities and honours were conferred upon him; and the king thought himſelf ſure of preſerving the fidelity of a man, whoſe intereſts ſeemed ſo cloſely connected with thoſe of the preſent government. CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

Duke of Buckingham diſcontented.

BUT it was impoſſible, that friendſhip could long remain inviolate between two men of ſuch corrupt minds as Richard and the duke of Buckingham. Hiſtorians aſcribe their firſt rupture to the king's refuſal of making reſtitution of the Hereford eſtate; but it is certain from records, that he paſſed a grant for that purpoſe, and that the full demands of Buckingham were ſatisfied in this particular. Perhaps, Richard was ſoon ſenſible of the danger which might enſue from conferring ſuch an immenſe property on a man of ſo turbulent a diſpoſition, and afterwards raiſed difficulties about the execution of his own grant: Perhaps, he refuſed ſome other demands of Buckingham, whom he found it impoſſible to gratify for his paſt ſervices: Perhaps, he reſolved, according to the uſual maxim of politicians, to ſeize the firſt opportunity of ruining this powerful ſubject, who had been the principal inſtrument of his own elevation; and the diſcovery

[p] Dugdale's Baron. vol. i. p. 168, 169.

of

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

of this intention begat the first discontent in the duke of Buckingham. However this may be, it is certain, that the duke, soon after Richard's accession, began to form a conspiracy against the government, and attempted to overthrow that usurpation, which he himself had so zealously contributed to establish.

NEVER was there in any country an usurpation more flagrant than that of Richard, or more repugnant to every principle of justice and public interest. His claim was entirely founded on impudent allegations, never attempted to be proved, some of them incapable of proof, and all of them implying scandalous reflections on his own family, and on the persons with whom he was the most nearly connected. His title was never acknowledged by any national assembly, scarcely even by the lowest populace to whom he appealed; and it had become prevalent merely for want of some person of distinction, who might stand forth against him, and give a voice to those sentiments of general detestation, which arose in every bosom. Were men disposed to pardon these violations of public right, the sense of private and domestic duty, which is not to be effaced in the most barbarous times, must have begot an abhorrence against him; and have represented the murder of the young and innocent princes, his nephews, with whose protection he had been entrusted, in the most odious colours imaginable. To endure such a bloody usurper seemed to draw disgrace upon the nation, and to be attended with immediate danger to every individual, who was distinguished by birth, merit, or services. Such was become the general voice of the people; all parties were united in the same sentiments; and the Lancastrians, so long oppressed, and, of late, so much discredited, felt their blasted hopes again revive, and anxiously expected the consequences of these extraordinary events. The duke of Buckingham, whose family had been

been devoted to that intereſt, and who, by his mother, a daughter of Edmund, duke of Somerſet, was allied to the houſe of Lancaſter, was eaſily induced to eſpouſe the cauſe of this party, and to endeavour the reſtoring of it to its ancient ſuperiority. Morton, biſhop of Ely, a zealous Lancaſtrian, whom the king had impriſoned, and had afterwards committed to the cuſtody of Buckingham, encouraged theſe ſentiments; and by his exhortations the duke caſt his eye towards the young earl of Richmond, as the only perſon, who could free the nation from the tyranny of the preſent uſurper [q].

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

The earl of Richmond.

HENRY, earl of Richmond, was at this time detained in a kind of honourable cuſtody by the duke of Britanny; and his deſcent, which ſeemed to give him ſome pretenſions to the crown, had been a great object of jealouſy both in the late and in the preſent reign. John, the firſt duke of Somerſet, who was grandſon of John of Gaunt, by a ſpurious branch, but legitimated by act of parliament, had left only one daughter, Margaret; and his younger brother, Edmund, had ſucceeded him in his titles, and in a conſiderable part of his fortune. Margaret had eſpouſed Edmund, earl of Richmond, half brother of Henry VI. and ſon of Sir Owen Tudor and Catherine of France, relict of Henry V. and ſhe bore him only one ſon, who received the name of Henry, and who, after his father's death, inherited the honours and fortune of Richmond. His mother, being a widow, had eſpouſed in ſecond marriage Sir Henry Stafford, uncle to Buckingham, and after the death of that gentleman, had married lord Stanley; but had no children by either of theſe huſbands; and her ſon, Henry, was thus, in the event of her death, the ſole heir of all her fortunes. But this was not the moſt conſiderable advantage, which he had reaſon to expect from her ſucceſſion: He would repreſent

[q] Hiſt. Croyl. cont. p. 568.

the

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

the eldeſt branch of the houſe of Somerſet; he would inherit all the title of that family to the crown; and though its claim, while any legitimate branch ſubſiſted of the houſe of Lancaſter, had always been much diſregarded, the zeal of faction, after the death of Henry VI. and the murder of prince Edward, immediately conferred a weight and conſideration upon it.

EDWARD IV. finding, that all the Lancaſtrians had directed their attention towards the young earl of Richmond, as the object of their hopes, thought him alſo worthy of his attention; and purſued him into his retreat in Britanny, whither his uncle, the earl of Pembroke, had carried him, after the battle of Teukeſbury, ſo fatal to his party. He applied to Francis II. duke of Britanny, who was his ally, a weak but a good prince; and urged him to deliver up this fugitive, who might be the ſource of future diſturbances in England: But the duke, averſe to ſo diſhonourable a propoſal, would only conſent, that, for the ſecurity of Edward, the young nobleman ſhould be detained in cuſtody; and he received an annual penſion from England for the ſafe keeping or ſubſiſtance of his priſoner. But towards the end of Edward's reign, when the kingdom was menaced with a war both from France and Scotland, the anxieties of the Engliſh court with regard to Henry were much encreaſed; and Edward made a new propoſal to the duke, which covered, under the faireſt appearances, the moſt bloody and treacherous intentions. He pretended, that he was deſirous of gaining his enemy, and of uniting him to his own family by a marriage with his daughter, Elizabeth; and he ſolicited to have him ſent over to England, in order to execute a ſcheme, which would redound ſo much to his advantage. Theſe pretences, ſeconded by bribes to Peter Landais, a corrupt miniſter, by whom the duke was entirely governed, gained credit with the court of Britanny:

Henry

Henry was delivered into the hands of the Engliſh agents: He was ready to embark: When a ſuſpicion of Edward's real deſign was ſuggeſted to the duke, who recalled his orders, and thus ſaved the unhappy youth from the imminent danger which hung over him. CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

THESE ſymptoms of continued jealouſy in the reigning family of England both ſeemed to give ſome authority to Henry's pretenſions, and made him the object of general favour and compaſſion, on account of the dangers and perſecutions to which he was expoſed. The univerſal deteſtation of Richard's conduct turned ſtill more the attention of the nation towards Henry; and as all the deſcendants of the houſe of York were either women or minors, he ſeemed to be the only perſon, from whom the nation could expect the expulſion of the odious and bloody tyrant. But notwithſtanding theſe circumſtances, which were ſo favourable to him, Buckingham and the biſhop of Ely well knew, that there would ſtill lie many obſtacles in his way to the throne; and that though the nation had been much divided between Henry VI. and the duke of York, while preſent poſſeſſion and hereditary right ſtood in oppoſition to each other; yet, as ſoon as theſe titles were united in Edward IV. the bulk of the people had come over to the reigning family; and the Lancaſtrians had extremely decayed, both in numbers and in authority. It was therefore ſuggeſted by Morton, and readily aſſented to by the duke, that the only means of overturning the preſent uſurpation, was to unite the oppoſite factions, by contracting a marriage between the earl of Richmond and the princeſs Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter of king Edward, and thereby blending together the oppoſite pretenſions of their families, which had ſo long been the ſource of public diſorders and convulſions. They were ſenſible, that the people were extremely deſirous of repoſe after ſo many bloody and deſtructive commotions; that both

CHAP. XXIII. 1483.

Yorkiſts and Lancaſtrians, who now lay equally under oppreſſion, would embrace this ſcheme with ardour; and that the proſpect of reconciling the two parties, which was in itſelf ſo deſirable an end, would, when added to the general hatred againſt the preſent government, render their cauſe abſolutely invincible. In conſequence of theſe views, the prelate, by means of Reginald Bray, ſteward to the counteſs of Richmond, firſt opened the project of ſuch an union to that lady; and the plan appeared ſo advantageous for her ſon, and, at the ſame time, ſo likely to ſucceed, that it admitted not of the leaſt heſitation. Dr. Lewis, a Welſh phyſician, who had acceſs to the queen-dowager in her ſanctuary, carried the propoſals to her; and found, that revenge for the murder of her brother and of her three ſons, apprehenſions for her ſurviving family, indignation againſt her confinement and oppreſſions, eaſily overcame all her prejudices againſt the houſe of Lancaſter, and procured her approbation of a marriage, to which the age and birth, as well as the preſent ſituation of the parties, ſeemed ſo naturally to invite them. She ſecretly borrowed a ſum of money in the city, ſent it over to the earl of Richmond, required his oath to celebrate the marriage as ſoon as he ſhould arrive in England, adviſed him to levy as many foreign forces as poſſible, and promiſed to join him, on his firſt appearance, with all the friends and partizans of her family.

The plan being thus laid upon the ſolid foundations of good ſenſe and ſound policy, it was ſecretly communicated to the principal perſons of both parties in all the counties of England; and a wonderful alacrity appeared in every order of men, to forward its ſucceſs and completion. But it was impoſſible, that ſo extenſive a conſpiracy could be conducted in ſo ſecret a manner, as entirely to eſcape the jealous and vigilant eye of Richard; and he ſoon received intelligence, that his enemies,

mies, headed by the duke of Buckingham, were forming some design against his authority. He immediately put himself in a posture of defence by levying some troops in the North; and he summoned the duke to appear at court, in such terms as seemed to promise him a renewal of their former amity. But that nobleman, well acquainted with the barbarity and treachery of Richard, replied only by taking arms in Wales, and giving the signal to his accomplices for a general insurrection in all parts of England. But at that very time there happened to fall such heavy rains, so incessant and continued, as exceeded any known in the memory of man; and the Severne, with the other rivers in that neighbourhood, swelled to a height which rendered them impassable, and prevented Buckingham from marching into the heart of England to join his associates. The Welshmen, partly moved by superstition at this extraordinary event, partly distressed by famine in their camp, fell off from him; and Buckingham, finding himself deserted by his followers, put on a disguise, and took shelter in the house of Banister, an old servant of his family. But being detected in his retreat, he was brought to the king at Salisbury; and was instantly tried, condemned, and executed, according to the summary method practised in that age[r]. The other conspirators, who took arms in four different places, at Exeter, at Salisbury, at Newbury, and at Maidstone, hearing of the duke of Buckingham's misfortunes, despaired of success, and immediately dispersed themselves.

CHAP. XXIII.

1483.

October.

Buckingham executed.

The marquis of Dorset and bishop of Ely made their escape beyond sea: Many others were equally fortunate: Several fell into Richard's hands, of whom he made some examples. His executions seem not to have been remarkably severe; though we are told of one gentleman,

[r] Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 568.

CHAP. XXIII.

1483. William Colingbourne, who ſuffered under colour of this rebellion, but in reality for a diſtich of quibbling verſes, which he had compoſed againſt Richard and his miniſters [s]. The earl of Richmond, in concert with his friends, had ſet ſail from St. Malo's, carrying on board a body of 5000 men, levied in foreign parts; but his fleet being at firſt driven back by a ſtorm, he appeared not on the coaſt of England till after the diſperſion of all his friends; and he found himſelf obliged to return to the court of Britanny.

1484. 23d of Jan. THE king, every where triumphant, and fortified by this unſucceſsful attempt to dethrone him, ventured at laſt to ſummon a parliament; a meaſure which his crimes and flagrant uſurpation had induced him hitherto to decline. Though it was natural that the parliament, in a conteſt of national parties, ſhould always adhere to the victor, he ſeems to have apprehended, leſt his title, founded on no principle, and ſupported by no party, might be rejected by that aſſembly. But his enemies being now at his feet, the parliament had no choice left but to recognize his authority, and acknowledge his right to the crown. His only ſon, Edward, then a youth of twelve years of age, was created prince of Wales: The duties of tonnage and poundage were granted to the king for life: And Richard, in order to reconcile the nation to his government, paſſed ſome popular laws, particularly one againſt the late practice of extorting money on pretence of benevolence.

ALL the other meaſures of the king tended to the ſame object. Senſible, that the only circumſtance which could

[s] The lines were:

The Rat, the Cat, and Lovel that Dog,
Rule all England under the Hog.

Alluding to the names of Ratcliffe and Catesby; and to Richard's arms, which were a boar.

give

give him security was to gain the confidence of the Yorkists, he paid court to the queen-dowager with such art and address, made such earnest protestations of his sincere good-will and friendship, that this princess, tired of confinement, and despairing of any success from her former projects, ventured to leave her sanctuary, and to put herself and her daughters into the hands of the tyrant. But he soon carried farther his views for the establishment of his throne. He had married Anne, the second daughter of the earl of Warwic, and widow of Edward prince of Wales, whom Richard himself had murdered; but this princess having born him but one son, who died about this time, he considered her as an invincible obstacle to the settlement of his fortune, and he was believed to have carried her off by poison; a crime for which the public could not be supposed to have any solid proof, but which the usual tenor of his conduct made it reasonable to suspect. He now thought it in his power to remove the chief perils, which threatened his government. The earl of Richmond, he knew, could never be formidable but from his projected marriage with the princess Elizabeth, the true heir of the crown; and he therefore intended, by means of a papal dispensation, to espouse, himself, this princess, and thus to unite in his own family their contending titles. The queen-dowager, eager to recover her lost authority, neither scrupled this alliance, which was very unusual in England, and was regarded as incestuous; nor felt any horror at marrying her daughter to the murderer of her three sons and of her brother: She even joined so far her interests with those of the usurper, that she wrote to all her partizans, and among the rest to her son, the marquis of Dorset, desiring them to withdraw from the earl of Richmond; an injury which the earl could never afterwards forgive: The court of Rome was applied to for a dispensation:

CHAP. XXIII. 1484.

CHAP. XXIII. 1484.

Richard thought, that he could eaſily defend himſelf during the interval, till it arrived; and he had afterwards the agreeable proſpect of a full and ſecure ſettlement. He flattered himſelf, that the Engliſh nation, ſeeing all danger removed of a diſputed ſucceſſion, would then acquieſce under the dominion of a prince, who was of mature years, of great abilities, and of a genius qualified for government; and that they would forgive him all the crimes, which he had committed, in paving his way to the throne.

But the crimes of Richard were ſo horrid and ſo ſhocking to humanity, that the natural ſentiments of men, without any political or public views, were ſufficient to render his government unſtable; and every perſon of probity and honour was earneſt to prevent the ſcepter from being any longer polluted by that bloody and faithleſs hand which held it. All the exiles flocked to the earl of Richmond in Britanny, and exhorted him to haſten his attempt for a new invaſion, and to prevent the marriage of the princeſs Elizabeth, which muſt prove fatal to all his hopes. The earl, ſenſible of the urgent neceſſity, but dreading the treachery of Peter Landais, who had entered into a negociation with Richard for betraying him, was obliged to attend only to his preſent ſafety; and he made his eſcape to the court of France. The miniſters of Charles VIII. who had now ſucceeded to the throne after the death of his father Lewis, gave him countenance and protection; and being deſirous of raiſing diſturbance to Richard, they ſecretly encouraged the earl in the levies, which he made for the ſupport of his enterprize againſt England. The earl of Oxford, whom Richard's ſuſpicions had thrown into confinement, having made his eſcape, here joined Henry; and enflamed his ardour for the attempt, by the favourable accounts which he brought of the diſpoſitions of the Engliſh

lish nation, and their universal hatred of Richard's crimes and usurpation. CHAP. XXIII.

1485. Invasion by the earl of Richmond. 7th August.

THE earl of Richmond set sail from Harfleur in Normandy with a retinue of about 2000 persons; and after a navigation of six days, he arrived at Milford-Haven in Wales, where he landed without opposition. He directed his course to that part of the kingdom, in hopes that the Welsh, who regarded him as their countryman, and who had been already prepossessed in favour of his cause by means of the duke of Buckingham, would join his standard, and enable him to make head against the established government. Richard, who knew not in what quarter he might expect the invader, had taken post at Nottingham, in the center of the kingdom; and having given commissions to different persons in the several counties, whom he empowered to oppose his enemy, he proposed in person to fly, on the first alarm, to the place exposed to danger. Sir Rice ap Thomas and Sir Walter Herbert were entrusted with his authority in Wales; but the former immediately deserted to Henry; the second made but feeble opposition to him: And the earl, advancing towards Shrewsbury, received every day some reinforcement from his partizans. Sir Gilbert Talbot joined him with all the vassals and retainers of the family of Shrewsbury: Sir Thomas Bourchier, and Sir Walter Hungerford, brought their friends to share his fortunes; and the appearance of men of distinction in his camp made already his cause wear a favourable aspect.

BUT the danger, to which Richard was chiefly exposed, proceeded not so much from the zeal of his open enemies, as from the infidelity of his pretended friends. Scarce any nobleman of distinction was sincerely attached to his cause, except the duke of Norfolk; and all

CHAP. XXIII. 1485.

those who feigned the most loyalty were only watching for an opportunity to betray and desert him. But the persons, of whom he entertained the greatest suspicion, were lord Stanley and his brother Sir William; whose connexions with the family of Richmond, notwithstanding their professions of attachment to his person, were never entirely forgot or overlooked by him. When he empowered lord Stanley to levy forces, he still retained his eldest son, lord Strange, as a pledge for his fidelity; and that nobleman was, on this account, obliged to employ great caution and reserve in his proceedings. He raised a powerful body of his friends and retainers in Cheshire and Lancashire, but without openly declaring himself: And though Henry had received secret assurances of his friendly intentions, the armies on both sides knew not what to infer from his equivocal behaviour. The two rivals, at last, approached each other, at Bosworth near Leicester; Henry at the head of six thousand men, Richard with an army of above double the number; and a decisive action was every hour expected between them. Stanley, who commanded above seven thousand men, took care to post himself at Atherstone, not far from the hostile camps; and he made such a disposition as enabled him on occasion to join either party. Richard had too much sagacity not to discover his intentions from these movements; but he kept the secret from his own men for fear of discouraging them: He took not immediate revenge on Stanley's son, as some of his courtiers advised him; because he hoped that so valuable a pledge would induce the father to prolong still farther his ambiguous conduct: And he hastened to decide by arms the quarrel with his competitor; being certain, that a victory over the earl of Richmond would enable him to take ample revenge on all his enemies, open and concealed.

22d Aug. Battle of Bosworth.

THE

CHAP. XXIII. 1485.

THE van of Richmond's army, consisting of archers, was commanded by the earl of Oxford: Sir Gilbert Talbot led the right wing; Sir John Savage the left: The earl himself, accompanied by his uncle, the earl of Pembroke, placed himself in the main body. Richard also took post in *his* main body, and entrusted the command of his van to the duke of Norfolk: As his wings were never engaged, we have not learned the names of the several commanders. Soon after the battle began, lord Stanley, whose conduct in this whole affair discovers great precaution and abilities, appeared in the field, and declared for the earl of Richmond. This measure, which was unexpected to the men, though not to their leaders, had a proportional effect on both armies: It inspired unusual courage into Henry's soldiers; it threw Richard's into dismay and confusion. The intrepid tyrant, sensible of his desperate situation, cast his eye around the field, and descrying his rival at no great distance, he drove against him with fury, in hopes, that either Henry's death or his own would decide the victory between them. He killed with his own hands Sir William Brandon, standard-bearer to the earl: He dismounted Sir John Cheyney: He was now within reach of Richmond himself, who declined not the combat; when Sir William Stanley, breaking in with his troops, surrounded Richard, who, fighting bravely to the last moment, was overwhelmed by numbers, and perished by a fate too mild and honourable for his multiplied and detestable enormities. His men every where sought for safety by flight. Death

THERE fell in this battle about four thousand of the vanquished; and among these the duke of Norfolk, lord Ferrars of Charltey, Sir Richard Ratcliffe, Sir Robert Piercy, and Sir Robert Brackenbury. The loss was inconsiderable on the side of the victors. Sir William Catesby, a great instrument of Richard's crimes, was

CHAP. XXIII. 1485.

taken, and ſoon after beheaded, with ſome others, at Leiceſter. The body of Richard was found in the field, covered with dead enemies, and all beſmeared with blood: It was thrown careleſsly acroſs a horſe; was carried to Leiceſter amidſt the ſhouts of the inſulting ſpectators; and was interred in the Gray-Friars church of that place.

and character of Richard III.

THE hiſtorians who favour Richard (for even this tyrant has met with partizans among the later writers) maintain, that he was well qualified for government, had he legally obtained it; and that he committed no crimes but ſuch as were neceſſary to procure him poſſeſſion of the crown: But this is a poor apology, when it is confeſſed, that he was ready to commit the moſt horrid crimes, which appeared neceſſary for that purpoſe; and it is certain, that all his courage and capacity, qualities in which he really ſeems not to have been deficient, would never have made compenſation to the people for the danger of the precedent, and for the contagious example of vice and murder, exalted upon the throne. This prince was of a ſmall ſtature, humpbacked, and had a harſh diſagreeable countenance; ſo that his body was in every particular no leſs deformed than his mind.

* * * * * *

THUS have we purſued the hiſtory of England through a ſeries of many barbarous ages; till we have at laſt reached the dawn of civility and ſcience, and have the proſpect, both of greater certainty in our hiſtorical narrations, and of being able to preſent to the reader a ſpectacle more worthy of his attention. The want of certainty, however, and of circumſtances, is not alike to be complained of throughout every period of this long narration. This iſland poſſeſſes many ancient hiſtorians of good credit; as well as many hiſtorical monuments; and it is rare, that

that the annals of so uncultivated a people, as were the English as well as the other European nations, after the decline of Roman learning, have been transmitted to posterity so complete, and with so little mixture of falsehood and of fable. This advantage we owe entirely to the clergy of the church of Rome; who, founding their authority on their superior knowledge, preserved the precious literature of antiquity from a total extinction [t]; and under shelter of their numerous privileges and immunities, acquired a security, by means of the superstition, which they would in vain have claimed, from the justice and humanity, of those turbulent and licentious ages. Nor is the spectacle altogether unentertaining and uninstructive, which the history of those times presents to us. The view of human manners and actions, in all their variety of appearances, is both profitable and agreeable; and if the aspect in some periods seem horrid and deformed, we may thence learn to cherish with the greater anxiety that science and civility, which has so close a connexion with virtue and humanity, and which, as it is a sovereign antidote against superstition, is also the most effectual remedy against vice and disorders of every kind.

CHAP. XXIII.

THE rise, progress, perfection, and decline of art and science, are curious objects of contemplation, and intimately connected with a narration of civil transactions. The events of no particular period can be fully accounted for, but by considering the degrees of advancement, which men have reached in those particulars.

THOSE who cast their eye on the general revolutions of society, will find, that, as almost all improvements of the human mind had reached nearly to their state of perfection about the age of Augustus, there was a sensible de-

[t] See note [L] at the end of the volume.

CHAP. XXIII.

cline from that point or period; and men thenceforth relapſed gradually into ignorance and barbariſm. The unlimited extent of the Roman empire, and the conſequent deſpotiſm of its monarchs, extinguiſhed all emulation, debaſed the generous ſpirits of men, and depreſſed that noble flame, by which all the refined arts muſt be cheriſhed and enlivened. The military government, which ſoon ſucceeded, rendered even the lives and properties of men inſecure and precarious; and proved deſtructive to thoſe vulgar and more neceſſary arts of agriculture, manufactures, and commerce; and in the end, to the military art and genius itſelf, by which alone the immenſe fabric of the empire could be ſupported. The irruption of the barbarous nations, which ſoon followed, overwhelmed all human knowledge, which was already far in its decline; and men ſunk every age deeper into ignorance, ſtupidity, and ſuperſtition; till the light of ancient ſcience and hiſtory had very nearly ſuffered a total extinction in all the European nations.

But there is an ultimate point of depreſſion, as well as of exaltation, from which human affairs naturally return in a contrary progreſs, and beyond which they ſeldom paſs either in their advancement or decline. The period, in which the people of Chriſtendom were the loweſt ſunk in ignorance, and conſequently in diſorders of every kind, may juſtly be fixed at the eleventh century, about the age of William the Conqueror; and from that æra, the ſun of ſcience, beginning to re-aſcend, threw out many gleams of light, which preceded the full morning, when letters were revived in the fifteenth century. The Danes and other northern people, who had ſo long infeſted all the coaſts, and even the inland parts of Europe, by their depredations, having now learned the arts of tillage and agriculture, found a certain ſubſiſtance at home, and were no longer tempted to deſert their induſtry,

duſtry, in order to ſeek a precarious livelihood by rapine and by the plunder of their neighbours. The feudal governments alſo, among the more ſouthern nations, were reduced to a kind of ſyſtem; and though that ſtrange ſpecies of civil polity was ill fitted to enſure either liberty or tranquillity, it was preferable to the univerſal licence and diſorder, which had every where preceded it. But perhaps there was no event, which tended farther to the improvement of the age, than one, which has not been much remarked, the accidental finding of a copy of Juſtinian's Pandects, about the year 1130, in the town of Amalfi in Italy.

THE eccleſiaſtics, who had leiſure, and ſome inclination to ſtudy, immediately adopted with zeal this excellent ſyſtem of juriſprudence, and ſpread the knowledge of it throughout every part of Europe. Beſides the intrinſic merit of the performance, it was recommended to them by its original connexion with the imperial city of Rome, which, being the ſeat of their religion, ſeemed to acquire a new luſtre and authority, by the diffuſion of its laws over the weſtern world. In leſs than ten years after the diſcovery of the Pandects, Vacarius, under the protection of Theobald, archbiſhop of Canterbury, read public lectures of civil law in the univerſity of Oxford; and the clergy every where, by their example as well as exhortation, were the means of diffuſing the higheſt eſteem for this new ſcience. That order of men, having large poſſeſſions to defend, was, in a manner, neceſſitated to turn their ſtudies towards the law; and their properties being often endanged by the violence of the princes and barons, it became their intereſt to enforce the obſervance of general and equitable rules, from which alone they could receive protection. As they poſſeſſed all the knowledge of the age, and were alone acquainted with the habits of thinking, the practice, as well as

ſcience,

CHAP. XXIII.

ſcience of the law, fell moſtly into their hands: And though the cloſe connexion, which without any neceſſity they formed between the canon and civil law, begat a jealouſy in the laity of England, and prevented the Roman juriſprudence from becoming the municipal law of the country, as was the caſe in many ſtates of Europe, a great part of it was ſecretly transferred into the practice of the courts of juſtice, and the imitation of their neighbours made the Engliſh gradually endeavour to raiſe their own law from its original ſtate of rudeneſs and imperfection.

IT is eaſy to ſee what advantages Europe muſt have reaped by its inheriting at once from the ancients, ſo complete an art, which was of itſelf ſo neceſſary for giving ſecurity to all other arts, and which, by refining, and ſtill more, by beſtowing ſolidity on the judgment, ſerved as a model to further improvements. The ſenſible utility of the Roman law both to public and private intereſt recommended the ſtudy of it, at a time when the more exalted and ſpeculative ſciences carried no charms with them; and thus the laſt branch of ancient literature, which remained uncorrupted, was happily the firſt tranſmitted to the modern world. For it is remarkable, that in the decline of Roman learning, when the philoſophers were univerſally infected with ſuperſtition and ſophiſtry, and the poets and hiſtorians with barbariſm, the lawyers, who in other countries are ſeldom models of ſcience or politeneſs, were yet able, by the conſtant ſtudy and cloſe imitation of their predeceſſors, to maintain the ſame good ſenſe in their deciſions and reaſonings, and the ſame purity in their language and expreſſion.

WHAT beſtowed an additional merit on the civil law, was the extreme ignorance and imperfection of that juriſprudence, which preceded it among all the European nations, eſpecially among the Saxons or ancient Engliſh. The abſurdities which prevailed at that time in the adminiſtration

miniſtration of juſtice, may be conceived from the authentic monuments which remain of the ancient Saxon laws; where a pecuniary commutation was received for every crime, where ſtated prices were fixed for men's lives and members, where private revenges were authorized for all injuries, where the uſe of the ordeal, corſnet, and afterwards of the duel, was the received method of proof, and where the judges were ruſtic freeholders, aſſembled of a ſudden, and deciding a cauſe from one debate or altercation of the parties. Such a ſtate of ſociety was very little advanced beyond the rude ſtate of nature: Violence univerſally prevailed, inſtead of general and equitable maxims: The pretended liberty of the times, was only an incapacity of ſubmitting to government: And men, not protected by law in their lives and properties, ſought ſhelter, by their perſonal ſervitude and attachments under ſome powerful chieftain, or by voluntary combinations.

THE gradual progreſs of improvement raiſed the Europeans ſomewhat above this uncultivated ſtate; and affairs, in this iſland particularly, took early a turn, which was more favourable to juſtice and to liberty. Civil employments and occupations ſoon became honourable among the Engliſh: The ſituation of that people rendered not the perpetual attention to wars ſo neceſſary as among their neighbours, and all regard was not confined to the military profeſſion: The gentry, and even the nobility, began to deem an acquaintance with the law a neceſſary part of education: They were leſs diverted than afterwards from ſtudies of this kind by other ſciences; and in the age of Henry VI. we are told by Fortescue, there were in the inns of court about two thouſand ſtudents, moſt of them men of honourable birth, who gave application to this branch of civil knowledge: A circumſtance which proves, that a conſiderable advance was already

CHAP. XXIII.

already made in the ſcience of government, and which prognoſticated ſtill a greater.

One chief advantage, which reſulted from the introduction and progreſs of the arts, was the introduction and progreſs of freedom; and this conſequence affected men both in their *perſonal* and *civil* capacities.

If we conſider the ancient ſtate of Europe, we ſhall find, that the far greater part of the ſociety were every where bereaved of their *perſonal* liberty, and lived entirely at the will of their maſters. Every one, that was not noble, was a ſlave: The peaſants were ſold along with the land: The few inhabitants of cities were not in a better condition: Even the gentry themſelves were ſubjected to a long train of ſubordination under the greater barons or chief vaſſals of the crown; who, though ſeemingly placed in a high ſtate of ſplendor, yet, having but a ſlender protection from law, were expoſed to every tempeſt of the ſtate, and by the precarious condition in which they lived, paid dearly for the power of oppreſſing and tyrannizing over their inferiors. The firſt incident, which broke in upon this violent ſyſtem of government, was the practice, begun in Italy, and imitated in France, of erecting communities and corporations, endowed with privileges and a ſeparate municipal government, which gave them protection againſt the tyranny of the barons, and which the prince himſelf deemed it prudent to reſpect [u]. The relaxation of the feudal tenures, and an

[u] There appear early ſymptoms of the jealouſy, entertained by the barons againſt the progreſs of the arts, as deſtructive of their licentious power. A law was enacted, 7 Henry IV. chap. 17. prohibiting any one who did not poſſeſs twenty ſhillings a year in land from binding his ſons apprentices to any trade. They found already that the cities began to drain the country of the labourers and huſbandmen; and did not foreſee how much the encreaſe of commerce would encreaſe the value of their eſtates. See farther, Cotton. p. 179. The kings, to encourage the boroughs, granted them this privilege, that any villain, who had lived a twelvemonth in any corporation and had been of the gild, ſhould be thenceforth regarded as free.

execution

execution ſomewhat ſtricter, of the public law, beſtowed an independance on vaſſals, which was unknown to their forefathers. And even the peaſants themſelves, though later than other orders of the ſtate, made their eſcape from thoſe bonds of villenage or ſlavery, in which they had formerly been retained. CHAP. XXIII.

It may appear ſtrange, that the progreſs of the arts, which ſeems, among the Greeks and Romans, to have daily encreaſed the number of ſlaves, ſhould, in later times, have proved ſo general a ſource of liberty; but this difference in the events proceeded from a great difference in the circumſtances, which attended thoſe inſtitutions. The ancient barons, being obliged to maintain themſelves continually in a military poſture, and little emulous of elegance or ſplendor, employed not their villains as domeſtic ſervants, much leſs as manufacturers; but compoſed their retinue of free-men, whoſe military ſpirit rendered the chieftain formidable to his neighbours, and who were ready to attend him in every warlike enterprize. The villains were entirely occupied in the cultivation of their maſter's land, and paid their rents either in corn and cattle and other produce of the farm, or in ſervile offices, which they performed about the baron's family, and upon the farms which he retained in his own poſſeſſion. In proportion as agriculture improved, and money encreaſed, it was found, that theſe ſervices, though extremely burdenſome to the villain, were of little advantage to the maſter; and that the produce of a large eſtate could be much more conveniently diſpoſed of by the peaſants themſelves, who raiſed it, than by the landlord or his bailiff, who were formerly accuſtomed to receive it. A commutation was therefore made of rents for ſervices, and of money-rents for thoſe in kind; and as men, in a ſubſequent age, diſcovered, that farms were better cultivated where the farmer enjoyed a ſecurity in

CHAP. XXIII.

his poſſeſſion, the practice of granting leaſes to the peaſant began to prevail, which entirely broke the bonds of ſervitude, already much relaxed from the former practices. After this manner, villenage went gradually into diſuſe throughout the more civilized parts of Europe: The intereſt of the maſter, as well as that of the ſlave, concurred in this alteration. The lateſt laws which we find in England for enforcing or regulating this ſpecies of ſervitude, were enacted in the reign of Henry VII. And though the ancient ſtatutes on this ſubject remain ſtill unrepealed by parliament, it appears, that, before the end of Elizabeth, the diſtinction of villain and freeman was totally, though inſenſibly aboliſhed, and that no perſon remained in the ſtate, to whom the former laws could be applied.

THUS *perſonal* freedom became almoſt general in Europe; an advantage which paved the way for the encreaſe of *political* or *civil* liberty, and which, even where it was not attended with this ſalutary effect, ſerved to give the members of the community ſome of the moſt conſiderable advantages of it.

THE conſtitution of the Engliſh government, ever ſince the invaſion of this iſland by the Saxons, may boaſt of this pre-eminence, that in no age the will of the monarch was ever entirely abſolute and uncontrouled: But in other reſpects the balance of power has extremely ſhifted among the ſeveral orders of the ſtate; and this fabric has experienced the ſame mutability, that has attended all human inſtitutions.

THE ancient Saxons, like the other German nations, where each individual was enured to arms, and where the independance of men was ſecured by a great equality of poſſeſſions, ſeem to have admitted a conſiderable mixture of democracy into their form of government, and to have been one of the freeſt nations, of which there remains

remains any account in the records of hiſtory. After this tribe was ſettled in England, eſpecially after the diſſolution of the Heptarchy, the great extent of the kingdom produced a great inequality in property; and the balance ſeems to have inclined to the ſide of ariſtocracy. The Norman conqueſt threw more authority into the hands of the ſovereign, which, however, admitted of great controul; though derived leſs from the general forms of the conſtitution, which were inaccurate and irregular, than from the independant power enjoyed by each baron in his particular diſtrict or province. The eſtabliſhment of the Great Charter exalted ſtill higher the Ariſtocracy, impoſed regular limits on royal power, and gradually introduced ſome mixture of Democracy into the conſtitution. But even during this period, from the acceſſion of Edward I. to the death of Richard III. the condition of the commons was nowiſe deſirable; a kind of Poliſh Ariſtocracy prevailed; and though the kings were limited, the people were as yet far from being free. It required the authority almoſt abſolute of the ſovereigns, which took place in the ſubſequent period, to pull down thoſe diſorderly and licentious tyrants, who were equally averſe from peace and from freedom, and to eſtabliſh that regular execution of the laws, which, in a following age, enabled the people to erect a regular and equitable plan of liberty. CHAP. XXIII.

In each of theſe ſucceſſive alterations, the only rule of government, which is intelligible or carries any authority with it, is the eſtabliſhed practice of the age, and the maxims of adminiſtration, which are at that time prevalent, and univerſally aſſented to. Thoſe who, from a pretended reſpect to antiquity, appeal at every turn to an original plan of the conſtitution, only cover their turbulent ſpirit and their private ambition under the appearance of venerable forms; and whatever period they pitch

CHAP. XXIII.

on for their model, they may ſtill be carried back to a more ancient period, where they will find the meaſures of power entirely different, and where every circumſtance, by reaſon of the greater barbarity of the times, will appear ſtill leſs worthy of imitation. Above all, a civilized nation, like the Engliſh, who have happily eſtabliſhed the moſt perfect and moſt accurate ſyſtem of liberty that was ever found compatible with government, ought to be cautious in appealing to the practice of their anceſtors, or regarding the maxims of uncultivated ages as certain rules for their preſent conduct. An acquaintance with the ancient periods of their government is chiefly *uſeful* by inſtructing them to cheriſh their preſent conſtitution, from a compariſon or contraſt with the condition of thoſe diſtant times. And it is alſo *curious*, by ſhewing them the remote, and commonly faint and disfigured originals of the moſt finiſhed and moſt noble inſtitutions, and by inſtructing them in the great mixture of accident, which commonly concurs with a ſmall ingredient of wiſdom and foreſight, in erecting the complicated fabric of the moſt perfect government.

CHAP. XXIV.

HENRY VII.

Accession of Henry VII.——*His title to the crown*——*King's prejudice against the house of York*——*His joyful reception in London*——*His coronation*——*Sweating sickness*——*A parliament*——*Entail of the crown*——*King's marriage*——*An insurrection*——*Discontents of the people*——*Lambert Simnel*——*Revolt of Ireland*——*Intrigues of the dutchess of Burgundy*——*Lambert Simnel invades England*——*Battle of Stoke.*

THE victory, which the earl of Richmond gained at Bosworth, was entirely decisive; being attended, as well with the total rout and dispersion of the royal army, as with the death of the king himself. Joy for this great success suddenly prompted the soldiers, in the field of battle, to bestow on their victorious general the appellation of king, which he had not hitherto assumed; and the acclamations of *Long live Henry the seventh*, by a natural and unpremeditated movement, resounded from all quarters. To bestow some appearance of formality on this species of military election, Sir William Stanley brought a crown of ornament, which Richard wore in battle, and which had been found among the spoils; and he put it on the head of the victor. Henry himself remained not in suspence; but immediately, without hesitation, accepted of the magnificent present, which was tendered him. He was come to the crisis of his fortune; and being obliged suddenly to de-

CHAP. XXIV.

1485. August 22.

Accession Henry V

CHAP. XXIV. 1485.

termine himſelf, amidſt great difficulties, which he muſt have frequently revolved in his mind, he choſe that part, which his ambition ſuggeſted to him, and to which he ſeemed to be invited by his preſent ſucceſs.

His title to the crown.

THERE were many titles, on which Henry could found his right to the crown; but no one of them free from great objections, if conſidered, with reſpect either to juſtice or to policy.

DURING ſome years, Henry had been regarded as heir to the honſe of Lancaſter, by the party attached to that family; but the title of the houſe of Lancaſter itſelf was generally thought to be very ill-founded. Henry IV. who had firſt raiſed it to royal dignity, had never clearly defined the foundation of his claim; and while he plainly invaded the order of ſucceſſion, he had not acknowledged the election of the people. The parliament, it is true, had often recognized the title of the Lancaſtrian princes; but theſe votes had little authority, being conſidered as inſtances of complaiſance towards a family in poſſeſſion of preſent power: And they had accordingly been often reverſed during the late prevalence of the houſe of York. Prudent men alſo, who had been willing, for the ſake of peace, to ſubmit to any eſtabliſhed authority, deſired not to ſee the claims of that family revived; claims, which muſt produce many convulſions at preſent, and which diſjointed for the future the whole ſyſtem of hereditary right. Beſides, allowing the title of the houſe of Lancaſter to be legal, Henry himſelf was not the true heir of that family; and nothing but the obſtinacy, natural to faction, which never, without reluctance, will ſubmit to its antagoniſt, could have engaged the Lancaſtrians to adopt the earl of Richmond as their head. His mother indeed, Margaret, counteſs of Richmond, was ſole daughter and heir of the duke of Somerſet, ſprung from John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaſter: But the deſcent of the Somerſet line

was

was itself illegitimate and even adulterous. And though the duke of Lancaster had obtained the legitimation of his natural children by a patent from Richard II. confirmed in parliament; it might justly be doubted, whether this deed could bestow any title to the crown; since in the patent itself all the privileges conferred by it are fully enumerated, and the succession to the kingdom is expressly excluded [w]. In all the settlements of the crown, made during the reigns of the Lancastrian princes, the line of Somerset had been entirely overlooked; and it was not till the failure of the legitimate branch, that men had paid any attention to their claim. And to add to the general dissatisfaction against Henry's title, his mother, from whom he derived all his right, was still alive; and evidently preceded him in the order of succession.

CHAP. XXIV. 1485.

THE title of the house of York, both from the plain reason of the case, and from the late popular government of Edward IV. had universally obtained the preference in the sentiments of the people; and Henry might engraft his claim on the right of that family, by his intended marriage with the princess Elizabeth, the heir of it; a marriage, which he had solemnly promised to celebrate, and to the expectation of which he had chiefly owed all his past successes. But many reasons dissuaded Henry from adopting this expedient. Were he to receive the crown only in right of his consort, his power, he knew, would be very limited; and he must expect rather to enjoy the bare title of king by a sort of courtesy, than possess the real authority which belongs to it. Should the princess die before him without issue, he must descend from the throne, and give place to the next in succession: And even if his bed should be blest with offspring, it seemed dangerous to expect, that filial piety in his children would prevail over the ambition of obtaining present

[w] Rymer, tom. vii. p. 849. Coke's Inst. 4 Inst. part. 1. p. 37.

CHAP. XXIV.

1485.

possession of regal power. An act of parliament, indeed, might easily be procured to settle the crown on him during life; but Henry knew how much superior the claim of succession by blood was to the authority of an assembly [x], which had always been overborne by violence in the shock of contending titles, and which had ever been more governed by the conjunctures of the times, than by any consideration derived from reason or public interest.

THERE was yet a third foundation, on which Henry might rest his claim, the right of conquest, by his victory over Richard, the present possessor of the crown. But besides that Richard himself was deemed no better than an usurper, the army, which fought against him, consisted chiefly of Englishmen; and a right of conquest over England could never be established by such a victory. Nothing also would give greater umbrage to the nation than a claim of this nature; which might be construed as an abolition of all their rights and privileges, and the establishment of absolute authority in the sovereign [y]. William himself, the Norman, though at the head of a powerful and victorious army of foreigners, had at first declined the invidious title of conqueror; and it was not till the full establishment of his authority, that he had ventured to advance so violent and destructive a pretension.

BUT Henry was sensible, that there remained another foundation of power, somewhat resembling the right of conquest, namely, present possession; and that this title, guarded by vigour and ability, would be sufficient to secure perpetual possession of the throne. He had before him the example of Henry IV. who, supported by no better pretension, had subdued many insurrections, and had been able to transmit the crown peaceably to his posterity. He could perceive, that this claim, which had been perpetuated through three generations of the family of Lancaster,

[x] Bacon in Kennet's compleat History, p. 579.

[y] Bacon, p. 579.

might ſtill have ſubſiſted, notwithſtanding the preferable title of the houſe of York; had not the ſcepter devolved into the hands of Henry VI. which were too feeble to ſuſtain it. Inſtructed by this recent experience, Henry was determined to put himſelf in poſſeſſion of regal authority; and to ſhow all opponents, that nothing but force of arms and a ſucceſsful war ſhould be able to expel him. His claim as heir to the houſe of Lancaſter he was reſolved to advance; and never allow to be diſcuſſed: And he hoped that this right, favoured by the partizans of that family, and ſeconded by preſent power, would ſecure him a perpetual and an independant authority. CHAP. XXIV. 1485.

THESE views of Henry are not expoſed to much blame; becauſe founded on good policy, and even on a ſpecies of neceſſity: But there entered into all his meaſures and counſels another motive, which admits not of the ſame apology. The violent contentions, which, during ſo long a period, had been maintained between the rival families of York and Lancaſter, and the many ſanguinary revenges, which they had alternately taken on each other, had inflamed the oppoſite factions to a high pitch of animoſity. Henry himſelf, who had ſeen moſt of his near friends and relations periſh in the field or on the ſcaffold, and who had been expoſed in his own perſon to many hardſhips and dangers, had imbibed a violent antipathy to the York party, which no time or experience were ever able to efface. Inſtead of embracing the preſent happy opportunity of aboliſhing theſe fatal diſtinctions, of uniting his title with that of his conſort, and of beſtowing favour indiſcriminately on the friends of both families; he carried to the throne all the partialities which belong to the head of a faction, and even the paſſions which are carefully guarded againſt by every true politician in that ſituation. To exalt the Lancaſtrian party, to depreſs the retainers of the houſe of York, were King's prejudice againſt the houſe of York.

CHAP. XXIV.

1485.

ſtill the favourite objects of his purſuit; and through the whole courſe of his reign, he never forgot theſe early prepoſſeſſions. Incapable from his natural temper of a more enlarged and more benevolent ſyſtem of policy, he expoſed himſelf to many preſent inconveniencies, by too anxiouſly guarding againſt that future poſſible event, which might diſjoin his title from that of the princeſs whom he eſpouſed. And while he treated the Yorkiſts as enemies, he ſoon rendered them ſuch, and taught them to diſcuſs that right to the crown, which he ſo carefully kept ſeparate; and to perceive its weakneſs and invalidity.

To theſe paſſions of Henry, as well as to his ſuſpicious politics, we are to aſcribe the meaſure, which he embraced two days after the battle of Boſworth. Edward Plantagenet, earl of Warwic, ſon of the duke of Clarence, was detained in a kind of confinement at Sherif-Hutton in Yorkſhire, by the jealouſy of his uncle, Richard; whoſe title to the throne was inferior to that of the young prince. Warwic had now reaſon to expect better treatment, as he was no obſtacle to the ſucceſſion either of Henry or Elizabeth; and from a youth of ſuch tender years no danger could reaſonably be apprehended. But Sir Robert Willoughby was diſpatched by Henry with orders to take him from Sherif-Hutton, to convey him to the Tower, and to detain him in cloſe cuſtody [z]. The ſame meſſenger carried directions, that the princeſs Elizabeth, who had been confined to the ſame place, ſhould be conducted to London, in order to meet Henry, and there celebrate her nuptials.

HENRY himſelf ſet out for the capital, and advanced by ſlow journies. Not to rouſe the jealouſy of the people, he took care to avoid all appearance of military triumph; and ſo to reſtrain the inſolence of victory, that every

[z] Bacon, p. 579. Polydore Virgil, p. 565.

thing

thing about him bore the appearance of an eſtabliſhed monarch, making a peaceable progreſs through his dominions, rather than of a prince who had opened his way to the throne by force of arms. The acclamations of the people were every where loud, and no leſs ſincere and hearty. Beſides that a young and victorious prince, on his acceſſion, was naturally the object of popularity; the nation promiſed themſelves great felicity from the new ſcene which opened before them. During the courſe of near a whole century the kingdom had been laid waſte by domeſtic wars and convulſions; and if at any time the noiſe of arms had ceaſed, the ſound of faction and diſcontent ſtill threatened new diſorders. Henry, by his marriage with Elizabeth, ſeemed to enſure an union of the contending titles of the two families; and having prevailed over a hated tyrant, who had anew diſjointed the ſucceſſion even of the houſe of York, and had filled his own family with blood and murder, an unfeigned favour was obſerved every where to attend him. Numerous and ſplendid troops of gentry and nobility accompanied his progreſs. The mayor and companies of London received him as he approached the city: The crouds of people and citizens were zealous in their expreſſions of ſatisfaction. But Henry, amidſt this general effuſion of joy, diſcovered ſtill the ſtatelineſs and reſerve of his temper, which made him ſcorn to court popularity: He entered London in a cloſe chariot, and would not gratify the people with a ſight of their new monarch.

CHAP. XXIV.

1485. His joyful reception in London.

But the king did not ſo much neglect the favour of the people, as to delay giving them aſſurances of his marriage with the princeſs Elizabeth, which he knew to be ſo paſſionately deſired by the nation. On his leaving Britanny, he had artfully dropped ſome hints, that, if he ſhould ſucceed in his enterprize, and obtain the crown of England, he would eſpouſe Anne, the heir of that dutchy;

CHAP. XXIV.

1485. dutchy; and the report of this engagement had already reached England, and had begot anxiety in the people, and even in Elizabeth herſelf. Henry took care to diſſipate theſe apprehenſions, by ſolemnly renewing, before the council and principal nobility, the promiſe which he had already given to celebrate his nuptials with the Engliſh princeſs. But though bound by honour, as well as by intereſt, to complete this alliance, he was reſolved to poſtpone it, till the ceremony of his own coronation ſhould be finiſhed, and till his title ſhould be recognized by parliament. Still anxious to ſupport his perſonal and hereditary right to the throne, he dreaded leſt a preceding marriage with the princeſs ſhould imply a participation of ſovereignty in her, and raiſe doubts of his own title by the houſe of Lancaſter.

His coronation.

Sweating ſickneſs.

THERE raged at that time in London, and other parts of the kingdom, a ſpecies of malady, unknown to any other age or nation, the Sweating ſickneſs, which occaſioned the ſudden death of great multitudes; though it ſeemed not to be propagated by any contagious infection, but aroſe from the general diſpoſition of the air and of the human body. In leſs than twenty-four hours the patient commonly died or recovered; but when the peſtilence had exerted its fury for a few weeks, it was obſerved, either from alterations in the air, or from a more proper regimen, which had been diſcovered, to be conſiderably abated [a]. Preparations were then made for the ceremony of Henry's coronation. In order to heighten the ſplendor of that ſpectacle, he beſtowed the rank of knight banneret on twelve perſons; and he conferred peerages on three. Jaſper earl of Pembroke, his uncle, was created duke of Bedford; Thomas lord Stanley, his father-in-law, earl of Derby; and Edward Courteney, earl of De-

30th Oct. vonſhire. At the coronation likewiſe there appeared a

[a] Polydore Virgil, p. 567.

new

new institution, which the king had established for security as well as pomp, a band of fifty archers, who were denominated yeomen of the guard. But lest the people should take umbrage at this unusual symptom of jealousy in the prince, as if it implied a personal diffidence of his subjects, he declared the institution to be perpetual. The ceremony of coronation was performed by cardinal Bourchier, archbishop of Canterbury. CHAP. XXIV. 1485.

THE parliament being assembled at Westminster, the majority immediately appeared to be devoted partizans of Henry; all persons of another disposition, either declining to stand in these dangerous times, or being obliged to dissemble their principles and inclinations. The Lancastrian party had every where been successful in the elections; and even many had been returned, who, during the prevalence of the house of York, had been exposed to the rigour of the law, and had been condemned by sentence of attainder and outlawry. Their right to take seats in the house being questioned, the case was referred to all the judges, who assembled in the Exchequer Chamber, in order to deliberate on so delicate a subject. The opinion delivered was prudent, and contained a just temperament between law and expediency [b]. The judges determined, that the members attainted should forbear taking their seat till an act were passed for the reversal of their attainder. There was no difficulty in obtaining this act; and in it were comprehended a hundred and seven persons of the king's party [c]! 7th Nov. A parliament.

BUT a scruple was started of a nature still more important. The king himself had been attainted; and his right of succession to the crown might thence be exposed to some doubt. The judges extricated themselves from this dangerous question, by asserting it as a maxim; "That the crown takes away all defects and stops in

[b] Bacon, p. 581, 35, 17. 26—65.

[c] Rot. Parl. 1 Hen. VII. n. 2, 3, 4—

"blood;

CHAP. XXIV. 1485.

"blood; and that from the time the king assumed royal "authority, the fountain was cleared, and all attainders "and corruptions of blood discharged [d]." Besides that the case, from its urgent necessity, admitted of no deliberation; the judges probably thought, that no sentence of a court of judicature had authority sufficient to bar the right of succession; that the heir of the crown was commonly exposed to such jealousy as might often occasion stretches of law and justice against him; and that a prince might even be engaged in unjustifiable measures during his predecessor's reign, without meriting on that account to be excluded from the throne, which was his birthright.

WITH a parliament so obsequious, the king could not fail of obtaining whatever act of settlement he was pleased to require. He seems only to have entertained some doubt within himself on what claim he should found his pretensions. In his first speech to the parliament he mentioned his just title by hereditary right: But lest that title should not be esteemed sufficient, he subjoined his claim by the judgment of God, who had given him victory over his enemies. And again, lest this pretension should be interpreted as assuming a right of conquest, he ensured to his subjects the entire enjoyment of their former properties and possessions.

Entail of the crown.

THE entail of the crown was drawn, according to the sense of the king, and probably in words, dictated by him. He made no mention in it of the princess Elizabeth, nor of any branch of her family; but in other respects the act was compiled with sufficient reserve and moderation. He did not insist, that it should contain a declaration or recognition of his preceding right; as on the other hand, he avoided the appearance of a new law or ordinance. He chose a middle course, which, as is

[d] Bacon, p. 581.

generally

CHAP. XXIV.

generally unavoidable in such cases, was not entirely free from uncertainty and obscurity. It was voted, "That "the inheritance of the crown should rest, remain, and "abide in the king[e];" but whether as rightful heir, or only as present possessor, was not determined. In like manner, Henry was contented that the succession should be secured to the heirs of his body; but he pretended not, in case of their failure, to exclude the house of York, or give the preference to that of Lancaster: He left that great point ambiguous for the present; and trusted, that, if it should ever become requisite to determine it, future incidents would open the way for the decision. 1485.

But even after all these precautions, the king was so little satisfied with his own title, that, in the following year, he applied to papal authority for a confirmation of it; and as the court of Rome gladly laid hold of all opportunities, which the imprudence, weakness, or necessities of princes afforded it to extend its influence, Innocent VIII. the reigning pope, readily granted a bull, in whatever terms the king was pleased to desire. All Henry's titles, by succession, marriage, parliamentary choice, even conquest, are there enumerated; and to the whole the sanction of religion is added; excommunication is denounced against every one who should either disturb him in the present possession, or the heirs of his body in their future succession to the crown; and from this penalty, no criminal, except in the article of death, could be absolved but by the pope himself, or his special commissioners. It is difficult to imagine, that the security, derived from this bull, could be a compensation for the defect which it betrayed in Henry's title, and for the danger of thus inviting the pope to interpose in these concerns.

[e] Bacon, p. 581.

It

CHAP. XXIV.

1485. It was natural, and even laudable in Henry to reverſe the attainders, which had paſſed againſt the partizans of the houſe of Lancaſter: But the revenges, which he exerciſed againſt the retainers of the York family, to which he was ſo ſoon to be allied, cannot be conſidered in the ſame light. Yet the parliament, at his inſtigation, paſſed an act of attainder againſt the late king himſelf, againſt the duke of Norfolk, the earl of Surrey, viſcount Lovel, the lords Zouche and Ferrars of Chartley, Sir Walter and Sir James Harrington, Sir William Berkeley, Sir Humphrey Stafford, Cateſby, and about twenty other gentlemen, who had fought on Richard's ſide in the battle of Boſworth. How men could be guilty of treaſon, by ſupporting the king in poſſeſſion againſt the earl of Richmond, who aſſumed not the title of king, it is not eaſy to conceive; and nothing but a ſervile complaiſance in the parliament could have engaged them to make this ſtretch of juſtice. Nor was it a ſmall mortification to the people in general, to find, that the king, prompted either by avarice or reſentment, could, in the very beginning of his reign, ſo far violate the cordial union, which had previouſly been concerted between the parties, and to the expectation of which he had plainly owed his ſucceſſion to the throne.

The king, having gained ſo many points of conſequence from the parliament, thought it not expedient to demand any ſupply from them, which the profound peace enjoyed by the nation, and the late forfeiture of Richard's adherents, ſeemed to render ſomewhat ſuperfluous.

20th Dec. The parliament, however, conferred on him during life the duty of tonnage and poundage, which had been enjoyed in the ſame manner by ſome of his immediate predeceſſors; and they added, before they broke up, other money bills of no great moment. The king, on his part, made returns of grace and favour to his people. He publiſhed

liſhed his royal proclamation, offering pardon to all ſuch as had taken arms, or formed any attempts againſt him; provided they ſubmitted themſelves to mercy by a certain day, and took the uſual oath of fealty and allegiance. Upon this proclamation many came out of their ſanctuaries; and the minds of men were every where much quieted. Henry choſe to take wholly to himſelf the merit of an act of grace, ſo agreeable to the nation; rather than communicate it with the parliament, (as was his firſt intention) by paſſing a bill to that purpoſe. The earl of Surrey, however, though he had ſubmitted, and delivered himſelf into the king's hands, was ſent priſoner to the Tower. CHAP. XXIV. 1485.

DURING this parliament, the king alſo beſtowed favours and honours on ſome particular perſons, who were attached to him. Edward Stafford, eldeſt ſon of the duke of Buckingham, attainted in the late reign, was reſtored to the honours of his family, as well as to its fortune, which was very ample. This generoſity, ſo unuſual in Henry, was the effect of his gratitude to the memory of Buckingham, who had firſt concerted the plan of his elevation, and who by his own ruin had made way for that great event. Chandos of Britanny was created earl of Bath, Sir Giles Daubeny lord Daubeny, and Sir Robert Willoughby lord Broke. Theſe were all the titles of nobility conferred by the king during this ſeſſion of parliament [e].

BUT the miniſters, whom Henry moſt truſted and favoured, were not choſen from among the nobility, or even from among the laity. John Morton, and Richard Fox, two clergymen, perſons of induſtry, vigilance, and capacity, were the men to whom he chiefly confided his affairs and ſecret counſels. They had ſhared with him all his former dangers and diſtreſſes; and he now took

[e] Polydore Virgil, p. 566.

care

CHAP. XXIV.

1485. care to make them participate in his good fortune. They were both called to the privy council; Morton was reſtored to the biſhopric of Ely, Fox was created biſhop of Exeter. The former ſoon after, upon the death of Bourchier, was raiſed to the ſee of Canterbury. The latter was made privy ſeal; and ſucceſſively, biſhop of Bath and Wells, Durham, and Wincheſter. For Henry, as lord Bacon obſerves, loved to employ and advance prelates; becauſe, having rich biſhoprics to beſtow, it was eaſy for him to reward their ſervices: And it was his maxim to raiſe them by ſlow ſteps, and make them firſt paſs through the inferior biſhoprics [f]. He probably expected, that, as they were naturally more dependant on him than the nobility, who, during that age, enjoyed poſſeſſions and juriſdictions dangerous to royal authority; ſo the proſpect of farther elevation would render them ſtill more active in his ſervice, and more obequious to his commands.

1486. 18th Jan. In preſenting the bill of tonnage and poundage, the parliament, anxious to preſerve the true and undiſputed ſucceſſion to the crown, had petitioned Henry, with demonſtrations of the greateſt zeal, to eſpouſe the princeſs Elizabeth; but they covered their true reaſon under the dutiful pretence of their deſire to have heirs of his body.

King's marriage. He now thought in earneſt of ſatisfying the minds of his people in that particular. His marriage was celebrated at London; and that with greater appearance of univerſal joy, than either his firſt entry or his coronation. Henry remarked with much diſpleaſure this general favour borne to the houſe of York. The ſuſpicions, which aroſe from it, not only diſturbed his tranquillity during his whole reign; but bred diſguſt towards his conſort herſelf, and poiſoned all his domeſtic enjoyments. Though virtuous,

[f] Bacon, p. 582.

amiable,

amiable, and obsequious to the last degree, she never met with a proper return of affection, or even of complaisance from her husband; and the malignant ideas of faction still, in his sullen mind, prevailed over all the sentiments of conjugal tenderness. CHAP. XXIV. 1486.

The king had been carried along, with such a tide of success, ever since his arrival in England, that he thought nothing could withstand the fortune and authority which attended him. He now resolved to make a progress into the North, where the friends of the house of York, and even the partizans of Richard, were the most numerous; in hopes of curing, by his presence and conversation, the prejudices of the malcontents. When he arrived at Nottingham, he heard that viscount Lovel, with Sir Humphrey Stafford and Thomas, his brother, had secretly withdrawn themselves from their sanctuary at Colchester: But this news appeared not to him of such importance as to stop his journey; and he proceeded forward to York. He there heard, that the Staffords had levied an army, and were approaching to besiege the city of Worcester: And that Lovel, at the head of three or four thousand men, was marching to attack him in York. Henry was not dismayed with this intelligence. His active courage, full of resources, immediately prompted him to find the proper remedy. Though surrounded with enemies in these disaffected counties, he assembled a small body of troops, in whom he could confide; and he put them under the command of the duke of Bedford. He joined to them all his own attendants; but he found that this hasty armament was more formidable by their spirit and their zealous attachment to him, than by the arms or military stores with which they were provided. He therefore gave Bedford orders not to approach the enemy; but previously to try every proper expedient to disperse them. Bedford published a general promise of pardon to the rebels; An insurrection.

CHAP. XXIV.

bels; which had a greater effect on their leader than on his followers. Lovel, who had undertaken an enterprize,

1486. that exceeded his courage and capacity, was so terrified with the fear of desertion among his troops, that he suddenly withdrew himself; and, after lurking some time in Lancashire, he made his escape into Flanders, where he was protected by the dutchess of Burgundy. His army submitted to the king's clemency; and the other rebels, hearing of this success, raised the siege of Worcester, and dispersed themselves. The Staffords took sanctuary in the church of Colnham, a village near Abingdon; but as it was found, that this church had not the privilege of giving protection to rebels, they were taken thence: The elder was executed at Tyburn; the younger, pleading that he had been misled by his brother, obtained a pardon [g].

20th Sept. HENRY's joy for this success was followed, some time after, by the birth of a prince, to whom he gave the name of Arthur, in memory of the famous British king of that name, from whom, it was pretended, the family of Tudor derived its descent.

Discontents of the people. THOUGH Henry had been able to defeat this hasty rebellion, raised by the relicks of Richard's partizans, his government was become in general unpopular: The source of public discontent arose chiefly from his prejudices against the house of York, which was generally beloved by the nation, and which, for that very reason, became every day more the object of his hatred and jealousy. Not only a preference on all occasions, it was observed, was given to the Lancastrians; but many of the opposite party had been exposed to great severity, and had been bereaved of their fortunes by acts of attainder. A general resumption likewise had passed of all grants made by the princes of the house of York; and though

[g] Polydore Virgil, p. 569.

this rigour had been covered under the pretence, that the revenue was become insufficient to support the dignity of the crown, and though the liberalities, granted during the later years of Henry VI. were resumed by the same law, yet the York party, as they were the principal sufferers by the resumption, thought it chiefly levelled against them. The severity, exercised against the earl of Warwic, begat compassion for youth and innocence, exposed to such oppression; and his confinement in the Tower, the very place where Edward's children had been murdered by their uncle, made the public expect a like catastrophe for him, and led them to make a comparison between Henry and that detested tyrant. And when it was remarked, that the queen herself met with harsh treatment, and even after the birth of a son, was not admitted to the honour of a public coronation, Henry's prepossessions were then concluded to be inveterate, and men became equally obstinate in their disgust to his government. Nor was the manner and address of the king calculated to cure these prejudices contracted against his administration; but had, in every thing, a tendency to promote fear, or at best reverence, rather than goodwill and affection [b]. While the high idea, entertained of his policy and vigour, retained the nobility and men of character in obedience; the effects of his unpopular government soon appeared, by incidents of an extraordinary nature.

CHAP. XXIV. 1486.

THERE lived in Oxford, one Richard Simon, a priest, who possessed some subtlety, and still more enterprize and temerity. This man had entertained the design of disturbing Henry's government, by raising a pretender to his crown; and for that purpose, he cast his eyes on Lambert Simnel, a youth of fifteen years of age, who was son of a baker, and who, being endowed with under- Lambert Simnel.

[b] Bacon, p. 583.

CHAP. XXIV. 1486.

ſtanding above his years, and addreſs above his condition, ſeemed well fitted to perſonate a prince of royal extraction. A report had been ſpread among the people, and received with great avidity, that Richard, duke of York, ſecond ſon of Edward IV. had, by a ſecret eſcape, ſaved himſelf from the cruelty of his uncle, and lay ſomewhere concealed in England. Simon, taking advantage of this rumour, had at firſt inſtructed his pupil to aſſume that name, which he found to be ſo fondly cheriſhed by the public: But hearing afterwards a new report, that Warwic had made his eſcape from the Tower, and obſerving that this news was attended with no leſs general ſatisfaction, he changed the plan of his impoſture, and made Simnel perſonate that unfortunate prince [i]. Though the youth was qualified by nature for the part which he was inſtructed to act; yet was it remarked, that he was better informed in circumſtances relating to the royal family, particularly in the adventures of the earl of Warwic, than he could be ſuppoſed to have learned from one of Simon's condition: And it was thence conjectured, that perſons of higher rank, partizans of the houſe of York, had laid the plan of this conſpiracy, and had conveyed proper inſtructions to the actors. The queen-dowager herſelf was expoſed to ſuſpicion; and it was indeed the general opinion, however unlikely it might ſeem, that ſhe had ſecretly given her conſent to the impoſture. This woman was of a very reſtleſs diſpoſition. Finding, that, inſtead of receiving the reward of her ſervices, in contributing to Henry's elevation, ſhe herſelf was fallen into abſolute inſignificance, her daughter treated with ſeverity, and all her friends brought under ſubjection, ſhe had conceived the moſt violent animoſity againſt him, and had reſolved to make him feel the effects of her reſentment. She knew, that the impoſtor, however ſucceſsful,

[i] Polydore Virgil, p. 569, 570.

might

might easily at last be set aside; and if a way could be found at his risque to subvert the government, she hoped that a scene might be opened, which, though difficult at present exactly to foresee, would gratify her revenge, and be on the whole less irksome to her, than that slavery and contempt, to which she was now reduced [k]. CHAP. XXIV. 1486.

But whatever care Simon might take to convey instruction to his pupil Simnel, he was sensible, that the imposture would not bear a close inspection; and he was therefore determined to open the first public scene of it in Ireland. That island, which was zealously attached to the house of York, and bore an affectionate regard to the memory of Clarence, Warwic's father, who had been their lieutenant, was improvidently allowed by Henry to remain in the same condition, in which he found it; and all the counsellors and officers, who had been appointed by his predecessor, still retained their authority. No sooner did Simnel present himself to Thomas Fitz-gerald, earl of Kildare, the deputy, and claim his protection as the unfortunate Warwic, than that credulous nobleman, not suspecting so bold a fiction, gave attention to him, and began to consult some persons of rank with regard to this extraordinary incident. These he found even more sanguine in their zeal and belief than himself: And in proportion as the story diffused itself among those of lower condition, it became the object of still greater passion and credulity; till the people in Dublin with one consent tendered their allegiance to Simnel, as to the true Plantagenet. Fond of a novelty, which flattered their natural propension, they overlooked the daughters of Edward IV. who stood before Warwic in the order of succession; they payed the pretended prince attendance as their sovereign, lodged him in the castle of Dublin, and crowned him with a diadem taken from a statue of the virgin, and publicly Revolt of Ireland.

k Polydore Virgil, p. 570.

CHAP. XXIV. 1486.

proclaimed him king, under the appellation of Edward VI. The whole iſland followed the example of the capital; and not a ſword was any where drawn in Henry's quarrel.

When this intelligence was conveyed to the king, it reduced him to ſome perplexity. Determined always to face his enemies in perſon, he yet ſcrupled at preſent to leave England, where, he ſuſpected, the conſpiracy was firſt framed, and where, he knew, many perſons of condition, and the people in general were much diſpoſed to give it countenance. In order to diſcover the ſecret ſource of the contrivance, and take meaſures againſt this open revolt, he held frequent conſultations with his miniſters and counſellors, and laid plans for a vigorous defence of his authority, and the ſuppreſſion of his enemies.

The firſt event, which followed theſe deliberations, gave ſurprize to the public: It was the ſeizure of the queen-dowager, the forfeiture of all her lands and revenue, and the cloſe confinement of her perſon in the nunnery of Bermondeſey. This act of authority was covered with a very thin pretence. It was alleged, that, notwithſtanding the ſecret agreement to marry her daughter to Henry, ſhe had yet yielded to the ſolicitations and menaces of Richard, and had delivered that princeſs and her ſiſters into the hands of the tyrant. This crime, which was now become obſolete, and might admit of alleviations, was therefore ſuſpected not to be the real cauſe of the ſeverity, with which ſhe was treated; and men believed, that the king, unwilling to accuſe ſo near a relation of a conſpiracy againſt him, had cloaked his vengeance or precaution under colour of an offence known to the whole world [1]. They were afterwards the more confirmed in this ſuſpicion, when they found, that the unfortunate queen, though ſhe ſurvived this diſgrace ſeveral years,

1 Bacon, p. 583. Polydore Virgil, p. 571.

was

was never treated with any more lenity, but was allowed to end her life in poverty, ſolitude, and confinement. CHAP. XXIV. 1486.

THE next meaſure of the king's was of a leſs exceptionable nature. He ordered that Warwic ſhould be taken from the Tower, be led in proceſſion through the ſtreets of London, be conducted to St. Paul's, and there expoſed to the view of the whole people. He even gave directions, that ſome men of rank, attached to the houſe of York, and beſt acquainted with the perſon of this prince, ſhould approach him and converſe with him: And he truſted, that theſe, being convinced of the abſurd impoſture of Simnel, would put a ſtop to the credulity of the populace. The expedient had its effect in England: But in Ireland the people ſtill perſiſted in their revolt, and zealouſly retorted on the king the reproach of propagating an impoſture, and of having ſhewn a counterfeit Warwic to the public.

HENRY had ſoon reaſon to apprehend, that the deſign againſt him was not laid on ſuch ſlight foundations as the abſurdity of the contrivance ſeemed to indicate. John, earl of Lincoln, ſon of John de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, and of Elizabeth, eldeſt ſiſter to Edward IV. was engaged to take part in the conſpiracy. This nobleman, who poſſeſſed capacity and courage, had entertained very aſpiring views; and his ambition was encouraged by the known intentions of his uncle, Richard, who had formed a deſign, in caſe himſelf ſhould die without iſſue, of declaring Lincoln ſucceſſor to the crown. The king's jealouſy againſt all eminent perſons of the York party, and his rigour towards Warwic, had farther ſtruck Lincoln with apprehenſions, and made him reſolve to ſeek for ſafety in the moſt dangerous counſels. Having fixed a ſecret correſpondence with Sir Thomas Broughton, a man of great intereſt in Lancaſhire, he retired to Flanders, where Lovel had arrived a little before him; and he

CHAP. XXIV.

lived, during ſome time, in the court of his aunt the dutcheſs of Burgundy, by whom he had been invited over.

1487.

Intrigues of the dutcheſs of Burgundy.

MARGARET, widow of Charles the Bold, duke of Burgundy, not having any children of her own, attached herſelf with an entire friendſhip to her daughter-in-law, married to Maximilian, archduke of Auſtria; and after the death of that princeſs, ſhe perſevered in her affection to Philip and Margaret, her children, and occupied herſelf in the care of their education and of their perſons. By her virtuous conduct and demeanour, ſhe had acquired great authority among the Flemings; and lived with much dignity, as well as œconomy, upon that ample dowry, which ſhe inherited from her huſband. The reſentments of this princeſs were no leſs warm than her friendſhips; and that ſpirit of faction, which it is ſo difficult for a ſocial and ſanguine temper to guard againſt, had taken ſtrong poſſeſſion of her heart, and entrenched ſomewhat on the probity, which ſhone forth in the other parts of her character. Hearing of the malignant jealouſy, entertained by Henry againſt her family, and his oppreſſion of all its partizans; ſhe was moved with the higheſt indignation, and ſhe determined to make him repent of that enmity, to which ſo many of her friends, without any reaſon or neceſſity, had fallen victims. After conſulting with Lincoln and Lovel, ſhe hired a body of two thouſand veteran Germans, under the command of Martin Swart, a brave and experienced officer[m]; and ſent them over, together with theſe two noblemen, to join Simnel in Ireland. The countenance, given by perſons of ſuch high rank, and the acceſſion of this military force, much raiſed the courage of the Iriſh, and made them entertain the reſolution of invading Eng-

1487.

Lambert Simnel invades England.

[m] Polyd. Virg. p. 572, 573.

land,

land, where they believed the spirit of disaffection as prevalent as it appeared to be in Ireland. The poverty also, under which they laboured, made it impossible for them to support any longer their new court and army, and inspired them with a strong desire of enriching themselves by plunder and preferment in England. CHAP. XXIV. 1487.

HENRY was not ignorant of these intentions of his enemies; and he prepared himself for defence. He ordered troops to be levyed in different parts of the kingdom, and put them under the command of the duke of Bedford, and earl of Oxford. He confined the marquis of Dorset, who, he suspected, would resent the injuries suffered by his mother, the queen dowager: And to gratify the people by an appearance of devotion, he made a pilgrimage to our lady of Walsingham, famous for miracles; and there offered up prayers for success and for deliverance from his enemies.

BEING informed that Simnel was landed at Foudrey in Lancashire, he drew together his forces, and advanced towards the enemy as far as Coventry. The rebels had entertained hopes, that the dissaffected counties in the north would rise in their favour: But the people in general, averse to join Irish and German invaders, convinced of Lambert's imposture, and kept in awe by the king's reputation for success and conduct, either remained in tranquillity, or gave assistance to the royal army. The earl of Lincoln, therefore, who commanded the rebels, finding no hopes but in victory, was determined to bring the matter to a speedy decision; and the king, supported by the native courage of his temper, and emboldened by a great accession of volunteers, who had joined him, under the earl of Shrewsbury and lord Strange, declined not the combat. The hostile armies met at Stoke in the county of Nottingham, and fought a battle, 6th June. Battle of Stoke.

CHAP. XXIV.

1487. a battle, which was bloody, and more obſtinately diſputed than could have been expected from the inequality of their force. All the leaders of the rebels were reſolved to conquer or to periſh; and they inſpired their troops with like reſolution. The Germans alſo, being veteran and experienced ſoldiers, kept the event long doubtful; and even the Iriſh, though ill-armed and almoſt defenceleſs, ſhowed themſelves not defective in ſpirit and bravery. The king's victory was purchaſed with loſs, but was entirely deciſive. Lincoln, Broughton, and Swart periſhed in the field of battle, with four thouſand of their followers. As Lovel was never more heard of, he was believed to have undergone the ſame fate. Simnel, with his tutor, Simon, was taken priſoner. Simon, being a prieſt, was not tried at law, and was only committed to cloſe cuſtody: Simnel was too contemptible either to excite apprehenſion or reſentment in Henry. He was pardoned, and made a ſcullion in the king's kitchen; whence he was afterwards advanced to the rank of a falconer [n].

HENRY had now leiſure to revenge himſelf on his enemies. He made a progreſs into the northern parts, where he gave many proofs of his rigorous diſpoſition. A ſtrict enquiry was made after thoſe who had aſſiſted or favoured the rebels. The puniſhments were not all ſanguinary: The king made his revenge ſubſervient to his avarice. Heavy fines were levied upon the delinquents. The proceedings of the courts, and even the courts themſelves, were arbitrary. Either the criminals were tried by commiſſioners appointed for the purpoſe, or they ſuffered puniſhment by ſentence of a court-martial. And as a rumour had prevailed before the battle of Stoke, that the rebels had gained the victory, that the royal army was cut in pieces, and that the king himſelf had eſcaped

[n] Bacon, p. 586. Pol. Virg. p. 574.

by

by flight, Henry was resolved to interpret the belief or propagation of this report as a mark of disaffection; and he punished many for that pretended crime. But such, in this age, was the situation of the English government, that the royal prerogative, which was but imperfectly restrained during the most peaceable periods, was sure, in tumultuous, or even suspicious times, which frequently recurred, to break all bounds of law, and to violate public liberty. CHAP. XXIV. 1487.

After the king had gratified his rigour by the punishment of his enemies, he determined to give contentment to the people, in a point, which, though a mere ceremony, was passionately desired by them. The queen had been married near two years, but had not yet been crowned; and this affectation of delay had given great discontent to the public, and had been one principal source of the disaffection which prevailed. The king, instructed by experience, now finished the ceremony of her coronation; and to shew a disposition still more gracious, he restored to liberty the marquis of Dorset, who had been able to clear himself of all the suspicions entertained against him. 25th Nov.

CHAP. XXV.

State of foreign affairs——State of Scotland——of Spain——of the Low Countries——of France——of Britanny——French invaſion of Britanny——French embaſſy to England——Diſſimulation of the French court——An inſurrection in the North——ſuppreſſed——King ſends forces into Britanny——Annexation of Britanny to France——A parliament——War with France——Invaſion of France——Peace with France——Perkin Warbec——His impoſture——He is avowed by the dutcheſs of Burgundy——and by many of the Engliſh nobility——Trial and execution of Stanley——A parliament.

CHAP. XXV.

1488.

THE king acquired great reputation throughout Europe by the proſperous and vigorous conduct of his domeſtic affairs: But as ſome incidents, about this time, invited him to look abroad, and exert himſelf in behalf of his allies, it will be neceſſary, in order to give a juſt account of his foreign meaſures, to explain the ſituation of the neighbouring kingdoms; beginning with Scotland, which lies moſt contiguous.

State of foreign affairs.

State of Scotland.

THE kingdom of Scotland had not yet attained that ſtate, which diſtinguiſhes a civilized monarchy, and which enables the government, by the force of its laws and inſtitutions alone, without any extraordinary capacity in the ſovereign, to maintain itſelf in order and tranquillity. James III. who now filled the throne, was a prince of little induſtry and of a narrow genius; and

though it behoved him to yield the reins of government to his miniſters, he had never been able to make any choice, which could give contentment both to himſelf and to his people. When he beſtowed his confidence on any of the principal nobility, he found, that they exalted their own family to ſuch a height, as was dangerous to the prince, and gave umbrage to the ſtate: When he conferred favour on any perſon of meaner birth, on whoſe ſubmiſſion he could more depend, the barons of his kingdom, enraged at the power of an upſtart minion, proceeded to the utmoſt extremities againſt their ſovereign. Had Henry entertained the ambition of conqueſts, a tempting opportunity now offered of reducing that kingdom to ſubjection; but as he was probably ſenſible, that a warlike people, though they might be over-run by reaſon of their domeſtic diviſions, could not be retained in obedience without a regular military force, which was then unknown in England, he rather propoſed the renewal of the peace with Scotland, and ſent an embaſſy to James for that purpoſe. But the Scots, who never deſired a durable peace with England, and who deemed their ſecurity to conſiſt in conſtantly preſerving themſelves in a warlike poſture, would not agree to more than a ſeven years truce, which was accordingly concluded [o].

CHAP. XXV. 1488.

THE European ſtates on the continent were then haſtening faſt to the ſituation, in which they have remained, without any material alteration, for near three centuries; and began to unite themſelves into one extenſive ſyſtem of policy, which comprehended the chief powers of Chriſtendom. Spain, which had hitherto been almoſt entirely occupied within herſelf, now became formidable by the union of Arragon and Caſtile, in the perſon of Ferdinand and Iſabella, who, being princes of great

State of Spain.

[o] Polyd. Virg. p. 575.

capacity,

CHAP. XXV.

1483. capacity, employed their force in enterprizes the moſt advantageous to their combined monarchy. The conqueſt of Granada from the Moors was then undertaken, and brought near to a happy concluſion. And in that expedition the military genius of Spain was revived; honour and ſecurity were attained; and her princes, no longer kept in awe by a domeſtic enemy ſo dangerous, began to enter into all the tranſactions of Europe, and make a great figure in every war and negociation.

Of the Low Countries.

MAXIMILIAN, king of the Romans, ſon of the emperor Frederic, had, by his marriage with the heireſs of Burgundy, acquired an intereſt in the Netherlands; and though the death of his conſort had weakened his connexions with that country, he ſtill pretended to the government as tutor to his ſon Philip, and his authority had been acknowledged by Brabant, Holland, and ſeveral of the provinces. But as Flanders and Hainault ſtill refuſed to ſubmit to his regency, and even appointed other tutors to Philip, he had been engaged in long wars againſt that obſtinate people, and never was able thoroughly to ſubdue their ſpirit. That he might free himſelf from the oppoſition of France, he had concluded a peace with Lewis XI. and had given his daughter Margaret, then an infant, in marriage to the dauphin; together with Artois, Fanche-Compté, and Charolois as her dowry. But this alliance had not produced the deſired effect. The dauphin ſucceeded to the crown of France under the appellation of Charles VIII. but Maximilian ſtill found the mutinies of the Flemings fomented by the intrigues of the court of France.

State of France.

FRANCE, during the two preceding reigns, had made a mighty encreaſe in power and greatneſs; and had not other ſtates of Europe at the ſame time received an acceſſion of force, it had been impoſſible to have retained her within her ancient boundaries. Moſt of the great

great fiefs, Normandy, Champagne, Anjou, Dauphiny, Guienne, Provence, and Burgundy, had been united to the crown; the Engliſh had been expelled from all their conqueſts; the authority of the prince had been raiſed to ſuch a condition as enabled him to maintain law and order; a conſiderable military force was kept on foot, and the finances were able to ſupport it. Lewis XI. indeed, from whom many of theſe advantages were derived, was dead, and had left his ſon, in early youth and ill educated, to ſuſtain the weight of the monarchy: But having entruſted the government to his daughter, Anne, lady of Beaujeu, a woman of ſpirit and capacity, the French power ſuffered no check or decline. On the contrary, this princeſs formed the great project, which at laſt ſhe happily effected, of uniting to the crown Britanny, the laſt and moſt independent fief of the monarchy. CHAP. XXV. 1488.

Of Britanny.

FRANCIS II. duke of Britanny, conſcious of his own incapacity for government, had reſigned himſelf to the direction of Peter Landais, a man of meah birth, more remarkable for his ability than for his virtue or integrity. The nobles of Britanny, diſpleaſed with the great advancement of this favourite, had even proceeded to diſaffection againſt their ſovereign; and after many tumults and diſorders, they at laſt united among themſelves, and in a violent manner, ſeized, tried, and put to death the obnoxious miniſter. Dreading the reſentment of the prince for this invaſion of his authority, many of them retired to France; and others, for protection and ſafety, maintained a ſecret correſpondence with the French miniſtry, who, obſerving the great diſſentions among the Bretons, thought the opportunity favourable for invading the dutchy; and ſo much the rather as they could cover their ambition under the ſpecious pretence of providing for domeſtic ſecurity.

LEWIS,

CHAP. XXV.

1488. Lewis, duke of Orleans, firſt prince of the blood, and preſumptive heir of the monarchy, had diſputed the adminiſtration with the lady of Beaujeu; and though his pretenſions had been rejected by the ſtates, he ſtill maintained cabals with many of the grandees, and laid ſchemes for ſubverting the authority of that princeſs. Finding his conſpiracies detected, he took to arms, and fortified himſelf in Beaugenci; but as his revolt was precipitate, before his confederates were ready to join him, he had been obliged to ſubmit, and to receive ſuch conditions as the French miniſtry were pleaſed to impoſe upon him. Actuated however by his ambition, and even by his fears, he ſoon retired out of France, and took ſhelter with the duke of Britanny, who was deſirous of ſtrengthening himſelf againſt the deſigns of the lady of Beaujeu by the friendſhip and credit of the duke of Orleans. This prince alſo, perceiving the aſcendant which he ſoon acquired over the duke of Britanny, had engaged many of his partizans to join him at that court, and had formed the deſign of aggrandizing himſelf by a marriage with Anne, the heir of that opulent dutchy.

The barons of Britanny, who ſaw all favour engroſſed by the duke of Orleans and his train, renewed a ſtricter correſpondence with France, and even invited the French king to make an invaſion on their country. Deſirous however of preſerving its independancy, they had regulated the number of ſuccours, which France was to ſend them, and had ſtipulated that no fortified place in Britanny ſhould remain in the poſſeſſion of that monarchy: A vain precaution, where revolted ſubjects treat with a power ſo much ſuperior! The French invaded Britanny with forces three times more numerous than thoſe which they had promiſed to the barons; and advancing into the heart of the country, laid ſiege to Ploermel. To oppoſe them, the duke raiſed a numerous, but ill-diſciplined army,

French invaſion of Britanny.

army, which he put under the command of the duke of Orleans, the count of Dunois, and others of the French nobility. The army, discontented with this choice, and jealous of their confederates, soon disbanded, and left their prince with too small a force to keep the field against his invaders. He retired to Vannes; but being hotly pursued by the French, who had now made themselves masters of Ploermel, he escaped to Nantz; and the enemy, having previously taken and garrisoned Vannes, Dinant, and other places, laid close siege to that city. The barons of Britanny, finding their country menaced with total subjection, began gradually to withdraw from the French army, and to make peace with their sovereign. CHAP. XXV. 1488.

THIS desertion, however, of the Bretons discouraged not the court of France from pursuing her favourite project of reducing Britanny to subjection. The situation of Europe appeared favourable to the execution of this design. Maximilian was indeed engaged in close alliance with the duke of Britanny, and had even opened a treaty for marrying his daughter; but he was on all occasions so indigent, and at that time so disquieted by the mutinies of the Flemings, that little effectual assistance could be expected from him. Ferdinand was entirely occupied in the conquest of Granada; and it was also known, that, if France would resign to him Rousillon and Cerdagne, to which he had pretensions, she could at any time engage him to abandon the interests of Britanny. England alone was both enabled by her power, and engaged by her interests, to support the independency of that dutchy; and the most dangerous opposition was therefore, by Anne of Beaujeu, expected from that quarter. In order to cover her real designs, no sooner was she informed of Henry's success against Simnel and his partizans, than she dispatched ambassadors to the court of London, and made professions of the greatest trust and confidence in that monarch.

CHAP. XXV.

1488. French embaſſy to England.

THE ambaſſadors, after congratulating Henry on his late victory, and communicating to him, in the moſt cordial manner, as to an intimate friend, ſome ſucceſſes of their maſter againſt Maximilian, came in the progreſs of their diſcourſe to mention the late tranſactions in Britanny. They told him that the duke of Britanny having given protection to French fugitives and rebels, the king had been neceſſitated, contrary to his intention and inclination, to carry war into that dutchy: That the honour of the crown was intereſted not to ſuffer a vaſſal ſo far to forget his duty to his liege lord; nor was the ſecurity of the government leſs concerned to prevent the conſequences of this dangerous temerity: That the fugitives were no mean or obſcure perſons; but, among others, the duke of Orleans, firſt prince of the blood, who, finding himſelf obnoxious to juſtice for treaſonable practices in France, had fled into Britanny; where he ſtill perſevered in laying ſchemes of rebellion againſt his ſovereign: That the war being thus, on the part of the French monarch, entirely defenſive, it would immediately ceaſe, when the duke of Britanny, by returning to his duty, ſhould remove the cauſes of it: That their maſter was ſenſible of the obligations, which the duke, in very critical times, had conferred on Henry; but it was known alſo, that, in times ſtill more critical, he or his mercenary counſellors had deſerted him, and put his life in the utmoſt hazard: That his ſole refuge in theſe deſperate extremities had been the court of France, which not only protected his perſon, but ſupplied him with men and money, with which, aided by his own valour and conduct, he had been enabled to mount the throne of England: That France, in this tranſaction, had, from friendſhip to Henry, acted contrary to what, in a narrow view, might be eſteemed her own intereſt; ſince, inſtead of an odious tyrant, ſhe had contributed to eſtabliſh on a

rival

rival throne a prince endowed with such virtue and ability: And that as both the justice of the cause and the obligations conferred on Henry thus preponderated on the side of France, she reasonably expected, that, if the situation of his affairs did not permit him to give assistance to that kingdom, he would at least preserve a neutrality between the contending parties [p].

CHAP. XXV. 1488.

This discourse of the French ambassadors was plausible; and to give it greater weight, they communicated to Henry, as in confidence, their master's intention, after he should have settled the differences with Britanny, to lead an army into Italy, and make good his pretensions to the kingdom of Naples: A project, which, they knew, would give no umbrage to the court of England. But all these artifices were in vain employed against the penetration of the king. He clearly saw, that France had entertained the view of subduing Britanny; but he also perceived, that she would meet with great, and, as he thought, insuperable difficulties in the execution of her project. The native force of that dutchy, he knew, had always been considerable, and had often, without any foreign assistance, resisted the power of France; the natural temper of the French nation, he imagined, would make them easily abandon any enterprize, which required perseverance; and as the heir of the crown was confederated with the duke of Britanny, the ministers would be still more remiss in prosecuting a scheme, which must draw on them his resentment and displeasure. Should even these internal obstructions be removed, Maximilian, whose enmity to France was well known, and who now paid his addresses to the heiress of Britanny, would be able to make a diversion on the side of Flanders; nor could it be expected that France, if she prosecuted such ambitious projects, would be allowed to remain in tranquillity by

[p] Bacon, p. 589.

CHAP. XXV.

1488.

Ferdinand and Iſabella. Above all, he thought, the French court could never expect, that England, ſo deeply intereſted to preſerve the independancy of Britanny, ſo able by her power and ſituation to give effectual and prompt aſſiſtance, would permit ſuch an acceſſion of force to her rival. He imagined, therefore, that the miniſters of France, convinced of the impracticability of their ſcheme, would at laſt embrace pacific views, and would abandon an enterprize ſo obnoxious to all the potentates of Europe.

THIS reaſoning of Henry was ſolid, and might juſtly engage him in dilatory and cautious meaſures: But there entered into his conduct another motive, which was apt to draw him beyond the juſt bounds, becauſe founded on a ruling paſſion. His frugality, which by degrees degenerated into avarice, made him averſe to all warlike enterprizes and diſtant expeditions; and engaged him previouſly to try the expedient of negociation. He diſpatched Urſwic, his almoner, a man of addreſs and ability, to make offer of his mediation to the contending parties: An offer, which, he thought, if accepted by France, would ſoon lead to a compoſure of all differences; if refuſed or eluded, would at leaſt diſcover the perſeverance of that court in her ambitous projects. Urſwic found the lady of Beaujeu, now dutcheſs of Bourbon, engaged in the ſiege of Nantz, and had the ſatisfaction to find that his maſter's offer of mediation was readily embraced, and with many expreſſions of confidence and moderation. That able princeſs concluded, that the duke of Orleans, who governed the court of Britanny, foreſeeing that every accommodation muſt be made at his expence, would uſe all his intereſt to have Henry's propoſal rejected; and would by that means make an apology for the French meaſures, and draw on the Bretons the reproach of obſtinacy and injuſtice. The event juſtified her prudence. When the

Diſſimulation of the French court.

English ambaſſador made the ſame offer to the duke of Britanny, he received for anſwer, in the name of that prince, that having ſo long acted the part of protector and guardian to Henry, during his youth and adverſe fortune, he had expected, from a monarch of ſuch virtue, more effectual aſſiſtance in his preſent diſtreſſes, than a barren offer of mediation, which ſuſpended not the progreſs of the French arms: That if Henry's gratitude were not ſufficient to engage him in ſuch a meaſure, his prudence, as king of England, ſhould diſcover to him the pernicious conſequences attending the conqueſt of Britanny, and its annexation to the crown of France: That that kingdom, already too powerful, would be enabled, by ſo great an acceſſion of force, to diſplay, to the ruin of England, that hoſtile diſpoſition, which had always ſubſiſted between thoſe rival nations: That Britanny, ſo uſeful an ally, which, by its ſituation, gave the Engliſh an entrance into the heart of France; being annexed to that kingdom, would be equally enabled from its ſituation to diſturb, either by pyracies or naval armaments, the commerce and peace of England: And that, if the duke rejected Henry's mediation, it proceeded neither from an inclination to a war, which he experienced to be ruinous to him, nor from a confidence in his own force, which he knew to be much inferior to that of the enemy; but on the contrary, from a ſenſe of his preſent neceſſities, which muſt engage the king to act the part of his confederate, not that of a mediator. CHAP. XXV. 1488.

When this anſwer was reported to the king, he abandoned not the plan which he had formed: He only concluded, that ſome more time was requiſite to quell the obſtinacy of the Bretons and make them ſubmit to reaſon. And when he learned, that the people of Britanny, anxious for their duke's ſafety, had formed a tumultuary army of 60,000 men, and had obliged the French to raiſe the

CHAP. XXV.

1488. siege of Nantz, he fortified himself the more in his opinion, that the court of France would at last be reduced, by multiplied obstacles and difficulties, to abandon the project of reducing Britanny to subjection. He continued therefore his scheme of negociation, and thereby exposed himself to be deceived by the artifices of the French ministry; who, still pretending pacific intentions, sent lord Bernard Daubigni, a Scotch man of quality, to London, and pressed Henry not to be discouraged in offering his mediation to the court of Britanny. The king on his part dispatched another embassy, consisting of Urswic, the abbot of Abingdon, and Sir Richard Tonstal, who carried new proposals for an amicable accommodation. No effectual succours, meanwhile, were provided for the distressed Bretons. Lord Woodville, brother to the queen dowager, a man of courage and enterprize, having asked leave to raise underhand a body of volunteers and to transport them into Britanny, met with a refusal from the king, who was desirous of preserving the appearance of a strict neutrality. That nobleman, however, still persisted in his purpose. He went over to the Isle of Wight, of which he was governor; levied a body of 400 men; and having at last obtained, as is supposed, the secret permission of Henry, sailed with them to Britanny. This enterprize proved fatal to the leader, and brought small relief to the unhappy duke. The Bretons rashly engaged in a general action with the French at St. Aubin, and were discomfited. Woodville and all the English were put to the sword; together with a body of Bretons, who had been accoutered in the garb of Englishmen, in order to strike a greater terror into the French, to whom the martial prowess of that nation was always formidable [q]. The duke of Orleans, the prince of Orange, and many other persons of rank were taken prisoners: And the mi-

28th July.

[q] Argentré Hist. de Bretagne, liv. xii.

litary

litary force of Britanny was totally deſtroyed. The death of the duke, which followed ſoon after, threw affairs into ſtill greater confuſion, and ſeemed to threaten the ſtate with a final ſubjection. CHAP. XXV. 1488. 9th Septem.

THOUGH the king did not prepare againſt theſe events ſo hurtful to the intereſts of England, with ſufficient vigour and precaution, he had not altogether overlooked them. Determined to maintain a pacific conduct, as far as the ſituation of affairs would permit, he yet knew the warlike temper of his ſubjects, and obſerved, that their ancient and inveterate animoſity to France was now revived by the proſpect of this great acceſſion to her power and grandeur. He reſolved therefore to make advantage of this diſpoſition, and draw ſome ſupplies of money from the people, on pretence of giving aſſiſtance to the duke of Britanny. He had ſummoned a parliament at Weſtminſter [r]; and he ſoon perſuaded them to grant him a conſiderable ſubſidy [s]. But this ſupply, though voted by parliament, involved the king in unexpected difficulties. The counties of Durham and York, always diſcontented with Henry's government, and farther provoked by the late oppreſſions, under which they had laboured, after the ſuppreſſion of Simnel's rebellion, reſiſted the commiſſioners who were appointed to levy the tax. The commiſſioners, terrified with this appearance of ſedition, made application to the earl of Northumberland, and deſired of him advice and aſſiſtance in the execution of their office. That nobleman thought the matter of importance enough to conſult the king; who, unwilling to yield to the humours of a diſcontented populace, and foreſeeing the pernicious conſequence of ſuch a precedent, renewed his orders for ſtrictly levying the impoſition. Northumber- An inſurrection in north,

[r] 9th November, 1487. [s] Polydore Virgil, p. 579, ſays, that this impoſition was a capitation tax; the other hiſtorians ſay, it was a tax of two ſhillings in the pound.

CHAP. XXV.

1488.

land ſummoned together the juſtices and chief freeholders, and delivered the king's commands in the moſt imperious terms, which, he thought, would inforce obedience, but which tended only to provoke the people, and make them believe him the adviſer of thoſe orders which he delivered to them [t]. They flew to arms, attacked Northumberland in his houſe, and put him to death. Having incurred ſuch deep guilt, their mutinous humour prompted them to declare againſt the king himſelf; and being inſtigated by John Achamber, a ſeditious fellow of low birth, they choſe Sir John Egremond their leader, and prepared themſelves for a vigorous reſiſtance. Henry was not diſmayed with an inſurrection ſo precipitate and ill-ſupported. He immediately levied a force which he put under the command of the earl of Surrey, whom he had freed from confinement, and received into favour. His intention was to ſend down theſe troops, in order to check the progreſs of the rebels; while he himſelf ſhould follow with a greater body, which would abſolutely inſure ſucceſs. But Surrey thought himſelf ſtrong enough to encounter alone a raw and unarmed multitude; and he ſucceeded in the attempt. The rebels were diſſipated; John Achamber was taken priſoner, and afterwards executed with ſome of his accomplices; Sir John Egremond fled to the dutcheſs of Burgundy, who gave him protection; the greater number of the rebels received a pardon.

ſuppreſſed.

Henry had probably expected, when he obtained this grant from parliament, that he ſhould be able to terminate the affair of Britanny by negociation, and that he might thereby fill his coffers with the money levied by the impoſition. But as the diſtreſſes of the Bretons ſtill multiplied, and became every day more urgent; he found himſelf under the neceſſity of taking ſome more vigorous meaſures, in order to ſupport them. On the death of

[t] Bacon, p. 595.

the

the duke, the French had revived ſome antiquated claims to the dominion of the dutchy; and as the duke of Orleans was now captive in France, their former pretence for hoſtilities could no longer ſerve as a cover to their ambition. The king reſolved therefore to engage as auxiliary to Britanny; and to conſult the intereſts, as well as deſires of his people, by oppoſing himſelf to the progreſs of the French power. Beſides entering into a league with Maximilian, and another with Ferdinand, which were diſtant reſources, he levied a body of troops, to the number of 6000 men, with an intention of tranſporting them into Britanny. Still anxious, however, for the re-payment of his expences, he concluded a treaty with the young dutcheſs, by which ſhe engaged to deliver into his hands two ſea-port towns, there to remain till ſhe ſhould entirely refund the charges of the armament[t]. Though he engaged for the ſervice of theſe troops during the ſpace of eight months only, yet was the dutcheſs obliged, by the neceſſity of her affairs, to ſubmit to ſuch rigid conditions, impoſed by an ally, ſo much concerned in intereſt to protect her. The forces arrived under the command of lord Willoughby of Broke; and made the Bretons, during ſome time, maſters of the field. The French retired into their garriſons; and propoſed by dilatory meaſures to waſte the fire of the Engliſh, and diſguſt them with the enterprize. The ſcheme was well laid, and met with ſucceſs. Lord Broke found ſuch diſcord and confuſion in the counſels of Britanny, that no meaſures could be concerted for any undertaking; no ſupply obtained; no proviſions, carriages, artillery, or military ſtores procured. The whole court was rent into factions: No one miniſter had acquired the aſcendant: And whatever project was formed by one, was ſure to be traverſed by another. The Engliſh, diſconcerted in every

CHAP. XXV. 1489.

King ſends forces into Britanny.

[t] Du Tillet, Recueil des Traitez.

enterprize,

CHAP. XXV.

enterprize, by these animosities and uncertain counsels, returned home as soon as the time of their service was elapsed; leaving only a small garrison in those towns which had been cousigned into their hands. During their stay in Britanny, they had only contributed still farther to waste the country; and by their departure, they left it entirely at the mercy of the enemy. So feeble was the succour, which Henry in this important conjuncture afforded his ally, whom the invasion of a foreign enemy, concurring with domestic dissensions, had reduced to the utmost distress!

1489.

The great object of the domestic dissensions in Britanny was the disposal of the young dutchess in marriage. The mareschal Rieux seconded the suit of the lord d'Albret, who led some forces to her assistance. The chancellor Montauban, observing the aversion of the dutchess to this suitor, insisted, that a petty prince, such as d'Albret, was unable to support Anne in her present extremities; and he recommended some more powerful alliance, particularly that of Maximilian, king of the Romans.

1490.

This party at last prevailed; the marriage with Maximilian was celebrated by proxy; and the dutchess thenceforth assumed the title of queen of the Romans. But this magnificent appellation was all she gained by her marriage. Maximilian, destitute of troops and money, and embarrassed with the continual revolts of the Flemings, could send no succour to his distressed consort; While d'Albret, enraged at the preference given to his rival, deserted her cause, and received the French into Nantz, the most important place in the dutchy, both for strength and riches.

The French court began now to change their scheme with regard to the subjection of Britanny. Charles had formerly been affianced to Margaret daughter of Maximilian; who, though too young for the consummation of her

her marriage, had been sent to Paris to be educated, and at this time bore the title of queen of France. Besides the rich dowry, which she brought the king, she was, after her brother Philip, then in early youth, heir to all the dominions of the house of Burgundy; and seemed in many respects the most proper match, that could be chosen for the young monarch. These circumstances had so blinded both Maximilian and Henry, that they never suspected any other intentions in the French court; nor were they able to discover, that engagements, seemingly so advantageous and so solemnly entered into, could be infringed and set aside. But Charles began to perceive, that the conquest of Britanny, in opposition to the natives, and to all the great powers of Christendom, would prove a difficult enterprize; and that even, if he should over-run the country and make himself master of the fortresses, it would be impossible for him long to retain possession of them. The marriage alone of the dutchess could fully re-annex that fief to the crown; and the present and certain enjoyment of so considerable a territory seemed preferable to the prospect of inheriting the dominions of the house of Burgundy; a prospect which became every day more distant and precarious. Above all, the marriage of Maximilian and Anne, appeared destructive to the grandeur and even security of the French monarchy; while that prince, possessing Flanders on the one hand, and Britanny on the other, might thus, from both quarters, make inroads into the heart of the country. The only remedy for these evils was therefore concluded to be the dissolution of the two marriages, which had been celebrated, but not consummated; and the espousal of the dutchess of Britanny by the king of France.

CHAP. XXV. 1490.

It was necessary, that this expedient, which had not been foreseen by any court in Europe, and which they were, all of them, so much interested to oppose, should be

CHAP. XXV. 1490.

be kept a profound ſecret, and ſhould be diſcovered to the world only by the full execution of it. The meaſures of the French miniſtry in the conduct of this delicate enterprize were wiſe and political. While they preſſed Britanny with all the rigours of war, they ſecretly gained the count of Dunois, who poſſeſſed great authority with the Bretons; and having alſo engaged in their intereſts the prince of Orange, couſin-german to the dutcheſs, they gave him his liberty, and ſent him into Britanny. Theſe perſons, ſupported by other emiſſaries of France, prepared the minds of men for the great revolution projected, and diſplayed, though ſtill with many precautions, all the advantages of an union with the French monarchy. They repreſented to the barons of Britanny, that their country, haraſſed during ſo many years with perpetual war, had need of ſome repoſe, and of a ſolid and laſting peace with the only power that was formidable to them: That their alliance with Maximilian was not able to afford them even preſent protection; and by cloſely uniting them to a power, which was rival to the greatneſs of France, fixed them in perpetual enmity with that potent monarchy: That their vicinity expoſed them firſt to the inroads of the enemy; and the happieſt event, which, in ſuch a ſituation, could befal them, would be to attain a peace, though by a final ſubjection to France, and by the loſs of that liberty, tranſmitted to them from their anceſtors: And that any other expedient, compatible with the honour of the ſtate, and their duty to their ſovereign, was preferable to a ſcene of ſuch diſorder and devaſtation.

THESE ſuggeſtions had influence on the Bretons: But the chief difficulty lay in ſurmounting the prejudices of the young dutcheſs herſelf. That princeſs had imbibed a ſtrong prepoſſeſſion againſt the French nation, and particularly againſt Charles, the author of all the calamities,

which,

CHAP. XXV.

which, from her earlieſt infancy, had befallen her family. She had alſo fixed her affections on Maximilian; and as ſhe now deemed him her huſband, ſhe could not, ſhe thought, without incurring the greateſt guilt, and violating the moſt ſolemn engagements, contract a marriage with anothor perſon. In order to overcome her obſtinacy, Charles gave the duke of Orleans his liberty, who, though formerly a ſuitor to the dutcheſs, was now contented to ingratiate himſelf with the king, by employing in his favour all the intereſt which he ſtill poſſeſſed in Britanny. Mareſchal Rieux and chancellor Montauban were reconciled by his mediation; and theſe rival miniſters now concurred with the prince of Orange and the count of Dunois, in preſſing the concluſion of a marriage with Charles. By their ſuggeſtion, Charles advanced with a powerful army and inveſted Rennes, at that time the reſidence of the dutcheſs; who, aſſailed on all hands, and finding none to ſupport her in her inflexibility, at laſt opened the gates of the city, and agreed to eſpouſe the king of France. She was married at Langey in Touraine; conducted to St. Dennis, where ſhe was crowned; and thence made her entry into Paris, amidſt the joyful acclamations of the people, who regarded this marriage as the moſt proſperous event that could have befallen the monarchy.

1490.

1491.

Annexation of Britanny to France.

THE triumph and ſucceſs of Charles was the moſt ſenſible mortification to the king of the Romans. He had loſt a conſiderable territory, which he thought he had acquired, and an accompliſhed princeſs whom he had eſpouſed; he was affronted in the perſon of his daughter Margaret, who was ſent back to him, after ſhe had been treated during ſome years as queen of France; he had reaſon to reproach himſelf with his own ſupine ſecurity, in neglecting the conſummation of his marriage, which was eaſily practicable for him, and which would have rendered the tye indiſſoluble: Theſe conſiderations

CHAP. XXV.

1491. derations threw him into the most violent rage, which he vented in very indecent expressions; and he threatened France with an invasion from the united arms of Austria, Spain, and England.

THE king of England had also just reason to reproach himself with misconduct in this important transaction; and though the affair had terminated in a manner which he could not precisely foresee, his negligence, in leaving his most useful ally so long exposed to the invasion of superior power, could not but appear on reflection the result of timid caution and narrow politics. As he valued himself on his extensive foresight and profound judgment, the ascendant acquired over him, by a raw youth, such as Charles, could not but give him the highest displeasure; and prompt him to seek vengeance, after all remedy for his miscarriage was become absolutely impracticable. But he was farther actuated by avarice, a motive still more predominant with him than either pride or revenge; and he fought, even from his present disappointments, the gratification of this ruling passion.

7th July. On pretence of a French war, he issued a commission for levying a *Benevolence* on his people[u]; a species of taxation, which had been abolished by a recent law of Richard III. This violence (for such it really was) fell chiefly on the commercial part of the nation, who were possessed of the ready money. London alone contributed to the amount of near 10,000 pounds. Archbishop Morton, the chancellor, instructed the commissioners to employ a dilemma, in which every one might be comprehended: If the persons applied to, lived frugally, they were told, that their parsimony must necessarily have enriched them: If their method of living were splendid and hospitable, they were concluded to be

[u] Rymer, vol. xii. p. 446. Bacon says that the benevolence was levied with consent of parliament, which is a mistake.

opulent on account of their expences. This device was by some called chancellor Morton's fork, by others his crutch. CHAP. XXV. 1491.

So little apprehensive was the king of a parliament on account of his levying this arbitrary imposition, that he soon after summoned that assembly to meet at Westminster; and he even expected to enrich himself farther by working on their passions and prejudices. He knew the displeasure, which the English had conceived against France, on account of the conquest of Britanny; and he took care to insist on that topic, in the speech, which he himself pronounced to the parliament. He told them, that France, elated with her late successes, had even proceeded to a contempt of England, and had refused to pay the tribute, which Lewis XI. had stipulated to Edward IV. That it became so warlike a nation as the English to be rouzed by this indignity, and not to limit their pretensions merely to repelling the present injury: That for his part, he was determined to lay claim to the crown itself of France, and to maintain by force of arms so just a title, transmitted to him by his gallant ancestors: That Crecy, Poictiers, and Azincour were sufficient to instruct them in their superiority over the enemy; nor did he despair of adding new names to the glorious catalogue: That a king of France had been prisoner in London, and a king of England had been crowned at Paris; events which should animate them to an emulation of like glory with that which had been enjoyed by their forefathers: That the domestic dissensions of England had been the sole cause of her losing these foreign dominions; and her present internal union and harmony would be the effectual means of recovering them: That where such lasting honour was in view, and such an important acquisition, it became not brave men to repine at the advance of a little treasure: And

27th Oct. A parliament.

that

CHAP. XXV.

1491.

that for his part, he was determined to make the war maintain itſelf, and hoped, by the invaſion of ſo opulent a kingdom as France, to encreaſe, rather than diminiſh, the riches of the nation [w].

NOTWITHSTANDING theſe magnificent vaunts of the king, all men of penetration concluded, from the perſonal character of the man, and ſtill more, from the ſituation of affairs, that he had no ſerious intention of puſhing the war to ſuch extremities as he pretended. France was not now in the ſame condition as when ſuch ſucceſsful inroads had been made upon her by former kings of England. The great fiefs were united to the crown; the princes of the blood were deſirous of tranquillity; the nation abounded with able captains and veteran ſoldiers; and the general aſpect of her affairs ſeemed rather to threaten her neighbours, than to promiſe them any conſiderable advantages againſt her. The levity and vain-glory of Maximilian were ſupported by his pompous titles; but were ill ſeconded by military power, and ſtill leſs, by any revenue, proportioned to them. The politic Ferdinand, while he made a ſhow of war, was actually negociating for peace; and rather than expoſe himſelf to any hazard, would accept of very moderate conceſſions from France. Even England was not free from domeſtic diſcontents; and in Scotland, the death of Henry's friend and ally, James III. who had been murdered by his rebellious ſubjects, had made way for the ſucceſſion of his ſon, James IV. who was devoted to the French intereſt, and would ſurely be alarmed at any important progreſs of the Engliſh arms. But all theſe obvious conſiderations had no influence on the parliament. Inflamed by the ideas of ſubduing France, and of enriching themſelves by the ſpoils of that kingdom,

[w] Bacon, p. 601.

they

they gave into the ſnare prepared for them, and voted the ſupply which the king demanded. Two fifteenths were granted him; and the better to enable his vaſſals and nobility to attend him, an act was paſſed, empowering them to ſell their eſtates, without paying any fines for alienation. CHAP. XXV. 1491.

THE nobility were univerſally ſeized with a deſire of military glory; and having credulouſly ſwallowed all the boaſts of the king, they dreamed of no leſs than carrying their triumphant banners to the gates of Paris, and putting the crown of France on the head of their ſovereign. Many of them borrowed large ſums, or ſold off manors, that they might appear in the field with greater ſplendour, and lead out their followers in more complete order. The king croſſed the ſeas, and arrived at Calais on the ſixth of October, with an army of twenty-five thouſand foot and ſixteen hundred horſe, which he put under the command of the duke of Bedford and the earl of Oxford: But as ſome inferred, from his opening the campaign in ſo late a ſeaſon, that peace would ſoon be concluded between the crowns, he was deſirous of ſuggeſting a contrary inference. "He had come over," he ſaid, "to make an entire conqueſt of France, which "was not the work of one ſummer. It was therefore "of no conſequence at what ſeaſon he began the inva- "ſion; eſpecially as he had Calais ready for winter "quarters." As if he had ſeriouſly intended this enterprize, he inſtantly marched into the enemy's country and laid ſiege to Bulloigne: But notwithſtanding this appearance of hoſtility, there had been ſecret advances made towards peace above three months before; and commiſſioners had been appointed to treat of the terms. The better to reconcile the minds of men to this unexpected meaſure, the king's ambaſſadors arrived in the camp from the Low Countries, and informed him, that 1492. 6th Oct. War with France. Invaſion of France.

CHAP. XXV.

1492. Maximilian was in no readineſs to join him; nor was any aſſiſtance to be expected from that quarter. Soon after, meſſengers came from Spain, and brought news of a peace concluded between that kingdom and France, in which Charles had made a ceſſion of the counties of Rouſſillon and Cerdagne to Ferdinand. Though theſe articles of intelligence were carefully diſperſed through the army, the king was ſtill apprehenſive, leſt a ſudden peace, after ſuch magnificent promiſes and high expectations, might expoſe him to reproach. In order the more effectually to cover the intended meaſures, he ſecretly engaged the marquis of Dorſet, together with twenty-three perſons of diſtinction, to preſent him a petition for agreeing to a treaty with France. The pretence was founded on the late ſeaſon of the year, the difficulty of ſupplying the army at Calais during winter, the obſtacles which aroſe in the ſiege of Bulloigne, the deſertion of thoſe allies whoſe aſſiſtance had been moſt relied on: Events which might, all of them, have been foreſeen before the embarkation of the forces.

In conſequence of theſe preparatory ſteps, the biſhop of Exeter and lord Daubeney were ſent to confer at Eſtaples with the mareſchal de Cordes, and to put the laſt hand to the treaty. A few days ſufficed for this purpoſe: The demands of Henry were wholly pecuniary; and the king of France, who deemed the peaceable poſſeſſion of Britanny an equivalent for any ſum, and who was all on fire for his projected expedition into Italy, readily agreed to the propoſals made him. He engaged to pay Henry ſeven hundred and forty-five thouſand crowns, near four hundred thouſand pounds ſterling of our preſent money; partly as a reimburſement of the ſums advanced to Britanny, partly as arrears of the penſion due to Edward IV. And he ſtipulated a yearly penſion to Henry and his heirs of twenty-five thouſand crowns.

3d Nov. Peace with France.

crowns. Thus the king, as remarked by his hiſtorian, made profit upon his ſubjects for the war; and upon his enemies for the peace [x]. And the people agreed, that he had fulfilled his promiſe, when he ſaid to the parliament, that he would make the war maintain itſelf. Maximilian was, if he pleaſed, comprehended in Henry's treaty; but he diſdained to be in any reſpect beholden to an ally, of whom, he thought, he had reaſon to complain: He made a ſeparate peace with France, and obtained reſtitution of Artois, Franchecompté, and Charolois, which had been ceded as the dowry of his daughter, when ſhe was affianced to the king of France. CHAP. XXV. 1492.

THE peace, concluded between England and France, was the more likely to continue, becauſe Charles, full of ambition and youthful hopes, bent all his attention to the ſide of Italy, and ſoon after undertook the conqueſt of Naples; an enterprize, which Henry regarded with the greater indifference, as Naples lay remote from him, and France had never, in any age, been ſucceſsful in that quarter. The king's authority was fully eſtabliſhed at home; and every rebellion, which had been attempted againſt him, had hitherto tended only to confound his enemies, and conſolidate his power and influence. His reputation for policy and conduct was every day augmenting; his treaſures had encreaſed even from the moſt unfavourable events; the hopes of all pretenders to his throne were cut off, as well by his marriage, as by the iſſue which it had brought him. In this proſperous ſituation, the king had reaſon to flatter himſelf with the proſpect of durable peace and tranquillity: But his inveterate and indefatigable enemies, whom he had wantonly provoked, raiſed him an adverſary, who long kept him in inquietude, and ſometimes even brought him into danger.

[x] Bacon, p. 605. Pol. Virg. p. 586.

CHAP. XXV. 1492.

THE dutcheſs of Burgundy, full of reſentment for the depreſſion of her family and its partizans, rather irritated than diſcouraged by the ill ſucceſs of her paſt enterprizes, was determined at leaſt to diſturb that government, which ſhe found it ſo difficult to ſubvert. By means of her emiſſaries, ſhe propagated a report, that her nephew, Richard Plantagenet, duke of York, had eſcaped from the Tower when his elder brother was murdered, and that he ſtill lay ſomewhere concealed: And finding this rumour, however improbable, to be greedily received by the people, ſhe had been looking out for ſome young man, proper to perſonate that unfortunate prince.

Perkin Warbec.

THERE was one Oſbec or Warbec, a renegado Jew of Tournay, who had been carried by ſome buſineſs to London in the reign of Edward IV. and had there a ſon born to him. Having had opportunities of being known to the king, and obtaining his favour, he prevailed with that prince, whoſe manners were very affable, to ſtand godfather to his ſon, to whom he gave the name of Peter, corrupted, after the Flemiſh manner, into Peterkin, or Perkin. It was by ſome believed, that Edward, among his amorous adventures, had a ſecret commerce with Warbec's wife; and from this incident people accounted for that reſemblance, which was afterwards remarked between young Perkin and that monarch [y]. Some years after the birth of this child, Warbec returned to Tournay; where Perkin, his ſon, did not long remain, but by different accidents was carried from place to place, and his birth and fortunes became thereby unknown, and difficult to be traced by the moſt diligent enquiry. The variety of his adventures had happily favoured the natural verſatility and ſagacity of his genius; and he ſeemed to be a youth perfectly fitted to act any part, or

[y] Bacon, p. 606.

aſſume

assume any character. In this light he had been represented to the dutchess of Burgundy, who, struck with the concurrence of so many circumstances suited to her purpose, desired to be made acquainted with the man, on whom she already began to ground her hopes of success. She found him to exceed her most sanguine expectations; so comely did he appear in his person, so graceful in his air, so courtly in his address, so full of docility and good sense in his behaviour and conversation. The lessons, necessary to be taught him, in order to his personating the duke of York, were soon learned by a youth of such quick apprehension; but as the season seemed not then favourable for his enterprize, Margaret, in order the better to conceal him, sent him, under the care of lady Brampton, into Portugal, where he remained a year, unknown to all the world. CHAP. XXV. 1492. His imposture.

THE war, which was then ready to break out between France and England, seemed to afford a proper opportunity for the discovery of this new phænomenon; and Ireland, which still retained its attachments to the house of York, was chosen as the proper place for his first appearance [z]. He landed at Corke; and immediately assuming the name of Richard Plantagenet, drew to him partizans among that ignorant and credulous people. He wrote letters to the earls of Desmond and Kildare, inviting them to join his party: He dispersed every where the strange intelligence of his escape from his uncle Richard's cruelty: And men, fond of every thing new and wonderful, began to make him the general subject of their discourse, and even the object of their favour.

THE news soon reached France; and Charles, prompted by the secret solicitations of the dutchess of Burgundy, and the intrigues of one Frion, a secretary of Henry,

[z] Polyd. Virg. p. 589.

CHAP. XXV.

1492. who had deſerted his ſervice, ſent Perkin an invitation to repair to him at Paris. He received him with all the marks of regard due to the duke of York; ſettled on him a handſome penſion, aſſigned him magnificent lodgings, and in order to provide at once for his dignity and ſecurity, gave him a guard for his perſon, of which lord Congreſal accepted the office of captain. The French courtiers readily embraced a fiction, which their ſovereign thought it his intereſt to adopt: Perkin, both by his deportment and perſon, ſupported the prepoſſeſſion, which was ſpread abroad of his royal pedigree: And the whole kingdom was full of the accompliſhments, as well as ſingular adventures and misfortunes of the young Plantagenet. Wonders of this nature are commonly augmented at a diſtance. From France, the admiration and credulity diffuſed themſelves into England: Sir George Nevil, Sir John Taylor, and above a hundred gentlemen more, came to Paris, in order to offer their ſervices to the ſuppoſed duke of York, and to ſhare his fortunes: And the impoſtor had now the appearance of a court attending him, and began to entertain hopes of final ſucceſs in his undertakings.

WHEN peace was concluded between France and England at Eſtaples, Henry applied to have Perkin put into his hands; but Charles, reſolute not to betray a young man, of whatever birth, whom he had invited into his kingdom, would agree only to diſmiſs him. The pretended Richard retired to the dutcheſs of Burgundy, and craving her protection and aſſiſtance, offered to lay before her all the proofs of that birth, to which he laid claim. The princeſs affected ignorance of his pretenſions; even put on the appearance of diſtruſt; and having, as ſhe ſaid, been already deceived by Simnel, ſhe was determined never again to be ſeduced by any impoſtor. She deſired before all the world to be inſtructed in his reaſons for aſſuming

He is avowed by the dutcheſs of Burgundy,

assuming the name which he bore; seemed to examine every circumstance with the most scrupulous nicety; put many particular questions to him; affected astonishment at his answers; and at last, after long and severe scrutiny, burst out into joy and admiration at his wonderful delivery, embraced him as her nephew, the true image of Edward, the sole heir of the Plantagenets, and the legitimate successor to the English throne. She immediately assigned him an equipage, suited to his pretended birth; appointed him a guard of thirty halberdiers; engaged every one to pay court to him; and on all occasions honoured him with the appellation of the *White Rose of England*. The Flemings, moved by the authority which Margaret, both from her rank and personal character, enjoyed among them, readily adopted the fiction of Perkin's royal descent: No surmise of his true birth was as yet heard of: Little contradiction was made to the prevailing opinion: And the English, from their great communication with the Low Countries, were every day more and more prepossessed in favour of the impostor. CHAP. XXV. 1492. 1493.

It was not the populace alone of England that gave credit to Perkin's pretensions. Men of the highest birth and quality, disgusted at Henry's government, by which they found the nobility depressed, began to turn their eyes towards this new claimant; and some of them even entered into a correspondence with him. Lord Fitzwater, Sir Simon Mountfort, Sir Thomas Thwaites betrayed their inclination towards him: Sir William Stanley himself, lord chamberlain, who had been so active in raising Henry to the throne, moved either by blind credulity or a restless ambition, entertained the project of a revolt in favour of his enemy [a]. Sir Robert Clifford and William Barley were still more open in their measures: They went over to Flanders, were introduced by and by many of the English nobility.

a Bacon, p. 608.

CHAP. XXV.

1493.

the dutchess of Burgundy to the acquaintance of Perkin, and made him a tender of their services. Clifford wrote back to England, that he knew perfectly the person of Richard duke of York, that this young man was undoubtedly that prince himself, and that no circumstance of his story was exposed to the least difficulty. Such positive intelligence, conveyed by a person of rank and character, was sufficient with many to put the matter beyond question, and excited the wonder and attention even of the most indifferent. The whole nation was held in suspence; a regular conspiracy was formed against the king's authority; and a correspondence settled between the malcontents in Flanders and those in England.

The king was informed of all these particulars; but agreeably to his character, which was both cautious and resolute, he proceeded deliberately, though steadily, in counter-working the projects of his enemies. His first object was to ascertain the death of the real duke of York, and to confirm the opinion that had always prevailed with regard to that event. Five persons had been employed by Richard in the murder of his nephews, or could give evidence with regard to it; Sir James Tirrel, to whom he had committed the government of the Tower for that purpose, and who had seen the dead princes; Forrest, Dighton, and Slater, who perpetrated the crime; and the priest who buried the bodies. Tirrel and Dighton alone were alive, and they agreed in the same story; but as the priest was dead, and as the bodies were supposed to have been removed by Richard's orders from the place where they were first interred, and could not now be found, it was not in Henry's power to put the fact, so much as he wished, beyond all doubt and controversy.

He met at first with more difficulty, but was in the end more successful, in detecting who this wonderful person was that thus boldly advanced pretensions to his crown.

crown. He diſperſed his ſpies all over Flanders and England; he engaged many to pretend that they had embraced Perkin's party; he directed them to inſinuate themſelves into the confidence of the young man's friends; in proportion as they conveyed intelligence of any conſpirator, he bribed his retainers, his domeſtic ſervants, nay ſometimes his confeſſor, and by theſe means traced up ſome other confederate; Clifford himſelf he engaged by the hope of rewards and pardon, to betray the ſecrets committed to him; the more truſt he gave to any of his ſpies, the higher reſentment did he feign againſt them ſome of them he even cauſed to be excommunicated and publicly anathematized, in order the better to procure them the confidence of his enemies: And in the iſſue, the whole plan of the conſpiracy was clearly laid before him; and the pedigree, adventures, life, and converſation of the pretended duke of York. This latter part of the ſtory was immediately publiſhed for the ſatisfaction of the nation: The conſpirators he reſerved for a ſlower and ſurer vengeance. CHAP. XXV. 1493.

MEANWHILE, he remonſtrated with the archduke, Philip, on account of the countenance and protection, which was afforded in his dominions to ſo infamous an impoſtor; contrary to treaties ſubſiſting between the ſovereigns, and to the mutual amity which had ſo long been maintained by the ſubjects of both ſtates. Margaret had intereſt enough to get his application rejected; on pretence that Philip had no authority over the demeſnes of the dutcheſs dowager. And the king, in reſentment of this injury, cut off all commerce with the Low Countries, baniſhed the Flemings, and recalled his own ſubjects from theſe provinces. Philip retaliated by like edicts; but Henry knew, that ſo mutinous a people as the Flemings would not long bear, in compliance with the 1494.

CHAP. XXV.

1494. the humours of their prince, to be deprived of the beneficial branch of commerce which they carried on with England.

He had it in his power to inflict more effectual punishment on his domestic enemies; and when his projects were sufficiently matured, he failed not to make them feel the effects of his resentment. Almost in the same instant, he arrested Fitzwater, Mountfort, and Thwaites, together with William Daubeney, Robert Ratcliff, Thomas Cressenor, and Thomas Astwood. All these were arraigned, convicted, and condemned for high treason, in adhering and promising aid to Perkin. Mountfort, Ratcliff, and Daubeney were immediately executed: Fitz-water was sent over to Calais, and detained in custody; but being detected in practising on his keeper for an escape, he soon after underwent the same fate. The rest were pardoned, together with William Worseley, dean of St. Paul's, and some others, who had been accused and examined, but not brought to public trial [b].

Greater and more solemn preparations were deemed requisite for the trial of Stanley, lord chamberlain, whose authority in the nation, whose domestic connexions with the king, as well as his former services, seemed to secure him against any accusation or punishment. Clifford was directed to come over privately to England, and to throw himself at the king's feet, while he sat in council; craving pardon for past offences, and offering to atone for them by any services, which should be required of him. Henry then told him, that the best proof he could give of penitence, and the only service he could now render him, was the full confession of his guilt, and the discovery of all his accomplices, however distinguished by rank or character. Encouraged by this exhortation, Clifford accused Stanley then present, as his chief abettor; and of-

[b] Polydore Virgil, p. 592.

fered

CHAP. XXV.

fered to lay before the council the full proof of his guilt. Stanley himself could not discover more surprize than was affected by Henry on this occasion. He received the intelligence as absolutely false and incredible; that a man, to whom he was in a great measure beholden for his crown, and even for his life; a man, to whom, by every honour and favour, he had endeavoured to express his gratitude; whose brother, the earl of Derby, was his own father-in-law; to whom he had even committed the trust of his person, by creating him lord chamberlain: That this man, enjoying his full confidence and affection, not actuated by any motive of discontent or apprehension, should engage in a conspiracy against him. Clifford was therefore exhorted to weigh well the consequences of this accusation; but as he persisted in the same positive asseverations, Stanley was committed to custody, and was soon after examined before the council [c]. He denied not the guilt imputed to him by Clifford; he did not even endeavour much to extenuate it; whether he thought that a frank and open confession would serve as an atonement, or trusted to his present connexions, and his former services, for pardon and security. But princes are often apt to regard great services as a ground of jealousy, especially if accompanied with a craving and restless disposition, in the person who has performed them. The general discontent also, and mutinous humour of the people, seemed to require some great example of severity. And as Stanley was one of the most opulent subjects in the kingdom, being possessed of above three thousand pounds a-year in land, and forty thousand marks in plate and money, besides other property of great value, the prospect of so rich a forfeiture was deemed no small motive for Henry's proceeding to extremities against him. After six weeks delay, which was interposed in order to shew that the

1494.

Trial and execution of Stanley.

1495.

15th Feb.

[c] Bacon, p. 611. Polyd. Virg. p. 593.

king

CHAP. XXV.

1495. king was restrained by doubts and scruples; the prisoner was brought to his trial, condemned, and presently after beheaded. Historians are not well agreed with regard to the crime which was proved against him. The general report is, that he should have said in confidence to Clifford, that, if he were sure the young man, who appeared in Flanders, was really son to king Edward, he never would bear arms against him. This sentiment might disgust Henry, as implying a preference of the house of York to that of Lancaster, but could scarcely be the ground, even in those arbitrary times, of a sentence of high treason against Stanley. It is more probable, therefore, as is asserted by some historians, that he had expressly engaged to assist Perkin, and had actually sent him some supply of money.

The fate of Stanley made great impression on the kingdom, and struck all Perkin's retainers with the deepest dismay. From Clifford's desertion, they found that all their secrets were betrayed; and as it appeared, that Stanley, while he seemed to live in the greatest confidence with the king, had been continually surrounded by spies, who reported and registered every action in which he was engaged, nay, every word which fell from him, a general distrust took place, and all mutual confidence was destroyed, even among intimate friends and acquaintance. The jealous and severe temper of the king, together with his great reputation for sagacity and penetration, kept men in awe, and quelled not only the movements of sedition, but the very murmurs of faction. Libels, however, crept out against Henry's person and administration; and being greedily propagated by every secret art, showed that there still remained among the people a considerable root of discontent, which wanted only a proper opportunity to discover itself.

CHAP. XXV.

But Henry continued more intent on encreasing the terrors of his people, than on gaining their affections. Trusting to the great success which attended him in all his enterprizes, he gave every day, more and more, a loose to his rapacious temper, and employed the arts of perverted law and justice, in order to exact fines and compositions from his people. Sir William Capel, alderman of London, was condemned on some penal statutes to pay the sum of 2743 pounds, and was obliged to compound for sixteen hundred and fifteen. This was the first noted case of that kind; but it became a precedent, which prepared the way for many others. The management, indeed, of these arts of chicanery, was the great secret of the king's administration. While he depressed the nobility, he exalted and honoured and caressed the lawyers; and by that means both bestowed authority on the laws, and was enabled, whenever he pleased, to pervert them to his own advantage. His government was oppressive; but it was so much the less burthensome, as, by extending his own authority, and curbing the nobles, he became in reality the sole oppressor in his kingdom. 1495.

As Perkin found, that the king's authority daily gained ground among the people, and that his own pretensions were becoming obsolete, he resolved to attempt something, which might revive the hopes and expectations of his partizans. Having gathered together a band of outlaws, pirates, robbers, and necessitous persons of all nations, to the number of 600 men, he put to sea, with a resolution of making a descent in England, and of exciting the common people to arms, since all his correspondence with the nobility was cut off by Henry's vigilance and severity. Information being brought him, that the king had made a progress to the north, he cast anchor on the coast of Kent, and sent some of his retainers ashore, who invited the country to join him. The gentlemen of Kent

CHAP. XXV.

1495. gathered together some troops to oppose him; but they proposed to do more essential service than by repelling the invasion: They carried the semblance of friendship to Perkin, and invited him to come, himself, ashore, in order to take the command over them. But the wary youth, observing that they had more order and regularity in their movements than could be supposed in new levied forces, who had taken arms against established authority, refused to entrust himself into their hands; and the Kentish troops, despairing of success in their stratagem, fell upon such of his retainers, as were already landed; and besides some whom they slew, they took an hundred and fifty prisoners. These were tried and condemned; and all of them executed, by orders from the king, who was resolved to use no lenity towards men of such desperate fortunes [d].

A parliament.

THIS year a parliament was summoned in England, and another in Ireland; and some remarkable laws were passed in both countries. The English parliament enacted, that no person, who should by arms or otherwise assist the king for the time being, should ever afterwards, either by course of law or act of parliament, be attainted for such an instance of obedience. This statute might be exposed to some censure, as favourable to usurpers; were there any precise rule, which always, even during the most factious times, could determine the true successor, and render every one inexcusable, who did not submit to him. But as the titles of princes are then the great subject of dispute, and each party pleads topics in its own favour, it seems but equitable to secure those who act in support of public tranquillity, an object at all times of undoubted benefit and importance. Henry, conscious of his disputed title, promoted this law, in order to secure his partizans against all events; but as he had himself observ-

[d] Polydore Virgil, p. 595.

ed a contrary practice with regard to Richard's adherents, he had reason to apprehend, that, during the violence which usually ensues on public convulsions, his example, rather than his law, would, in case of a new revolution, be followed by his enemies. And the attempt to bind the legislature itself, by prescribing rules to future parliaments, was contradictory to the plainest principles of political government. CHAP. XXV. 1495.

THIS parliament also passed an act, impowering the king to levy, by course of law, all the sums which any person had agreed to pay by way of benevolence: A statute, by which that arbitrary method of taxation was indirectly authorized and justified.

THE king's authority appeared equally prevalent and uncontroled in Ireland. Sir Edward Poynings had been sent over to that country, with an intention of quelling the partizans of the house of York, and of reducing the natives to subjection. He was not supported by forces sufficient for that enterprize: The Irish, by flying into their woods, and morasses, and mountains, for some time, eluded his efforts: But Poynings summoned a parliament at Dublin, where he was more successful. He passed that memorable statute, which still bears his name, and which establishes the authority of the English government in Ireland. By this statute, all the former laws of England were made to be of force in Ireland; and no bill can be introduced into the Irish parliament, unless it previously receive the sanction of the council of England. This latter law seems calculated for ensuring the dominion of the English; but was really granted at the desire of the Irish commons, who proposed, by that means, to secure themselves from the tyranny of their lords, particularly of such lieutenants or deputies as were of Irish birth [e].

[e] Sir John Davis, p. 235.

WHILE

CHAP. XXV.

1495. WHILE Henry's authority was thus eſtabliſhed throughout his dominions, and general tranquillity prevailed, the whole continent was thrown into combuſtion by the French invaſion of Italy; and by the rapid ſucceſs which attended Charles in that raſh and ill-concerted enterprize. The Italians, who had entirely loſt the uſe of arms, and who, in the midſt of continual wars, had become every day more unwarlike, were aſtoniſhed to meet an enemy, that made the field of battle, not a pompous tournament, but a ſcene of blood, and ſought at the hazard of their own lives the death of their enemy. Their effeminate troops were diſperſed every where on the approach of the French army: Their beſt fortified cities opened their gates: Kingdoms and ſtates were in an inſtant overturned: And through the whole length of Italy, which the French penetrated without reſiſtance, they ſeemed rather to be taking quarters in their own country, than making conqueſts over an enemy. The maxims, which the Italians, during that age, followed in negociations, were as ill calculated to ſupport their ſtates, as the habits to which they were addicted in war: A treacherous, deceitful, and inconſtant ſyſtem of politics prevailed; and even thoſe ſmall remains of fidelity and honour, which were preſerved in the councils of the other European princes, were ridiculed in Italy, as proofs of ignorance and ruſticity. Ludovico, duke of Milan, who invited the French to invade Naples, had never deſired or expected their ſucceſs; and was the firſt that felt terror from the proſperous iſſue of thoſe projects, which he himſelf had concerted. By his intrigues a league was formed among ſeveral potentates to oppoſe the progreſs of Charles's conqueſts and ſecure their own independency. This league was compoſed of Ludovico himſelf, the pope, Maximilian king of the Romans, Ferdinand of Spain, and the republic of Venice. Henry too entered into the confederacy;

racy; but was not put to any expence or trouble in consequence of his engagements. The king of France, terrified by so powerful a combination, retired from Naples with the greater part of his army, and returned to France. The forces, which he left in his new conquest were, partly by the revolt of the inhabitants, partly by the invasion of the Spaniards, soon after subdued; and the whole kingdom of Naples suddenly returned to its allegiance under Ferdinand, son to Alphonso, who had been suddenly expelled by the irruption of the French. Ferdinand died soon after; and left his uncle, Frederic, in full possession of the throne.

CHAP. XXV. 1495.

CHAP. XXVI.

Perkin retires to Scotland——Inſurrection in the weſt——Battle of Blackheath——Truce with Scotland——Perkin taken priſoner——Perkin executed——The earl of Warwic executed——Marriage of prince Arthur with Catharine of Arragon——His death——Marriage of the princeſs Margaret with the king of Scotland——Oppreſſions of the people——A parliament——Arrival of the king of Caſtile——Intrigues of the earl of Suffolk——Sickneſs of the king——His death——and character——His laws.

CHAP. XXVI. 1495. AFTER Perkin was repulſed from the coaſt of Kent, he retired into Flanders; but as he found it impoſſible to procure ſubſiſtance for himſelf and his followers, while he remained in tranquillity, he ſoon after made an attempt upon Ireland, which had always appeared forward to join every invader of Henry's authority. But Poynings had now put the affairs of that iſland in ſo good a poſture, that Perkin met with little ſucceſs; and being tired of the ſavage life, which he was obliged to lead, while ſkulking among the wild Iriſh, he bent his courſe towards Scotland, and preſented himſelf to James IV. who then governed that kingdom. He had been previouſly recommended to this prince by the king of France, who was diſguſted at Henry for entering into the general league againſt him; and this recommendation was even ſeconded by Maximilian, who, though one of the confederates, was alſo diſpleaſed with the king, on account of

of his prohibiting in England all commerce with the Low Countries. The countenance given to Perkin by these princes procured him a favourable reception with the king of Scotland, who assured him, that, whatever he were, he never should repent putting himself in his hands [f]: The insinuating address and plausible behaviour of the youth himself, seem even to have gained him credit and authority. James, whom years had not yet taught distrust or caution, was seduced to believe the story of Perkin's birth and adventures; and he carried his confidence so far as to give him in marriage the lady Catherine Gordon, daughter of the earl of Huntley, and related to himself; a young lady too, eminent for virtue as well as beauty.

CHAP. XXVI.

1495. Perkin retires to Scotland.

THERE subsisted at that time a great jealousy between the courts of England and Scotland; and James was probably the more forward on that account to adopt any fiction, which, he thought, might reduce his enemy to distress or difficulty. He suddenly resolved to make an inroad into England, attended by some of the borderers; and he carried Perkin along with him, in hopes, that the appearance of the pretended prince might raise an insurrection in the northern counties. Perkin himself dispersed a manifesto, in which he set forth his own story, and craved the assistance of all his subjects in expelling the usurper, whose tyranny and mal-administration, whose depression of the nobility by the elevation of mean persons, whose oppression of the people by multiplied impositions and vexations, had justly, he said, rendered him odious to all men. But Perkin's pretensions, attended with repeated disappointments, were now become stale in the eyes even of the populace; and the hostile dispositions, which subsisted between the kingdoms, rendered a

1496.

[f] Bacon, p. 615. Polydore Virgil, p. 596, 597.

CHAP. XXVI.

1496. prince, ſupported by the Scots, but an unwelcome preſent to the Engliſh nation. The ravages alſo, committed by the borderers, accuſtomed to licence and diſorder, ſtruck a terror into all men; and made the people prepare rather for repelling the invaders than for joining them. Perkin, that he might ſupport his pretenſions to royal birth, feigned great compaſſion for the miſery of his plundered ſubjects; and publicly remonſtrated with his ally againſt the depredations exerciſed by the Scottiſh army[g]: But James told him, that he doubted his concern was employed only in behalf of an enemy, and that he was anxious to preſerve what never ſhould belong to him. That prince now began to perceive, that his attempt would be fruitleſs; and hearing of an army, which was on its march to attack him, he thought proper to retreat into his own country.

THE king diſcovered little anxiety to procure either reparation or vengeance for this inſult committed on him by the Scotch nation: His chief concern was to draw advantage from it, by the pretence which it might afford him to levy impoſitions on his own ſubjects. He ſummoned a parliament, to whom he made bitter complaints againſt the irruption of the Scots, the abſurd impoſture countenanced by that nation, the cruel devaſtations committed in the northern counties, and the multiplied inſults thus offered both to the king and kingdom of England. The parliament made the expected return to this diſcourſe of the king, by granting him a ſubſidy to the amount of 120,000 pounds, together with two fifteenths. After making this grant, they were diſmiſſed.

1497. THE vote of parliament for impoſing the tax was without much difficulty procured by the authority of Henry; but he found it not ſo eaſy to levy the money upon his ſubjects. The people, who were acquainted

[g] Polydore Virgil, p. 598.

with

CHAP. XXVI. 1497.

with the immenſe treaſures which he had amaſſed, could ill brook the new impoſitions raiſed on every ſlight occaſion; and it is probable, that the flaw, which was univerſally known to be in his title, made his reign the more ſubject to inſurrections and rebellions. When the ſubſidy began to be levied in Cornwal, the inhabitants, numerous and poor, robuſt and courageous, murmured againſt a tax, occaſioned by a ſudden inroad of the Scots, from which they eſteemed themſelves entirely ſecure, and which had uſually been repelled by the force of the northern counties. Their ill-humour was farther incited by one Michael Joſeph, a farrier of Bodmin, a notable talking fellow, who, by thruſting himſelf forward on every occaſion, and being loudeſt in every complaint againſt the government, had acquired an authority among theſe rude people. Thomas Flammoc too, a lawyer, who had become the oracle of the neighbourhood, encouraged the ſedition, by informing them, that the tax, though impoſed by parliament, was entirely illegal; that the northern nobility were bound, by their tenures, to defend the nation againſt the Scots; and that if theſe new impoſitions were tamely ſubmitted to, the avarice of Henry and of his miniſters would ſoon render the burthen intolerable to the nation. The Corniſh, he ſaid, muſt deliver to the king a petition, ſeconded by ſuch force as would give it authority; and in order to procure the concurrence of the reſt of the kingdom, care muſt be taken, by their orderly deportment, to ſhew that they had nothing in view but the public good, that the redreſs of all thoſe grievances, under which the people had ſo long laboured.

Inſurrection in the Weſt.

ENCOURAGED by theſe ſpeeches, the multitude flocked together, and armed themſelves with axes, bills, bows, and ſuch weapons as country people are uſually poſſeſſed of. Flammoc and Joſeph were choſen their leaders. They ſoon conducted the Corniſh through the county of

CHAP. XXVI.

1497. Devon, and reached that of Somerſet. At Taunton the rebels killed, in their fury, an officious and eager commiſſioner of the ſubſidy, whom they called the provoſt of Perin. When they reached Wells, they were joined by lord Audley, a nobleman of an ancient family, popular in his deportment, but vain, ambitious, and reſtleſs in his temper. He had from the beginning maintained a ſecret correſpondence with the firſt movers of the inſurrection; and was now joyfully received by them as their leader. Proud of the countenance given them by ſo conſiderable a nobleman, they continued their march; breathing deſtruction to the king's miniſters and favourites, particularly Morton, now a cardinal, and Sir Reginald Bray, who were deemed the moſt active inſtruments in all his oppreſſions. Notwithſtanding their rage againſt the adminiſtration, they carefully followed the directions given them by their leaders; and as they met with no reſiſtance, they committed, during their march, no violence or diſorder.

THE rebels had been told by Flammoc, that the inhabitants of Kent, as they had ever, during all ages, remained unſubdued, and had even maintained their independency during the Norman conqueſt, would ſurely embrace their party, and declare themſelves for a cauſe, which was no other than that of public good and general liberty. But the Kentiſh people had very lately diſtinguiſhed themſelves by repelling Perkin's invaſion; and having received from the king many gracious acknowledgments for this ſervice, their affections were, by that means, much conciliated to his government. It was eaſy, therefore, for the earl of Kent, lord Abergavenny, and lord Cobham, who poſſeſſed great authority in thoſe parts, to retain the people in obedience; and the Corniſh rebels, though they pitched their camp near Eltham, at the very gates of London, and invited all the people to join

join them, got reinforcement from no quarter. There wanted not discontents every where, but no one would take part in so rash and ill-concerted an enterprize; and besides, the situation, in which the king's affairs then stood, discouraged even the boldest and most daring. CHAP. XXVI. 1497.

HENRY, in order to oppose the Scots, had already levied an army, which he put under the command of lord Daubeney, the chamberlain; and as soon as he heard of the Cornish insurrection, he ordered it to march southwards, and suppress the rebels. Not to leave the northern frontier defenceless, he dispatched thither the earl of Surrey, who assembled the forces on the borders, and made head against the enemy. Henry found here the concurrence of the three most fatal incidents that can befal a monarchy; a foreign enemy, a domestic rebellion, and a pretender to his crown; but he enjoyed great resources in his army and treasure, and still more, in the intrepidity and courage of his own temper. He did not, however, immediately give full scope to his military spirit. On other occasions, he had always hastened to a decision, and it was a usual saying with him, *that he desired but to see his rebels:* But as the Cornish mutiniers behaved in an inoffensive manner, and committed no spoil on the country; as they received no accession of force on their march or in their encampment; and as such hasty and popular tumults might be expected to diminish every moment by delay; he took post in London, and assiduously prepared the means of ensuring victory.

Battle of Blackheath.

AFTER all his forces were collected, he divided them into three bodies, and marched out to assail the enemy. The first body, commanded by the earl of Oxford, and under him by the earls of Essex and Suffolk, were appointed to place themselves behind the hill on which the rebels were encamped: The second and most considerable, Henry put under the command of lord Daubeney,

CHAP. XXVI.

1497. and ordered him to attack the enemy in front, and bring on the action. The third, he kept as a body of reserve about his own person, and took post in St. George's fields; where he secured the city, and could easily, as occasion served, either restore the fight or finish the victory. To put the enemy off their guard, he had spread

June 22d. a report that he was not to attack them till some days after; and the better to confirm them in this opinion, he began not the action till near the evening. Daubeney beat a detachment of the rebels from Deptford-bridge; and before the main body could be in order to receive him, he had gained the ascent of the hill, and placed himself in array before them. They were formidable from their numbers, being sixteen thousand strong, and were not defective in valour; but being tumultuary troops, ill armed, and not provided with cavalry or artillery, they were but an unequal match for the king's forces. Daubeney began the attack with courage, and even with a contempt of the enemy, which had almost proved fatal to him. He rushed into the midst of them, and was taken prisoner; but soon after was relieved by his own troops. After some resistance, the rebels were broken, and put to flight [h]. Lord Audley, Flammoc, and Joseph, their leaders, were taken, and all three executed. The latter seemed even to exult in his end, and boasted, with a preposterous ambition, that he should make a figure in history. The rebels, being surrounded on every side by the king's troops, were almost all made prisoners; and immediately dismissed without farther punishment: Whether, that Henry was satisfied with the victims who had fallen in the field, and who amounted to near two thousand, or that he pitied the ignorance and simplicity of the multitude, or favoured them on account of their inoffensive behaviour, or was pleased that they had never,

[h] Polydore Virgil, p. 601.

during

during their insurrection, disputed his title, and had shewn no attachment to the house of York, the highest crime, of which, in his eyes, they could have been guilty. CHAP. XXVI. 1497.

The Scottish king was not idle during these commotions in England. He levied a considerable army, and sat down before the castle of Norham in Northumberland; but found that place, by the precaution of Fox, bishop of Durham, so well provided both with men and ammunition, that he made little or no progress in the siege. Hearing that the earl of Surrey had collected some forces and was advancing upon him, he retreated into his own country, and left the frontiers exposed to the inroads of the English general, who besieged and took Aiton, a small castle lying a few miles beyond Berwic. These unsuccessful or frivolous attempts on both sides prognosticated a speedy end to the war; and Henry, notwithstanding his superior force, was no less desirous than James of terminating the differences between the nations. Not to depart, however, from his dignity, by making the first advances towards peace, he employed in this friendly office Peter Hialas, a man of address and learning, who had come to him as ambassador from Ferdinand and Isabella, and who was charged with a commission of negociating the marriage of the infanta Catherine, their daughter, with Arthur prince of Wales [i].

Hialas took a journey northwards, and offered his mediation between James and Henry, as minister of a prince, who was in alliance with both potentates. Commissioners were soon appointed to meet, and confer on terms of accommodation. The first demand of the English was, that Perkin should be put into their hands: James replied, that he himself was no judge of the young man's pretensions, but having received him as a suppli-

[i] Polydore Virgil, p. 603.

CHAP. XXVI. 1497.

cant, and promised him protection, he was determined not to betray a man, who had trusted to his good faith and his generosity. The next demand of the English met with no better reception: They required reparation for the ravages committed by the late inroads into England: The Scotch commissioners replied, that the spoils were like water spilt upon the ground, which could never be recovered, and that Henry's subjects were better able to bear the loss, than their master's to repair it. Henry's commissioners next proposed, that the two kings should have an interview at Newcastle, in order to adjust all differences; but James said, that he meant to treat of a peace, not to go a begging for it. Lest the conferences should break off altogether without effect, a truce was concluded for some months; and James perceiving, that, while Perkin remained in Scotland, he himself never should enjoy a solid peace with Henry, privately desired him to depart the kingdom.

Truce with Scotland.

Access was now barred Perkin into the Low Countries; his usual retreat in all his disappointments. The Flemish merchants, who severely felt the loss resulting from the interruption of commerce with England, had made such interest in the archduke's council, that commissioners were sent to London, in order to treat of an accommodation. The Flemish court agreed that all English rebels should be excluded the Low Countries; and in this prohibition the demesnes of the dutchess-dowager were expressly comprehended. When this principal article was agreed to, all the other terms were easily adjusted. A treaty of commerce was finished, which was favourable to the Flemings, and to which they long gave the appellation of *Intercursus magnus*, the great treaty. And when the English merchants returned to their usual abode at Antwerp, they were publicly received, as in procession, with joy and festivity.

PERKIN

CHAP. XXVI.

1497.

PERKIN was a Fleming by deſcent, though born in England; and it might therefore be doubted, whether he were included in the treaty between the two nations: But as he muſt diſmiſs all his Engliſh retainers if he took ſhelter in the Low Countries, and as he was ſure of a cold reception, if not bad uſage, among people who were determined to keep on terms of friendſhip with the court of England; he thought fit rather to hide himſelf, during ſome time, in the wilds and faſtneſſes of Ireland. Impatient however of a retreat, which was both diſagreeable and dangerous, he held conſultations with his followers, Herne, Skelton, and Aſtley, three broken tradeſmen: By their advice, he reſolved to try the affections of the Corniſh, whoſe mutinous diſpoſition, notwithſtanding the king's lenity, ſtill ſubſiſted, after the ſuppreſſion of their rebellion. No ſooner did he appear at Bodmin in Cornwal, than the populace, to the number of three thouſand men, flocked to his ſtandard; and Perkin, elated with this appearance of ſucceſs, took on him, for the firſt time, the appellation of Richard IV. king of England. Not to ſuffer the expectations of his followers to languiſh, he preſented himſelf before Exeter; and by many fair promiſes, invited that city to join him. Finding that the inhabitants ſhut their gates againſt him, he laid ſiege to the place; but being unprovided with artillery, ammunition, and every thing requiſite for that attempt, he made no progreſs in his undertaking. Meſſengers were ſent to the king, informing him of this inſurrection: The citizens of Exeter meanwhile were determined to hold out to the laſt extremity, in expectation of receiving ſuccour from the known vigilance of that monarch.

WHEN Henry was informed, that Perkin was landed in England, he expreſſed great joy, and prepared himſelf with alacrity to attack him, in hopes of being able, at laſt, to put a period to pretenſions, which had ſo long given

CHAP. XXVI. 1497.

given him vexation and inquietude. All the courtiers, ſenſible that their activity on this occaſion would be the moſt acceptable ſervice which they could render the king, diſplayed their zeal for the enterprize, and forwarded his preparations. The lords Daubeney, and Broke, with Sir Rice ap Thomas, haſtened forward with a ſmall body of troops to the relief of Exeter. The earl of Devonſhire, and the moſt conſiderable gentlemen in the county of that name, took arms of their own accord, and marched to join the king's generals. The duke of Buckingham put himſelf at the head of a troop of young nobility and gentry, who ſerved as volunteers, and who longed for an opportunity of diſplaying their courage and their loyalty. The king himſelf prepared to follow with a conſiderable army; and thus all England ſeemed united againſt a pretender, who had at firſt engaged their attention and divided their affections.

PERKIN, informed of theſe great preparations, immediately raiſed the ſiege of Exeter, and retired to Taunton. Though his followers now amounted to the number of near ſeven thouſand men, and ſeemed ſtill reſolute to maintain his cauſe, he himſelf deſpaired of ſucceſs, and ſecretly withdrew to the ſanctuary of Beaulieu in the new foreſt. The Corniſh rebels ſubmitted to the king's mercy, and found that it was not yet exhauſted in their behalf. Except a few perſons of deſperate fortune, who were executed, and ſome others who were ſeverely fined, all the reſt were diſmiſſed with impunity. Lady Catherine Gordon, wife to Perkin, fell into the hands of the victor, and was treated with a generoſity, which does him honour. He ſoothed her mind with many tokens of regard, placed her in a reputable ſtation about the queen, and aſſigned her a penſion, which ſhe enjoyed even under his ſucceſſor.

HENRY

CHAP. XXVI.

HENRY next deliberated what course to take with Perkin himself. Some counselled him to make the privileges of the church yield to reasons of state, to take him by violence from the sanctuary, to inflict on him the punishment due to his temerity, and thus at once to put an end to an imposture which had long disturbed the government, and which the credulity of the people and the artifices of malcontents were still capable of reviving. But the king deemed not the matter of such importance as to merit so violent a remedy. He employed some persons to deal with Perkin, and persuade him, under promise of pardon, to deliver himself into the king's hands [1]. The king conducted him in a species of mock triumph to London. As Perkin passed along the road, and through the streets of that city, men of all ranks flocked about him, and the populace treated with the highest derision his fallen fortunes. They seemed desirous of revenging themselves, by their insults, for the shame, which their former belief of his impostures had thrown upon them. Though the eyes of the nation were generally opened with regard to Perkin's real parentage, Henry required of him a confession of his life and adventures; and he ordered the account of the whole to be published, soon after, for the satisfaction of the public. But as his regard to decency made him entirely suppress the share which the dutchess of Burgundy had had in contriving and conducting the imposture, the people, who knew that she had been the chief instrument in the whole affair, were inclined, on account of the silence on that head, to pay the less credit to the authenticity of the narrative.

1498. Perkin taken prisoner.

BUT Perkin, though his life was granted him, was still detained in custody; and keepers were appointed to 1499.

[1] Polydore Virgil, p. 606.

guard

CHAP. XXVI.

1499. guard him. Impatient of confinement, he broke from his keepers, and flying to the ſanctuary of Shyne, put himſelf into the hands of the prior of that monaſtery. The prior had obtained great credit by his character of ſanctity; and he prevailed on the king again to grant a pardon to Perkin. But in order to reduce him to ſtill greater contempt, he was ſet in the ſtocks at Weſtminſter and Cheapſide, and obliged in both places to read aloud to the people the confeſſion, which had formerly been publiſhed in his name. He was then confined to the Tower, where his habits of reſtleſs intrigue and enterprize followed him. He inſinuated himſelf into the intimacy of four ſervants of Sir John Digby, lieutenant of the Tower; and by their means, opened a correſpondence with the earl of Warwic, who was confined in the ſame priſon. This unfortunate prince, who had from his earlieſt youth been ſhut up from the commerce of men, and who was ignorant even of the moſt common affairs of life, had fallen into a ſimplicity which made him ſuſceptible of any impreſſion. The continued dread alſo of the more violent effects of Henry's tyranny, joined to the natural love of liberty, engaged him to embrace a project for his eſcape, by the murder of the lieutenant; and Perkin offered to conduct the whole enterprize. The conſpiracy eſcaped not the king's vigilance: It was even very generally believed, that the ſcheme had been laid by himſelf, in order to draw Warwic and Perkin into the ſnare: But the ſubſequent execution of two of Digby's ſervants for the contrivance, ſeems to clear the king of that imputation, which was indeed founded more on the general idea entertained of his character, than on any poſitive evidence.

PERKIN, by this new attempt, after ſo many enormities, had rendered himſelf totally unworthy of mercy; and he was accordingly arraigned, condemned, and ſoon after

CHAP. XXVI.

after hanged at Tyburn, perſiſting ſtill in the confeſſion of his impoſture [m]. It happened about that very time, that one Wilford, a cordwainer's ſon, encouraged by the ſurpriſing credit given to other impoſtures, had undertaken to perſonate the earl of Warwic; and a prieſt had even ventured from the pulpit to recommend his cauſe to the people, who ſeemed ſtill to retain a propenſity to adopt it. This incident ſerved Henry as a pretence for his ſeverity towards that prince. He was brought to trial, and accuſed, not of contriving his eſcape, (for as he was committed for no crime, the deſire of liberty muſt have been regarded as natural and innocent) but of forming deſigns to diſturb the government, and raiſe an inſurrection among the people. Warwic confeſſed the indictment, was condemned, and the ſentence was executed upon him.

1499. Perkin executed.

The earl of Warwic executed. 21ſt Nov.

THIS violent act of tyranny, the great blemiſh of Henry's reign, by which he deſtroyed the laſt remaining male of the line of Plantagenet, begat great diſcontent among the people, who ſaw an unhappy prince, that had long been denied all the privileges of his high birth, even been cut off from the common benefits of nature, now at laſt deprived of life itſelf, merely for attempting to ſhake off that oppreſſion under which he laboured. In vain did Henry endeavour to alleviate the odium of this guilt, by ſharing it with his ally, Ferdinand of Arragon, who, he ſaid, had ſcrupled to give his daughter Catherine in marriage to Arthur, while any male deſcendant of the houſe of York remained. Men, on the contrary, felt higher indignation at ſeeing a young prince ſacrificed, not to law and juſtice, but to the jealous politics of two ſubtle and crafty tyrants.

BUT though theſe diſcontents feſtered in the minds of men, they were ſo checked by Henry's watchful policy

[m] See note [M] at the end of the volume.

and

CHAP. XXVI.

and ſteady ſeverity, that they ſeemed not to weaken his government; and foreign princes, deeming his throne now entirely ſecure, paid him rather the greater deference and attention. The archduke, Philip, in particular, deſired an interview with the king; and this monarch, who had paſſed over to Calais, agreed to meet him in St. Peter's church near that city. The archduke, on his approaching the king, made haſte to alight, and offered to hold Henry's ſtirrup; a mark of condeſcenſion, which that prince would not admit of. He called the king *father*, *patron*, *protector*; and by his whole behaviour expreſſed a ſtrong deſire of conciliating the friendſhip of England. The duke of Orleans had ſucceeded to the crown of France under the appellation of Lewis XII. and having carried his arms into Italy, and ſubdued the dutchy of Milan, his progreſs begat jealouſy in Maximilian, Philip's father, as well as in Ferdinand, his father-in-law. By the counſel, therefore, of theſe monarchs, the young prince endeavoured by every art to acquire the amity of Henry, whom they regarded as the chief counterpoiſe to the greatneſs of France. No particular plan however of alliance ſeems to have been concerted between theſe two princes in their interview: All paſſed in general profeſſions of affection and regard; at leaſt, in remote projects of a cloſer union, by the future intermarriages of their children, who were then in a ſtate of infancy.

1499.

1500.

THE pope too, Alexander VI. neglected not the friendſhip of a monarch, whoſe reputation was ſpread over Europe. He ſent a nuntio to England, who exhorted the king to take part in the great alliance projected for the recovery of the Holy Land, and to lead in perſon his forces againſt the infidels. The general frenzy for cruſades was now entirely exhauſted in Europe; but it

CHAP. XXVI.

1500.

it was ſtill thought a neceſſary piece of decency to pretend zeal for thoſe pious enterprizes. Henry regretted the diſtance of his ſituation, which rendered it inconvenient for him to expoſe his perſon in defence of the Chriſtian cauſe. He promiſed, however, his utmoſt aſſiſtance by aids and contributions; and rather than the pope ſhould go alone to the holy wars, unaccompanied by any monarch, he even promiſed to overlook all other conſiderations, and to attend him in perſon. He only required as a neceſſary condition, that all differences ſhould previouſly be adjuſted among Chriſtian princes, and that ſome ſea-port towns in Italy ſhould be conſigned to him for his retreat and ſecurity. It was eaſy to conclude from this anſwer, that Henry had determined not to intermeddle in any war againſt the Turk: But as a great name, without any real aſſiſtance, is ſometimes of ſervice, the knights of Rhodes, who were at that time eſteemed the bulwark of Chriſtendom, choſe the king protector of their order.

But the prince, whoſe alliance Henry valued the moſt, was Ferdinand of Arragon, whoſe vigorous and ſteady policy, always attended with ſucceſs, had rendered him, in many reſpects, the moſt conſiderable monarch in Europe. There was alſo a remarkable ſimilarity of character between theſe two princes: Both were full of craft, intrigue, and deſign; and though a reſemblance of this nature be a ſlender foundation for confidence and amity, where the intereſts of the parties in the leaſt interfere; yet ſuch was the ſituation of Henry and Ferdinand, that no jealouſy ever on any occaſion aroſe between them. The king had now the ſatisfaction of completing a marriage, which had been projected and negociated during the courſe of ſeven years, between Arthur prince of Wales and the infanta Catherine, fourth daughter of Ferdinand and Iſabella; he near ſixteen years of age, ſhe eighteen. But this marriage proved in the

1501. Marriage of prince Arthur with Catherine of Arragon. 12th Nov.

CHAP. XXVI.

issue unprosperous. The young prince, a few months after, sickened and died, much regretted by the nation.

1502. 2d April. His death.

Henry, desirous to continue his alliance with Spain, and also unwilling to restore Catherine's dowry, which was two hundred thousand ducats, obliged his second son, Henry, whom he created prince of Wales, to be contracted to the infanta. The prince made all the opposition, of which a youth of twelve years of age was capable; but as the king persisted in his resolution, the espousals were at last, by means of the pope's dispensation, concluded between the parties: An event, which was afterwards attended with the most important consequences.

Marriage of the princess Margaret with the king of Scotland.

THE same year, another marriage was celebrated, which was also, in the next age, productive of great events: The marriage of Margaret, the king's eldest daughter, with James king of Scotland. This alliance had been negociated during three years, though interrupted by several broils; and Henry hoped, from the completion of it, to remove all source of discord with that neighbouring kingdom, by whose animosity England had so often been infested. When this marriage was deliberated on in the English council, some objected, that England might, by means of that alliance, fall under the dominion of Scotland. "No;" replied Henry, "Scot-"land, in that event, will only become an accession to "England." Amidst these prosperous incidents, the king met with a domestic calamity, which made not such impression on him as it merited: His queen died in childbed; and the infant lived not long after. This princess was deservedly a favourite of the nation; and the general affection for her encreased, on account of the harsh treatment, which, it was thought, she met with from her consort.

1503. 11th Feb.

THE

CHAP. XXVI.

1503.

THE situation of the king's affairs, both at home and abroad, was now, in every respect, very fortunate. All the efforts of the European princes, both in war and negociation, were turned to the side of Italy; and the various events, which there arose, made Henry's alliance be courted by every party, and yet interested him so little as never to touch him with concern or anxiety. His close connexions with Spain and Scotland ensured his tranquillity; and his continued successes over domestic enemies, owing to the prudence and vigour of his conduct, had reduced the people to entire submission and obedience. Uncontrouled therefore, by apprehension or opposition of any kind, he gave full scope to his natural propensity; and avarice, which had ever been his ruling passion, being encreased by age, and encouraged by absolute authority, broke all restraints of shame or justice. He had found two ministers, Empson and Dudley, perfectly qualified to second his rapacious and tyrannical inclinations, and to prey upon his defenceless people. These instruments of oppression were both lawyers, the first of mean birth, of brutal manners, of an unrelenting temper; the second better born, better educated, and better bred, but equally unjust, severe, and inflexible. By their knowledge in law, these men were qualified to pervert the forms of justice to the oppression of the innocent; and the formidable authority of the king supported them in all their iniquities.

Oppressions of the people.

IT was their usual practice at first to observe so far the appearance of law as to give indictments to those whom they intended to oppress: Upon which the persons were committed to prison, but never brought to trial; and were at last obliged, in order to recover their liberty, to pay heavy fines and ransoms, which were called mitigations and compositions. By degrees, the very appearance of law was neglected: The two ministers sent forth their

CHAP. XXVI.

1503. precepts to attach men, and ſummon them before themſelves and ſome others, at their private houſes, in a court of commiſſion, where, in a ſummary manner, without trial or jury, arbitrary decrees were iſſued, both in pleas of the crown and controverſies between private parties. Juries themſelves, when ſummoned, proved but ſmall ſecurity to the ſubject; being brow-beaten by theſe oppreſſors; nay, fined, impriſoned, and puniſhed, if they gave ſentence againſt the inclination of the miniſters. The whole ſyſtem of the feudal law, which ſtill prevailed, was turned into a ſcheme of oppreſſion. Even the king's wards, after they came of age, were not ſuffered to enter into poſſeſſion of their lands without paying exorbitant fines. Men were alſo haraſſed with informations of intruſion upon ſcarce colourable titles. When an outlawry in a perſonal action was iſſued againſt any man, he was not allowed to purchaſe his charter of pardon, except on the payment of a great ſum; and if he refuſed the compoſition required of him, the ſtrict law, which, in ſuch caſes, allows forfeiture of goods, was rigorouſly inſiſted on. Nay, without any colour of law, the half of men's lands and rents was ſeized during two years, as a penalty in caſe of outlawry. But the chief means of oppreſſion, employed by theſe miniſters, were the penal ſtatutes, which, without conſideration of rank, quality, or ſervices, were rigidly put in execution againſt all men: Spies, informers, and inquiſitors were rewarded and encouraged in every quarter of the kingdom: And no difference was made whether the ſtatute was beneficial or hurtful, recent or obſolete, poſſible or impoſſible to be executed. The ſole end of the king and his miniſters was to amaſs money, and bring every one under the laſh of their authority [n].

[n] Bacon, 629, 630. Hollingſhed. p. 504. Polyd. Virg. p. 613, 615.

CHAP. XXVI.

THROUGH the prevalence of such an arbitrary and iniquitous administration, the English, it may safely be affirmed, were considerable losers by their ancient privileges, which secured them from all taxation, except such as was imposed by their own consent in parliament. Had the king been empowered to levy general taxes at pleasure, he would naturally have abstained from these oppressive expedients, which destroyed all security in private property, and begat an universal diffidence throughout the nation. In vain did the people look for protection from the parliament, which was pretty frequently summoned during this reign. That assembly was so overawed, that, at this very time, during the greatest rage of Henry's oppressions, the commons chose Dudley their speaker, the very man who was the chief instrument of his iniquities. And though the king was known to be immensely opulent, and had no pretence of wars or expensive enterprizes of any kind, they granted him the subsidy, which he demanded. But so insatiable was his avarice, that next year he levied a new benevolence, and renewed that arbitrary and oppressive method of taxation. By all these arts of accumulation, joined to a rigid frugality in his expence, he so filled his coffers, that he is said to have possessed in ready money the sum of 1,800,000 pounds: A treasure almost incredible, if we consider the scarcity of money in those times [o].

1503.

1504. 25th Jan. A parliament.

1505.

BUT while Henry was enriching himself by the spoils of his oppressed people, there happened an event abroad, which engaged his attention, and was even the object of

[o] Silver was during this reign at 37 shillings and sixpence a pound, which makes Henry's treasure near three millions of our present money. Besides, many commodities have become above thrice as dear by the encrease of gold and silver in Europe. And what is a circumstance of still greater weight, all other states were then very poor, in comparison of what they are at present: These circumstances make Henry's treasure appear very great; and may lead us to conceive the oppressions of his government.

CHAP. XXVI.

1505. his anxiety and concern. Isabella, queen of Castile, died about this time; and it was foreseen, that by this incident the fortunes of Ferdinand, her husband, would be much affected. The king was not only attentive to the fate of his ally, and watchful lest the general system of Europe should be affected by so important an event: He also considered the similarity of his own situation with that of Ferdinand, and regarded the issue of these transactions as a precedent for himself. Joan, the daughter of Ferdinand by Isabella, was married to the archduke Philip, and being, in right of her mother, heir of Castile, seemed entitled to dispute with Ferdinand the present administration of that kingdom. Henry knew, that notwithstanding his own pretensions by the house of Lancaster, the greater part of the nation was convinced of the superiority of his wife's title; and he dreaded lest the prince of Wales, who was daily advancing towards manhood, might be tempted by ambition to lay immediate claim to the crown. By his perpetual attention to depress the partizans of the York family, he had more closely united them into one party, and encreased their desire of shaking off that yoke, under which they had so long laboured, and of taking every advantage, which his oppressive government should give his enemies against him. And as he possessed no independent force like Ferdinand, and governed a kingdom more turbulent and unruly, which he himself, by his narrow politics, had confirmed in factious prejudices; he apprehended that his situation would prove in the issue still more precarious.

NOTHING at first could turn out more contrary to the king's wishes than the transactions in Spain. Ferdinand, as well as Henry, had become very unpopular, and from the same cause, his former exactions and impositions; and the states of Castile discovered an evident resolution of preferring the title of Philip and Joan. In order

order to take advantage of these favourable dispositions, the archduke, now king of Castile, attended by his consort, embarked for Spain during the winter season; but meeting with a violent tempest in the channel, was obliged to take shelter in the harbour of Weymouth. Sir John Trenchard, a gentleman of authority in the county of Dorset, hearing of a fleet upon the coast, had assembled some forces; and being joined by Sir John Cary, who was also at the head of an armed body, he came to that town. Finding, that Philip, in order to relieve his sickness and fatigue, was already come ashore, he invited him to his house; and immediately dispatched a messenger, to inform the court of this important incident. The king sent in all haste the earl of Arundel to compliment Philip on his arrival in England, and to inform him, that he intended to pay him a visit in person, and to give him a suitable reception in his kingdom. Philip knew, that he could not now depart without the king's consent; and therefore, for the sake of dispatch, he resolved to anticipate his visit, and to have an interview with him at Windsor. Henry received him with all the magnificence possible, and with all the seeming cordiality; but he resolved, notwithstanding, to draw some advantage from this involuntary visit, payed him by his royal guest.

1506. Arrival of the king of Castile.

Edmond de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, nephew to Edward IV. and brother to the earl of Lincoln, slain at the battle of Stoke, had some years before killed a man in a sudden fit of passion, and had been obliged to apply to the king for a remission of this crime. The king had granted his request; but being little indulgent to all persons connected with the house of York, he obliged him to appear openly in court and plead his pardon. Suffolk, more resenting the affront than grateful for the favour, had fled into Flanders, and taken shelter with his aunt,

Intrigues of the earl of Suffolk.

CHAP. XXVI. 1506.

the dutchess of Burgundy: But being promised forgiveness by the king, he returned to England, and obtained a new pardon. Actuated, however, by the natural inquietude of his temper, and uneasy from debts which he had contracted by his great expence at prince Arthur's wedding, he again made an elopement into Flanders. The king, well acquainted with the general discontent which prevailed against his administration, neglected not this incident, which might become of importance; and he employed his usual artifices to elude the efforts of his enemies. He directed Sir Robert Curson, governor of the castle of Hammes, to desert his charge, and to insinuate himself into the confidence of Suffolk, by making him a tender of his services. Upon information secretly conveyed by Curson, the king seized William Courtney, earl of Devonshire, married to the lady Catherine, sister of the queen; William de la Pole, brother to the earl of Suffolk; Sir James Tirrel, and Sir James Windham, with some persons of inferior quality; and he committed them to custody. Lord Abergavenny and Sir Thomas Green were also apprehended; but were soon after released from their confinement. William de la Pole was long detained in prison: And the earl of Devonshire recovered not his liberty during the king's life-time. But Henry's chief severity fell upon Sir James Windham, and Sir James Tirrel, who were brought to their trial, condemned, and executed: The fate of the latter gave general satisfaction, on account of his participation in the murder of the young princes, sons to Edward IV. Notwithstanding these discoveries and executions, Curson was still able to maintain his credit with the earl of Suffolk: Henry, in order to remove all suspicion, had ordered him to be excommunicated, together with Suffolk himself, for his pretended rebellion. But after that traitor had performed all the services expected from him, he suddenly deserted the earl,

and

and came over to England, where the king received him with unusual marks of favour and confidence. Suffolk, astonished at this instance of perfidy, finding that even the dutchess of Burgundy, tired with so many fruitless attempts, had become indifferent to his cause, fled secretly into France, thence into Germany, and returned at last into the Low Countries; where he was protected, though not countenanced, by Philip, then in close alliance with the king. CHAP. XXVI. 1506.

HENRY neglected not the present opportunity of complaining to his guest of the reception which Suffolk had met with in his dominions. "I really thought," replied the king of Castile, "that your greatness and felicity "had set you far above apprehensions from any person "of so little consequence: But to give you satisfaction, "I shall banish him my state." "I expect that you "will carry your complaisance farther," said the king; "I desire to have Suffolk put into my hands, where alone "I can depend upon his submission and obedience." "That measure," said Philip, "will reflect dishonour "upon you as well as myself. You will be thought to "have used me as a prisoner." "Then the matter is "at an end," replied the king, "for I will take that "dishonour upon me; and so your honour is saved [p]." The king of Castile found himself under a necessity of complying; but he first exacted Henry's promise that he would spare Suffolk's life. That nobleman was invited over to England by Philip; as if the king would grant him a pardon, on the intercession of his friend and ally. Upon his appearance, he was committed to the Tower; and the king of Castile, having fully satisfied Henry, as well by this concession, as by signing a treaty of commerce between England and Castile, which was advantageous to the former kingdom [q], was at last allowed to depart,

[p] Bacon, p. 633. [q] Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 142.

after

CHAP. XXVI.

after a ſtay of three months. He landed in Spain, was joyfully received by the Caſtilians, and put in poſſeſſion of the throne. He died ſoon after; and Joan, his widow, falling into deep melancholy, Ferdinand was again enabled to re-inſtate himſelf in authority, and to govern, till the day of his death, the whole Spaniſh monarchy.

1507.

THE king ſurvived theſe tranſactions two years; but nothing memorable occurs in the remaining part of his reign, except his affiancing his ſecond daughter Mary to the young archduke Charles, ſon of Philip of Caſtile. He entertained alſo ſome intentions of marriage for himſelf, firſt with the queen-dowager of Naples, relict of Ferdinand; afterwards with the dutcheſs dowager of Savoy, daughter of Maximilian, and ſiſter of Philip. But the decline of his health put an end to all ſuch thoughts; and he began to caſt his eye towards that future exiſtence, which the iniquities and ſeverities of his reign rendered a very diſmal proſpect to him. To allay the terrors, under which he laboured, he endeavoured, by diſtributing alms and founding religious houſes, to make atonement for his crimes, and to purchaſe, by the ſacrifice of part of his ill-gotten treaſures, a reconciliation with his offended Maker. Remorſe even ſeized him at intervals for the abuſe of his authority by Empſon and Dudley; but not ſufficient to make him ſtop the rapacious hand of thoſe oppreſſors. Sir William Capel was again fined two thouſand pounds under ſome frivolous pretence, and was committed to the Tower for daring to murmur againſt that iniquity. Harris, an alderman of London, was indicted, and died of vexation before his trial came to an iſſue. Sir Laurence Ailmer, who had been mayor, and his two ſheriffs, were condemned in heavy fines, and ſent to priſon till they made payment. The king gave countenance to all theſe oppreſſions; till death, by its nearer

1508.

Sickneſs of the king.

approaches, impreſſed new terrors upon him; and he then ordered, by a general clauſe in his will, that reſtitution ſhould be made to all thoſe whom he had injured. He died of a conſumption at his favourite palace of Richmond, after a reign of twenty-three years and eight months, and in the fifty-ſecond year of his age[r]. CHAP. XXVI. 1509. His death, 22d April.

THE reign of Henry VII. was, in the main, fortunate for his people at home, and honourable abroad. He put an end to the civil wars with which the nation had long been haraſſed, he maintained peace and order in the ſtate, he depreſſed the former exorbitant power of the nobility, and, together with the friendſhip of ſome foreign princes, he acquired the conſideration and regard of all. He loved peace without fearing war; though agitated with continual ſuſpicions of his ſervants and miniſters, he diſcovered no timidity either in the conduct of his affairs, or in the day of battle; and though often ſevere in his puniſhments, he was commonly leſs actuated by revenge than by maxims of policy. The ſervices, which he rendered the people, were derived from his views of private advantage, rather than the motives of public ſpirit; and where he deviated from intereſted regards, it was unknown to himſelf, and ever from the malignant prejudices of faction, or the mean projects of avarice; not from the ſallies of paſſion, or allurements of pleaſure; ſtill leſs, from the benign motives of friendſhip and generoſity. His capacity was excellent, but ſomewhat contracted by the narrowneſs of his heart; he poſſeſſed inſinuation and addreſs, but never employed theſe talents, except where ſome great point of intereſt was to be gained; and while he neglected to conciliate the affections of his people, he often felt the danger of reſting his authority on their fear and reverence alone. He was always extremely attentive to his affairs; but poſſeſſed not the faculty of ſeeing far into futurity; and and character.

[r] Dugd. baronage, II. p. 237.

was

CHAP. XXVI. 1509.

was more expert at providing a remedy for his miſtakes than judicious in avoiding them. Avarice was, on the whole, his ruling paſſion [s]; and he remains an inſtance, almoſt ſingular, of a man, placed in a high ſtation, and poſſeſſed of talents for great affairs, in whom that paſſion predominated above ambition. Even among private perſons, avarice is commonly nothing but a ſpecies of ambition, and is chiefly incited by the proſpect of that regard, diſtinction, and conſideration, which attend on riches.

THE power of the kings of England had always been ſomewhat irregular or diſcretionary; but was ſcarcely ever ſo abſolute during any former reign, at leaſt after the eſtabliſhment of the great charter, as during that of Henry. Beſides the advantages, derived from his perſonal character, full of vigour, induſtry, and ſeverity, deliberate in all projects, ſteady in every purpoſe, and attended with caution, as well as good fortune, in every enterprize; he came to the throne after long and bloody civil wars, which had deſtroyed all the great nobility, who alone could reſiſt the encroachments of his authority: The people were tired with diſcord and inteſtine convulſions, and willing to ſubmit to uſurpations, and even to injuries, rather than plunge themſelves anew into like miſeries: The fruitleſs efforts made againſt him ſerved always, as is uſual, to confirm his authority: As he ruled by a faction, and the leſſer faction, all thoſe on whom he conferred offices, ſenſible that they owed every thing to his protection, were content to ſupport his power, though at

[s] As a proof of Henry's attention to the ſmalleſt profits, Bacon tells us, that he had ſeen a book of accompts kept by Empſon, and ſubſcribed in almoſt every leaf by the king's own hand. Among other articles was the following. "*Item*, Received of ſuch a one five marks for a pardon, which, if "it do not paſs, the money to be repayed, or the party otherwiſe ſatisfied." Oppoſite to the memorandum, the king had writ with his own hand, "otherwiſe ſatisfied," Bacon, p. 630.

the

the expence of juſtice and national privileges. Theſe ſeem the chief cauſes which at this time beſtowed on the crown ſo conſiderable an addition of prerogative, and rendered the preſent reign a kind of epoch in the Engliſh conſtitution.

CHAP. XXVI. 1509.

THIS prince, though he exalted his prerogative above law, is celebrated by his hiſtorian for many good laws, which he cauſed to be enacted for the government of his ſubjects. Several conſiderable regulations, indeed, are found among the ſtatutes of this reign, both with regard to the police of the kingdom, and its commerce: But the former are generally contrived with much better judgment than the latter. The more ſimple ideas of order and equity are ſufficient to guide a legiſlator in every thing that regards the internal adminiſtration of juſtice: But the principles of commerce are much more complicated, and require long experience and deep reflection to be well underſtood in any ſtate. The real conſequence of a law or practice is there often contrary to firſt appearances. No wonder, that, during the reign of Henry VII. theſe matters were frequently miſtaken; and it may ſafely be affirmed, that even in the age of lord Bacon, very imperfect and erroneous ideas were formed on that ſubject. His laws.

EARLY in Henry's reign, the authority of the Star Chamber, which was before founded on common law, and ancient practice, was in ſome caſes confirmed by act of parliament[t]: Lord Bacon extols the utility of this court; but men began, even during the age of that hiſtorian, to feel that ſo arbitrary a juriſdiction was incompatible with liberty; and in proportion as the ſpirit of independance ſtill roſe higher in the nation, the averſion to it encreaſed, till it was entirely aboliſhed by act of parliament

[t] See note [N] at the end of the volume.

in

CHAP. XXVI.

in the reign of Charles I. a little before the commencement of the civil wars.

1509. LAWS were passed in this reign, ordaining the king's suit for murder to be carried on within a year and day [u]. Formerly, it did not usually commence till after that term; and as the friends of the person murdered, often, in the interval, compounded matters with the criminal, that crime frequently passed unpunished. Suits were given to the poor *in forma pauperis*, as it is called: That is, without paying dues for the writs, or any fees to the council [w]: A good law at all times, especially in that age, when the people laboured under the oppression of the great; but a law difficult to be carried into execution. A law was made against carrying off any woman by force [x]. The benefit of clergy was abridged [y]; and the criminal, on the first offence, was ordered to be burned in the hand with a letter denoting his crime; after which he was punished capitally for any new offence. This law was much too indulgent, yet was in those days regarded as a violation of the rights of the church. Sheriffs were no longer allowed to fine any person, without previously summoning him before their court [z]. It is strange, that such a practice should ever have prevailed. Attaint of juries was granted in cases which exceeded forty pounds value [a]. A law which has an appearance of equity, but which was afterwards found inconvenient. Actions popular were not allowed to be eluded by fraud or covin. If any servant of the king's conspired against the life of the steward, treasurer, or comptroller of the king's household, this design, though not followed by any overt act, was made liable to the punishment of felony [b]. This statute was enacted for the security of archbishop

[u] 3 H. 7. cap. 1. [w] 11 H. 7. cap. 12. [x] 3 H. 7. cap. 2.
[y] 4 H. 7. cap. 13. [z] 11 H. 7. cap. 15. [a] Ibid. cap. 24.
19 H. 7. cap. 3. [b] 3 H. 7. cap. 13.

Morton,

Morton, who found himſelf expoſed to the enmity of great numbers. CHAP. XXVI. 1509.

THERE ſcarcely paſſed any ſeſſion during this reign without ſome ſtatute againſt engaging retainers, and giving them badges or liveries [c]; a practice, by which they were, in a manner, inliſted under ſome great lord, and were kept in readineſs to aſſiſt him in all wars, inſurrections, riots, violences, and even in bearing evidence for him in courts of juſtice [d]. This diſorder, which had prevailed during many reigns, when the law could give little protection to the ſubject, was then deeply rooted in England; and it required all the vigilance and rigour of Henry to extirpate it. There is a ſtory of his ſeverity againſt that abuſe; and it ſeems to merit praiſe, though it is commonly cited as an inſtance of his avarice and rapacity. The earl of Oxford, his favourite general, in whom he always placed great and deſerved confidence, having ſplendidly entertained him at his caſtle of Heningham, was deſirous of making a parade of his magnificence at the departure of his royal gueſt; and ordered all his retainers, with their liveries and badges, to be drawn up in two lines, that their appearance might be the more gallant and ſplendid. "My lord," ſaid the king, "I have heard much of your hoſpitality; but "the truth far exceeds the report. Theſe handſome "gentlemen and yeomen, whom I ſee on both ſides of "me, are, no doubt, your menial ſervants." The earl ſmiled, and confeſſed that his fortune was too narrow for ſuch magnificence. "They are moſt of them," ſubjoined he, "my retainers, who are come to do me "ſervice at this time, when they know I am honoured "with your majeſty's preſence." The king ſtarted a little, and ſaid, "By my faith, my lord, I thank you

[c] 3 H. 7. cap. 1. & 12. 11 H. 7. cap. 3. 19 H. 7. cap. 14.
[d] 3 H. 7. cap. 12. 11 H. 7. cap. 25.

"for

CHAP. XXVI. 1509.

"for your good cheer, but I must not allow my laws to "be broken in my sight. My attorney must speak with "you." Oxford is said to have payed no less than fifteen thousand marks, as a composition for his offence.

THE encrease of the arts, more effectually than all the severities of law, put an end to this pernicious practice. The nobility, instead of vying with each other, in the number and boldness of their retainers, acquired by degrees a more civilized species of emulation, and endeavoured to excel in the splendour and elegance of their equipage, houses, and tables. The common people, no longer maintained in vicious idleness by their superiors, were obliged to learn some calling or industry, and became useful both to themselves and to others. And it must be acknowledged, in spite of those who declaim so violently against refinement in the arts, or what they are pleased to call luxury, that, as much as an industrious tradesman is both a better man and a better citizen than one of those idle retainers, who formerly depended on the great families; so much is the life of a modern nobleman more laudable than that of an ancient baron [e].

BUT the most important law in its consequences, which was enacted during the reign of Henry, was that by which the nobility and gentry acquired a power of breaking the ancient entails, and of alienating their estates [f]. By means of this law, joined to the beginning luxury and refinements of the age, the great fortunes of the barons were gradually dissipated, and the property of the commons encreased in England. It is probable, that Henry foresaw and intended this consequence; because

e See note [O] at the end of the volume.

f 4 H. 7. cap. 24. The practice of breaking entails by means of a fine and recovery was introduced in the reign of Edward the IVth: But it was not, properly speaking, law, till the statute of Henry the VIIth; which, by correcting some abuses that attended that practice, gave indirectly a sanction to it.

the

the conſtant ſcheme of his policy conſiſted in depreſſing the great, and exalting churchmen, lawyers, and men of new families, who were more dependant on him. CHAP. XXVI. 1509.

THIS king's love of money naturally led him to encourage commerce, which encreaſed his cuſtoms; but, if we may judge by moſt of the laws enacted during his reign, trade and induſtry were rather hurt than promoted by the care and attention given to them. Severe laws were made againſt taking intereſt for money, which was then denominated uſury [g]. Even the profits of exchange were prohibited, as ſavouring of uſury [h]; which the ſuperſtition of that age zealouſly proſcribed. All evaſive contracts, by which profits could be made from the loan of money, were alſo carefully guarded againſt [i]. It is needleſs to obſerve how unreaſonable and iniquitous theſe laws, how impoſſible to be executed, and how hurtful to trade, if they could take place. We may obſerve, however, to the praiſe of this king, that ſometimes, in order to promote commerce, he lent to merchants ſums of money, without intereſt; when he knew, that their ſtock was not ſufficient for thoſe enterprizes, which they had in view [k].

LAWS were made againſt the exportation of money, plate, or bullion [l]: A precaution, which ſerves to no other purpoſe than to make more be exported. But ſo far was the anxiety on this head carried, that merchants alien, who imported commodities into the kingdom, were obliged to inveſt, in Engliſh commodities, all the money acquired by their ſales, in order to prevent their conveying it away in a clandeſtine manner [m].

IT was prohibited to export horſes; as if that exportation did not encourage the breed, and render them more plentiful in the kingdom [n]. In order to promote archery,

g 3 H. 7. cap. 5. h Ibid. cap. 6. i 7 H. 7. cap. 8.
k Polyd. Virg. l 4 H. 7. cap. 23. m 3 H. 7. cap. 8.
n 11 H. 7. cap. 13.

CHAP. XXVI. 1509.

no bows were to be ſold at a higher price than ſix ſhillings and four-pence [o], reducing money to the denomination of our time. The only effect of this regulation muſt be either that the people would be ſupplied with bad bows or none at all. Prices were alſo affixed to woollen cloth [p], to caps and hats [q]: And the wages of labourers were regulated by law [r]. It is evident, that theſe matters ought always to be left free, and be entruſted to the common courſe of buſineſs and commerce. To ſome it may appear ſurpriſing, that the price of a yard of ſcarlet cloth ſhould be limited to ſix and twenty ſhillings, money of our age; that of a yard of coloured cloth to eighteen; higher prices than theſe commodities bear at preſent: And that the wages of a tradeſman, ſuch as a maſon, bricklayer, tyler, &c. ſhould be regulated at near ten-pence a-day; which is not much inferior to the preſent wages given in ſome parts of England. Labour and commodities have certainly riſen ſince the diſcovery of the Weſt-Indies; but not ſo much in every particular as is generally imagined. The greater induſtry of the preſent times has encreaſed the number of tradeſmen and labourers, ſo as to keep wages nearer a par than could be expected from the great encreaſe of gold and ſilver. And the additional art, employed in the finer manufactures, has even made ſome of theſe commodities fall below their former value. Not to mention, that merchants and dealers, being contented with leſs profit than formerly, afford the goods cheaper to their cuſtomers. It appears by a ſtatute of this reign [s], that goods bought for ſixteen-pence would ſometimes be ſold by the merchants for three ſhillings. The commodities, whoſe price has chiefly riſen, are butcher's meat, fowl, and fiſh, (eſpecially the latter) which cannot be much augmented in quantity by

[o] 3 H. 7. cap. 12. [p] 4 H. 7. cap. 8. [q] Ibid. cap. 9.
[r] 11 H. 7. cap. 22. [s] 4 H. 7. cap. 9.

the

CHAP. XXVI. 1509.

the encreaſe of art and induſtry. The profeſſion, which then abounded moſt, and was embraced by perſons of the loweſt rank, was the church: By a clauſe of a ſtatute, all clerks or ſtudents of the univerſity were forbid to beg, without a permiſſion from the vice-chancellor [t].

One great cauſe of the low ſtate of induſtry during this period, was the reſtraints put upon it; and the parliament, or rather the king, (for he was the prime mover in every thing) enlarged a little ſome of theſe limitations; but not to the degree that was requiſite. A law had been enacted during the reign of Henry IV [u], that no man could bind his ſon or daughter to an apprenticeſhip, unleſs he was poſſeſſed of twenty ſhillings a-year in land; and Henry VII. becauſe the decay of manufactures was complained of in Norwich from the want of hands, exempted that city from the penalties of this law [w]. Afterwards, the whole county of Norfolk obtained a like exemption with regard to ſome branches of the woollen manufacture [x]. Theſe abſurd limitations proceeded from a deſire of promoting huſbandry, which however is never more effectually encouraged than by the encreaſe of manufactures. For a like reaſon, the law enacted againſt incloſures, and for the keeping up of farm houſes [y], ſcarcely deſerves the high praiſes beſtowed on it by lord Bacon. If huſbandmen underſtand agriculture, and have a ready vent for their commodities, we need not dread a diminution of the people, employed in the country. All methods of ſupporting populouſneſs, except by the intereſt of the proprietors, are violent and ineffectual. During a century and a half after this period, there was a frequent renewal of laws and edicts againſt depopulation; whence we may infer, that none of them were ever

[t] 11 H. 7. cap. 22. [u] 7 H. 7. cap. 17. [w] 11 H. 7. cap. 11. [x] 12 H. 7. cap. 1. [y] 4 H. 7. cap. 19.

CHAP. XXVI.

executed. The natural courſe of improvement at laſt provided a remedy.

1509. ONE check to induſtry in England was the erecting of corporations; an abuſe which is not yet entirely corrected. A law was enacted, that corporations ſhould not paſs any by-laws without the conſent of three of the chief officers of ſtate [z]. They were prohibited from impoſing tolls at their gates [a]. The cities of Gloceſter and Worceſter had even impoſed tolls on the Severne, which were aboliſhed [b].

THERE is a law of this reign [c], containing a preamble, by which it appears, that the company of merchant adventurers in London had, by their own authority, debarred all the other merchants of the kingdom, from trading to the great marts in the Low Countries, unleſs each trader previouſly payed them the ſum of near ſeventy pounds. It is ſurpriſing that ſuch a by-law (if it deſerve that name) could ever be carried into execution, and that the authority of parliament ſhould be requiſite to abrogate it.

IT was during this reign, on the ſecond of Auguſt 1492, a little before ſun-ſet, that Chriſtopher Columbus, a Genoeſe, ſet out from Cadiz on his memorable voyage for the diſcovery of the weſtern world; and a few years after, Vaſquez de Gama, a Portugueſe, paſſed the Cape of Good Hope, and opened a new paſſage to the Eaſt Indies. Theſe great events were attended with important conſequences to all the nations of Europe, even to ſuch as were not immediately concerned in thoſe naval enterprizes. The enlargement of commerce and navigation encreaſed induſtry and the arts every where: The nobles diſſipated their fortunes in expenſive pleaſures:

[z] 19 H. 7. cap. 7. [a] Ibid. cap. 8. [b] Ibid. cap. 18.
[c] 12 H. 7. cap. 6.

Men

CHAP. XXVI.

1509.

Men of an inferior rank both acquired a ſhare in the landed property, and created to themſelves a conſiderable property of a new kind, in ſtock, commodities, art, credit, and correſpondence. In ſome nations the privileges of the commons encreaſed, by this encreaſe of property: In moſt nations, the kings, finding arms to be dropped by the barons, who could no longer endure their former rude manner of life, eſtabliſhed ſtanding armies, and ſubdued the liberties of their kingdoms: But in all places, the condition of the people, from the depreſſion of the petty tyrants, by whom they had formerly been oppreſſed, rather than governed, received great improvement, and they acquired, if not entire liberty, at leaſt the moſt conſiderable advantages of it. And as the general courſe of events thus tended to depreſs the nobles and exalt the people, Henry VII. who alſo embraced that ſyſtem of policy, has acquired more praiſe, than his inſtitutions, ſtrictly ſpeaking, ſeem of themſelves to deſerve, on account of any profound wiſdom attending them.

It was by accident only, that the king had not a conſiderable ſhare in thoſe great naval diſcoveries, by which the preſent age was ſo much diſtinguiſhed. Columbus, after meeting with many repulſes from the courts of Portugal and Spain, ſent his brother, Bartholomew, to London, in order to explain his projects to Henry, and crave his protection for the execution of them. The king invited him over to England; but his brother, being taken by pyrates, was detained in his voyage; and Columbus, meanwhile, having obtained the countenance of Iſabella, was ſupplied with a ſmall fleet, and happily executed his enterprize. Henry was not diſcouraged by this diſappointment: He fitted out Sebaſtian Cabot, a Venetian, ſettled in Briſtol; and ſent him weſtwards in 1498, in ſearch of new countries. Cabot diſcovered the main land

CHAP. XXVI.

of America towards the ſixtieth degree of northern latitude: He ſailed ſouthwards along the coaſt, and diſcovered Newfoundland, and other countries: But returned to England, without making any conqueſt or ſettlement. Elliot and other merchants in Briſtol made a like attempt in 1502 [d]. The king expended fourteen thouſand pounds in building one ſhip called the *Great Harry* [e]. This was, properly ſpeaking, the firſt ſhip in the Engliſh navy. Before this period, when the prince wanted a fleet, he had no other expedient than hiring or preſſing ſhips from the merchants.

1509.

BUT though this improvement of navigation, and the diſcovery of both the Indies, was the moſt memorable incident that happened during this or any other period, it was not the only great event, by which the age was diſtinguiſhed. In 1453, Conſtantinople was taken by the Turks; and the Greeks, among whom ſome remains of learning were ſtill preſerved, being ſcattered by theſe barbarians, took ſhelter in Italy, and imported, together with their admirable language, a tincture of their ſcience and of their refined taſte in poetry and eloquence. About the ſame time, the purity of the Latin tongue was revived, the ſtudy of antiquity became faſhionable, and the eſteem for literature gradually propagated itſelf throughout every nation in Europe. The art of printing, invented about that time, extremely facilitated the progreſs of all theſe improvements: The invention of gunpowder changed the whole art of war: Mighty innovations were ſoon after made in religion, ſuch as not only affected thoſe ſtates that embraced them, but even thoſe that adhered to the ancient faith and worſhip: And thus a general revolution was made in human affairs throughout this part of the world; and men gradually attained that ſituation, with regard to commerce, arts, ſcience, government,

[d] Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 37. [e] Stowe, p. 484.

police,

police, and cultivation, in which they have ever since perſevered. Here therefore commences the uſeful, as well as the moſt agreeable part of modern annals; certainty has place in all the conſiderable, and even moſt of the minute parts of hiſtorical narration; a great variety of events, preſerved by printing, give the author the power of ſelecting, as well as adorning, the facts, which he relates; and as each incident has a reference to our preſent manners and ſituation, inſtructive leſſons occur every moment during the courſe of the narration. Whoever carries his anxious reſearches into preceding periods is moved by a curioſity, liberal indeed and commendable; not by any neceſſity for acquiring knowledge of public affairs, or the arts of civil government.

CHAP. XXVI. 1509.

CHAP. XXVII.

HENRY VIII.

Popularity of the new king —— His miniſters —— Puniſhment of Empſon and Dudley —— King's marriage —— Foreign affairs —— Julius II. —— *League of Cambray —— War with France —— Expedition to Fontarabia —— Deceit of Ferdinand —— Return of the Engliſh —— Leo* X. —— *A parliament —— War with Scotland —— Wolſey miniſter —— His character —— Invaſion of France —— Battle of Guinegate —— Battle of Flouden —— Peace with France.*

CHAP. XXVII.

1509.

THE death of Henry VII. had been attended with as open and viſible a joy among the people as decency would permit; and the acceſſion and coronation of his ſon, Henry VIII. ſpread univerſally a declared and unfeigned ſatisfaction. Inſtead of a monarch, jealous, ſevere, and avaricious, who, in proportion as he advanced in years, was ſinking ſtill deeper in thoſe unpopular vices; a young prince of eighteen had ſucceeded to the throne, who, even in the eyes of men of ſenſe, gave promiſing hopes of his future conduct, much more in thoſe of the people, always enchanted with novelty, youth, and royal dignity. The beauty and vigour of his perſon, accompanied with dexterity in every manly exerciſe, was farther adorned with a blooming and ruddy countenance, with a lively air, with the appearance of ſpirit and activity in all his demeanour [f]. His father,

Popularity of the new king.

[f] T. Mori. Lucubr. p. 182.

in

in order to remove him from the knowledge of public business, had hitherto occupied him entirely in the pursuits of literature; and the proficiency, which he made, gave no bad prognostic of his parts and capacity [g]. Even the vices of vehemence, ardour, and impatience, to which he was subject, and which afterwards degenerated into tyranny, were considered only as faults, incident to unguarded youth, which would be corrected, when time had brought him to greater moderation and maturity. And as the contending titles of York and Lancaster were now at last fully united in his person, men justly expected from a prince, obnoxious to no party, that impartiality of administration, which had long been unknown in England. CHAP. XXVII. 1509.

THESE favourable prepossessions of the public were encouraged by the measures which Henry embraced in the commencement of his reign. His grandmother, the countess of Richmond and Derby, was still alive; and as she was a woman much celebrated for prudence and virtue, he wisely shewed great deference to her opinion in the establishment of his new council. The members were Warham, archbishop of Canterbury, and chancellor; the earl of Shrewsbury, steward; lord Herbert, chamberlain; Sir Thomas Lovel, master of the wards and constable of the Tower; Sir Edward Poynings, comptroller; Sir Henry Marney, afterwards lord Marney; Sir Thomas Darcy, afterwards lord Darcy; Thomas Ruthal, doctor of laws; and Sir Henry Wyat [h]. These men had long been accustomed to business under the late king, and were the least unpopular of all the ministers employed by that monarch. His ministers.

BUT the chief competitors for favour and authority under the new king, were the earl of Surrey, treasurer,

[g] Father Paul, lib. 1. P. 799.

[h] Herbert, Stowe, p. 486. Hollingshed,

and

CHAP. XXVII. 1509.

and Fox, bishop of Winchester, secretary and privy seal. This prelate, who enjoyed great credit during all the former reign, had acquired such habits of caution and frugality as he could not easily lay aside; and he still opposed, by his remonstrances, those schemes of dissipation and expence, which the youth and passions of Henry rendered agreeable to him. But Surrey was a more dexterous courtier; and though few had borne a greater share in the frugal politics of the late king, he knew how to conform himself to the humour of his new master; and no one was so forward in promoting that liberality, pleasure, and magnificence, which began to prevail under the young monarch [i]. By this policy he ingratiated himself with Henry; he made advantage, as well as the other courtiers, of the lavish disposition of his master; and he engaged him in such a course of play and idleness as rendered him negligent of affairs, and willing to entrust the government of the state entirely into the hands of his ministers. The great treasures amassed by the late king, were gradually dissipated in the giddy expences of Henry. One party of pleasure succeeded to another: Tilts, tournaments and carousals were exhibited with all the magnificence of that age: And as the present tranquillity of the public permitted the court to indulge itself in every amusement, serious business was but little attended to. Or if the king intermitted the course of his festivity, he chiefly employed himself in an application to music and literature, which were his favourite pursuits, and which were well adapted to his genius. He had made such proficiency in the former art, as even to compose some pieces of church-music which were sung in his chapel [k]. He was initiated in the elegant learning of the ancients. And though he was so unfortunate as to be seduced into a study of the

[i] Lord Herbert. [k] Ibid.

barren

CHAP. XXVII. 1509.

barren controverſies of the ſchools, which were then faſhionable, and had choſen Thomas Aquinas for his favourite author, he ſtill diſcovered a capacity fitted for more uſeful and entertaining knowledge.

THE frank and careleſs humour of the king, as it led him to diſſipate the treaſures, amaſſed by his father, rendered him negligent in protecting the inſtruments whom that prince had employed in his extortions. A proclamation being iſſued to encourage complaints, the rage of the people was let looſe on all informers, who had ſo long exerciſed an unbounded tyranny over the nation[1]: They were thrown into priſon, condemned to the pillory, and moſt of them loſt their lives by the violence of the populace. Empſon and Dudley, who were moſt expoſed to public hatred, were immediately ſummoned before the council, in order to anſwer for their conduct, which had rendered them ſo obnoxious. Empſon made a ſhrewd apology for himſelf, as well as for his aſſociate. He told the council, that, ſo far from his being juſtly expoſed to cenſure for his paſt conduct, his enemies themſelves grounded their clamour on actions, which ſeemed rather to merit reward and approbation: That a ſtrict execution of law was the crime, of which he and Dudley were accuſed; though that law had been eſtabliſhed by general conſent, and though they had acted in obedience to the king, to whom the adminiſtration of juſtice was entruſted by the conſtitution: That it belonged not to them, who were inſtruments in the hands of ſupreme power, to determine what laws were recent or obſolete, expedient or hurtful; ſince they were all alike valid, ſo long as they remained unrepealed by the legiſlature: That it was natural for a licentious populace to murmur againſt the reſtraints of authority; but all wiſe ſtates had ever made their glory conſiſt in the juſt diſtribution of rewards

Puniſhment of Empſon and Dudley.

[1] Herbert, Stowe, p. 486. Hollingſhed, p. 799. Polyd. Virg. lib. 27.

and

CHAP. XXVII.

1509.

and punishments, and had annexed the former to the observance and enforcement of the laws, the latter to their violation and infraction: And that a sudden overthrow of all government might be expected, where the judges were committed to the mercy of the criminals, the rulers to that of the subjects [m].

NOTWITHSTANDING this defence, Empson and Dudley were sent to the Tower; and soon after brought to their trial. The strict execution of laws, however obsolete, could never be imputed to them as a crime in a court of judicature; and it is likely, that, even where they had exercised arbitrary power, the king, as they had acted by the secret commands of his father, was not willing that their conduct should undergo too severe a scrutiny. In order, therefore, to gratify the people with the punishment of these obnoxious ministers, crimes very improbable, or indeed absolutely impossible, were charged upon them; that they had entered into a conspiracy against the sovereign, and had intended, on the death of the late king, to have seized by force the administration of government. The jury were so far moved by popular prejudices, joined to court influence, as to give a verdict against them; which was afterwards confirmed by a bill of attainder in parliament [n], and, at the earnest desire of the people, was executed by warrant from the king. Thus, in those arbitrary times, justice was equally violated, whether the king sought power and riches, or courted popularity.

[m] Herbert, Hollingshed, p. 804.

[n] This parliament met on the 21st January, 1510. A law was there enacted, in order to prevent some abuses which had prevailed during the late reign. The forfeiture upon the penal statutes was reduced to the term of three years. Costs and damages were given against informers upon acquittal of the accused: More severe punishments were enacted against perjury: The false inquisitions procured by Empson and Dudley, were declared null and invalid. Traverses were allowed; and the time of tendering them enlarged. 1 H. 8. c. 8, 10, 11, 12.

HENRY,

CHAP. XXVII.

HENRY, while he punished the instruments of past tyranny, had yet such deference to former engagements as to deliberate, immediately after his accession, concerning the celebration of his marriage with the infanta Catherine, to whom he had been affianced during his father's lifetime. Her former marriage with his brother, and the inequality of their years, were the chief objections, urged against his espousing her: But on the other hand, the advantages of her known virtue, modesty, and sweetness of disposition were insisted on; the affection which she bore to the king; the large dowry to which she was entitled as princess of Wales; the interest of cementing a close alliance with Spain; the necessity of finding some confederate to counterbalance the power of France; the expediency of fulfilling the engagements of the late king. When these considerations were weighed, they determined the council, though contrary to the opinion of the primate, to give Henry their advice for celebrating the marriage; which was done accordingly. The countess of Richmond, who had concurred in the same sentiments with the council, died soon after the marriage of her grandson.

1509. King's marriage. 3d June.

THE popularity of Henry's government, his undisputed title to the throne, his extensive authority, his large treasures, the tranquillity of his subjects, were circumstances which rendered his domestic administration easy and prosperous: The situation of foreign affairs was no less happy and desirable. Italy continued still, as during the last reign, to be the center of all the wars and negociations of the European princes; and Henry's alliance was courted by all parties; at the same time, that he was not engaged by any immediate interest or necessity to take part with any. Lewis XII. of France, after his conquest of Milan, was the only great prince

1510. Foreign affairs.

CHAP. XXVII.

1510.

that poſſeſſed any territory in Italy; and could he have remained in tranquillity, he was enabled by his ſituation to preſcribe laws to all the Italian princes and republics, and to hold the balance among them. But the deſire of making a conqueſt of Naples, to which he had the ſame title or pretenſions with his predeceſſor, ſtill engaged him in new enterprizes; and as he foreſaw oppoſition from Ferdinand, who was connected both by treaties and affinity with Frederic of Naples, he endeavoured, by the offers of intereſt, to which the ears of that monarch were ever open, to engage him in an oppoſite confederacy. He ſettled with him a plan for the partition of the kingdom of Naples and the expulſion of Frederic: A plan, which the politicians of that age regarded as the moſt egregious imprudence in the French monarch, and the greateſt perfidy in the Spaniſh. Frederic, ſupported only by ſubjects, who were either diſcontented with his government, or indifferent about his fortunes, was unable to reſiſt ſo powerful a confederacy, and was deprived of his dominions: But he had the ſatisfaction to ſee Naples immediately prove the ſource of contention among his enemies. Ferdinand gave ſecret orders to his general, Gonſalvo, whom the Spaniards honour with the appellation of the *great captain*, to attack the armies of France, and make himſelf maſter of all the dominions of Naples. Gonſalvo prevailed in every enterprize, defeated the French in two pitched battles, and enſured to his prince the entire poſſeſſion of that kingdom. Lewis, unable to procure redreſs by force of arms, was obliged to enter into a fruitleſs negociation with Ferdinand for the recovery of his ſhare of the partition; and all Italy, during ſome time, was held in ſuſpence between theſe two powerful monarchs.

THERE ſcarcely has been any period, when the balance of power was better ſecured in Europe, and ſeemed

1510.

more able to maintain itself, without any anxious concern or attention of the princes. Several great monarchies were established; and no one so far surpassed the rest as to give any foundation, or even pretence, for jealousy. England was united in domestic peace, and by its situation happily secured from the invasion of foreigners. The coalition of the several kingdoms of Spain had formed one powerful monarchy, which Ferdinand administered with arts, fraudulent indeed and deceitful, but full of vigour and ability. Lewis XII. a gallant and generous prince, had, by espousing Anne of Britanny, widow to his predecessor, preserved the union with that principality, on which the safety of his kingdom so much depended. Maximilian, the emperor, besides the hereditary dominions of the Austrian family, maintained authority in the empire, and notwithstanding the levity of his character, was able to unite the German princes in any great plan of interest, at least of defence. Charles, prince of Castile, grandson to Maximilian and Ferdinand, had already succeeded to the rich dominions of the house of Burgundy; and being as yet in early youth, the government was entrusted to Margaret of Savoy, his aunt, a princess endowed with signal prudence and virtue. The internal force of these several powerful states, by balancing each other, might long have maintained general tranquillity, had not the active and enterprising genius of Julius II. an ambitious pontiff, first excited the flames of war and discord among them. By his intrigues, a league had been formed at Cambray [o], between himself, Maximilian, Lewis, and Ferdinand; and the object of this great confederacy was to overwhelm, by their united arms, the commonwealth of Venice. Henry, without any motive from interest or passion, allowed his name to be inserted in the confederacy. This

Julius II.

League of Cambray.

[o] In 1508.

oppressive

CHAP. XXVII.

oppreſſive and iniquitous league was but too ſucceſsful againſt the republic.

1510. THE great force and ſecure ſituation of the conſiderable monarchies prevented any one of them from aſpiring to any conqueſt of moment; and though this conſideration could not maintain general peace, or remedy the natural inquietude of men, it rendered the princes of this age more diſpoſed to deſert engagements and change their alliances, in which they were retained by humour and caprice, rather than by any natural or durable intereſt. Julius had no ſooner humbled the Venetian republic, than he was inſpired with a nobler ambition, that of expelling all foreigners from Italy, or, to ſpeak in the ſtile affected by the Italians of that age, the freeing of that country entirely from the dominion of Barbarians [p]. He was determined to make the tempeſt fall firſt upon Lewis; and in order to pave the way for this great enterprize, he at once ſought for a ground of quarrel with that monarch, and courted the alliance of other princes. He declared war againſt the duke of Ferrara, the confederate of Lewis. He ſolicited the favour of England, by ſending Henry a ſacred roſe, perfumed with muſk and anointed with chriſm [q]. He engaged in his intereſts Bambridge, archbiſhop of York, and Henry's ambaſſador at Rome, whom he ſoon after created cardinal. He drew over Ferdinand to his party, though that monarch, at firſt, made no declaration of his intentions. And what he chiefly valued, he formed a treaty with the Swiſs cantons, who, enraged by ſome neglects put upon them by Lewis, accompanied with contumelious expreſſions, had quitted the alliance of France, and waited for an opportunity of revenging themſelves on that nation.

1511. WHILE the French monarch repelled the attacks of his enemies, he thought it alſo requiſite to make an at-

[p] Guicciard. lib. 8. [q] Spelman, Concil. vol. ii. p. 725.

tempt

tempt on the pope himself, and to despoil him, as much as possible, of that sacred character, which chiefly rendered him formidable. He engaged some cardinals, disgusted with the violence of Julius, to desert him; and by their authority, he was determined, in conjunction with Maximilian, who still adhered to his alliance, to call a general council, which might reform the church, and check the exorbitancies of the Roman pontiff. A council was summoned at Pisa, which from the beginning bore a very inauspicious aspect, and promised little success to its adherents. Except a few French bishops, who unwillingly obeyed their king's commands in attending the council, all the other prelates kept at a distance from an assembly, which they regarded as the offspring of faction, intrigue, and worldly politics. Even Pisa, the place of their residence, showed them signs of contempt; which engaged them to transfer their session to Milan, a town under the dominion of the French monarch. Notwithstanding this advantage, they did not experience much more respectful treatment from the inhabitants of Milan; and found it necessary to make another remove to Lyons [q]. Lewis himself fortified these violent prejudices in favour of papal authority, by the symptoms, which he discovered, of regard, deference, and submission to Julius, whom he always spared, even when fortune had thrown into his hands the most inviting opportunities of humbling him. And as it was known, that his consort, who had great influence over him, was extremely disquieted in mind, on account of his dissensions with the holy father, all men prognosticated to Julius final success in this unequal contest.

CHAP. XXVII. 1511.

THAT enterprizing pontiff knew his advantages, and availed himself of them with the utmost temerity and insolence. So much had he neglected his sacerdotal cha-

[q] Guicciardini, lib. 10.

CHAP. XXVII.

racter, that he acted in person at the siege of Mirandola, visited the trenches, saw some of his attendants killed by his side, and, like a young soldier, cheerfully bore all the rigours of winter and a severe season, in pursuit of military glory [r]: Yet was he still able to throw, even on his most moderate opponents, the charge of impiety and prophaneness. He summoned a council at the Lateran: He put Pisa under an interdict, and all the places which gave shelter to the schismatical council: He excommunicated the cardinals and prelates who attended it: He even pointed his spiritual thunder against the princes who adhered to it: He freed their subjects from all oaths of allegiance, and gave their dominions to every one, who could take possession of them.

1511.

FERDINAND of Arragon, who had acquired the surname of Catholic, regarded the cause of the pope and of religion only as a cover to his ambition and selfish politics: Henry, naturally sincere and sanguine in his temper, and the more so on account of his youth and inexperience, was moved with a hearty desire of protecting the pope from that oppression, to which he believed him exposed from the ambitious enterprizes of Lewis. Hopes had been given him by Julius, that the title of the *most Christian King*, which had hitherto been annexed to the crown of France, and which was regarded as its most precious ornament, should, in reward of his services, be transferred to that of England [s]. Impatient also of acquiring that distinction in Europe, to which his power and opulence entitled him, he could not long remain neuter amidst the noise of arms; and the natural enmity of the English against France, as well as their ancient claims upon that kingdom, led Henry to join that alliance, which the pope, Spain, and Venice had formed

1512.

[r] Guicciardini, lib. 9. [s] Guicciard. lib. 11. P. Daniel, vol. ii. p. 1893. Herbert. Hollingshed, p. 831.

against

against the French monarch. A herald was sent to Paris, to exhort Lewis not to wage impious war against the sovereign pontiff; and when he returned without success, another was sent to make a demand of the ancient patrimonial provinces, Anjou, Maine, Guienne, and Normandy. This message was understood to be a declaration of war; and a parliament, being summoned, readily granted supplies for a purpose so much favoured by the English nation [t].

CHAP. XXVII. 1512.

War with France. 4th Feb.

BUONAVISO, an agent of the pope at London, had been corrupted by the court of France, and had previously revealed to Lewis all the measures, which Henry was concerting against him. But this infidelity did the king inconsiderable prejudice, in comparison of the treachery, which he experienced from the selfish purposes of the ally, on whom he chiefly relyed for assistance. Ferdinand, his father-in-law, had so long persevered in a course of crooked politics, that he began even to value himself on his dexterity in fraud and artifice; and he made a boast of those shameful successes. Being told one day, that Lewis, a prince of a very different character, had complained of his having once cheated him: "He lies, the drunkard!" said he, "I have cheated him above twenty times." This prince considered his close connexions with Henry, only as the means which enabled him the better to take advantage of his want of experience. He advised him not to invade France by the way of Calais, where he himself should not have it in his power to assist him: He exhorted him rather to send forces to Fontarabia, whence he could easily make a conquest of Guienne, a province, in which, it was imagined, the English had still some adherents. He promised to assist this conquest by the junction of a Spanish army. And so forward did he seem to promote the interests of his son-in-law, that he even sent

Expedition to Fontarabia.

[t] Herbert. Hollingshed, p. 811.

CHAP. XXVII. 1512.

veſſels to England, in order to tranſport over the forces which Henry had levied for that purpoſe. The marquis of Dorſet commanded this armament, which conſiſted of ten thouſand men, moſtly infantry; lord Howard, ſon of the earl of Surrey, lord Broke, lord Ferrars, and many others of the young gentry and nobility, accompanied him in this ſervice. All were on fire to diſtinguiſh themſelves by military atchievements, and to make a conqueſt of importance for their maſter. The ſecret purpoſe of Ferdinand in this unexampled generoſity was ſuſpected by no body.

THE ſmall kingdom of Navarre lies on the frontiers between France and Spain; and as John d'Albret, the ſovereign, was connected by friendſhip and alliance with Lewis, the opportunity ſeemed favourable to Ferdinand, while the Engliſh forces were conjoined with his own, and while all adherents to the council of Piſa lay under the ſentence of excommunication, to put himſelf in poſſeſſion of theſe dominions. No ſooner, therefore, was Dorſet landed in Guipiſcoa, than the Spaniſh monarch declared his readineſs to join him with his forces, to make jointly an invaſion of France, and to form the ſiege of Bayonne, which opened the way into Guienne[u]: But he remarked to the Engliſh general how dangerous it might prove to leave behind them the kingdom of Navarre, which, being in cloſe alliance with France, could eaſily give admittance to the enemy, and cut off all communication between Spain and the combined armies. To provide againſt ſo dangerous an event, he required, that John ſhould ſtipulate a neutrality in the preſent war; and when that prince expreſſed his willingneſs to enter into any engagement for that purpoſe, he alſo required that ſecurity ſhould be given for the ſtrict obſervance of it. John having likewiſe agreed to this condition, Ferdinand

[u] Herbert. Hollingſhed, p. 813.

demanded,

demanded, that he ſhould deliver into his hands ſix of the moſt conſiderable places of his dominions, together with his eldeſt ſon as a hoſtage. Theſe were not terms to be propoſed to a ſovereign; and as the Spaniſh monarch expected a refuſal, he gave immediate orders to the duke of Alva, his general, to make an invaſion on Navarre, and to reduce that kingdom to ſubjection. Alva ſoon made himſelf maſter of all the ſmaller towns; and being ready to form the ſiege of Pampeluna, the capital, he ſummoned the marquis of Dorſet to join him with the Engliſh army, and concert together all their operations. CHAP. XXVII. 1512.

DORSET began to ſuſpect, that the intereſts of his maſter were very little regarded in all theſe tranſactions; and having no orders to invade the kingdom of Navarre, or make war any where but in France, he refuſed to take any part in that enterprize. He remained therefore in his quarters at Fontarabia; but ſo ſubtle was the contrivance of Ferdinand, that, even while the Engliſh army lay in that ſituation, it was almoſt equally ſerviceable to his purpoſe, as if it had acted in conjunction with his own. It kept the French army in awe, and prevented it from advancing to ſuccour the kingdom of Navarre; ſo that Alva, having full leiſure to conduct the ſiege, made himſelf maſter of Pampeluna, and obliged John to ſeek for ſhelter in France. The Spaniſh general applied again to Dorſet, and propoſed to conduct with united counſels the operations of the *holy league*, ſo it was called, againſt Lewis: But as he ſtill declined forming the ſiege of Bayonne, and rather inſiſted on the invaſion of the principality of Beárne, a part of the king of Navarre's dominions, which lies on the French ſide of the Pyrenees, Dorſet, juſtly ſuſpicious of his ſiniſter intentions, repreſented, that, without new orders from his maſter, he could not concur in ſuch an undertaking. In order to procure theſe orders, Ferdinand diſpatched Martin de Deceit of Ferdinand.

CHAP. XXVII.

1512.

Ampios to London; and perſuaded Henry, that, by the refractory and ſcrupulous humour of the Engliſh general, the moſt favourable opportunities were loſt, and that it was neceſſary he ſhould, on all occaſions, act in concert with the Spaniſh commander, who was beſt acquainted with the ſituation of the country, and the reaſons of every operation. But before orders to this purpoſe reached Spain, Dorſet had become extremely impatient; and obſerving that his farther ſtay ſerved not to promote the main undertaking, and that his army was daily periſhing by want and ſickneſs, he demanded ſhipping from Ferdinand to tranſport them back to England. Ferdinand, who was bound by treaty to furniſh him with this ſupply, whenever demanded, was at laſt, after many delays, obliged to yield to his importunity; and Dorſet, embarking his troops, prepared himſelf for the voyage. Meanwhile, the meſſenger arrived with orders from Henry, that the troops ſhould remain in Spain; but the ſoldiers were ſo diſcontented with the treatment, which they had met with, that they mutinied, and obliged their commanders to ſet ſail for England. Henry was much diſpleaſed with the ill ſucceſs of this enterprize; and it was with difficulty, that Dorſet, by explaining the fraudulent conduct of Ferdinand, was at laſt able to appeaſe him.

Return of the Engliſh.

THERE happened this ſummer an action at ſea, which brought not any more deciſive advantage to the Engliſh. Sir Thomas Knevet, maſter of horſe, was ſent to the coaſt of Britanny with a fleet of forty-five ſail; and he carried with him Sir Charles Brandon, Sir John Carew, and many other young courtiers, who longed for an opportunity of diſplaying their valour. After they had committed ſome depredations, a French fleet of thirty-nine ſail iſſued from Breſt, under the command of Primauget [w],

[w] Or rather Porſmauget, according to P. Daniel's conjecture, vol. ii. p. 1001. Hence the Engliſh ſeamen called him Sir Pierce Morgan.

and

CHAP. XXVII.

and began an engagement with the Engliſh. Fire ſeized the ſhip of Primauget, who, finding his deſtruction inevitable, bore down upon the veſſel of the Engliſh admiral, and grappling with her, reſolved to make her ſhare his fate. The ſhips of both fleets ſtood ſome time in ſuſpence, as ſpectators of this dreadful engagement; and all men ſaw with horror the flames which conſumed both veſſels, and heard the cries of fury and deſpair, which came from the miſerable combatants. At laſt, the French veſſel blew up; and at the ſame time deſtroyed the Engliſh [x]. The reſt of the French fleet made their eſcape into different harbours. 1512.

THE war, which England waged againſt France, though it brought no advantage to the former kingdom, was of great prejudice to the latter; and by obliging Lewis to withdraw his forces for the defence of his own dominions, loſt him that ſuperiority, which his arms, in the beginning of the compaign, had attained in Italy. Gaſton de Foix, his nephew, a young hero, had been entruſted with the command of the French forces; and in a few months performed ſuch feats of military art and proweſs, as were ſufficient to render illuſtrious the life of the oldeſt captain [y]. His career finiſhed with the great battle of Ravenna, which, after the moſt obſtinate conflict, he gained over the Spaniſh and papal armies. He periſhed the very moment his victory was complete; and with him periſhed the fortune of the French arms in Italy. The Swiſs, who had rendered themſelves extremely formidable by their bands of diſciplined infantry, invaded the Milaneſe with a numerous army, and raiſed up that inconſtant people to a revolt againſt the dominion of France. Genoa followed the example of that dutchy; and thus Lewis, in a few weeks, entirely

x Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Stowe, p. 490. Lanquet's Epitome of chronicles, fol. 273.

y Guicciard. lib. 10.

CHAP. XXVII.

1513.

loſt his Italian conqueſts, except ſome garriſons; and Maximilian Sforza, the ſon of Ludovic, was again reinſtated in poſſeſſion of Milan.

JULIUS diſcovered extreme joy on the diſcomfiture of the French; and the more ſo, as he had been beholden for it to the Swiſs, a people, whoſe councils, he hoped, he ſhould always be able to influence and govern. The pontiff ſurvived this ſucceſs a very little time; and in his place was choſen John de Medicis, who took the appellation of Leo X. and proved one of the moſt illuſtrious princes that ever ſat on the papal throne. Humane, beneficent, generous, affable; the patron of every art, and friend of every virtue [z]; he had a ſoul no leſs capable of forming great deſigns than his predeceſſor, but was more gentle, pliant, and artful in employing means for the execution of them. The ſole defect, indeed, of his character was too great fineſſe and artifice; a fault, which, both as a prieſt and an Italian, it was difficult for him to avoid. By the negociations of Leo, the emperor Maximilian was detached from the French intereſt; and Henry, notwithſtanding his diſappointments in the former campaign, was ſtill encouraged to proſecute his warlike meaſures againſt Lewis.

21ſt Feb. Leo X.

A parliament.

HENRY had ſummoned a new ſeſſion of parliament [a], and obtained a ſupply for his enterprize. It was a poll-tax, and impoſed different ſums, according to the ſtation and riches of the perſon. A duke payed ten marks, an earl five pounds, a baron four pounds, a knight four marks; every man valued at eight hundred pounds in goods, four marks. An impoſition was alſo granted of two fifteenths and four tenths [b]. With theſe ſupplies, joined to the treaſure, which had been left by his father, and which was not yet entirely diſſipated, he was enabled to levy a great

z Father Paul, lib. 1.
a 4th of November, 1512.
b Stowe.

army,

army, and render himself formidable to his enemy. The English are said to have been much encouraged in this enterprize, by the arrival of a vessel in the Thames under the papal banner. It carried presents of wine and hams to the king, and the more eminent courtiers; and such fond devotion was at that time entertained towards the court of Rome, that these trivial presents were every where received with the greatest triumph and exultation.

CHAP. XXVII. 1513.

In order to prevent all disturbance from Scotland, while Henry's arms should be employed on the continent, Dr. West, dean of Windsor, was dispatched on an embassy to James, the king's brother-in-law; and instructions were given him to accommodate all differences between the kingdoms, as well as to discover the intentions of the court of Scotland [c]. Some complaints had already been made on both sides. One Barton, a Scotchman, having suffered injuries from the Portugueze, for which he could obtain no redress, had procured letters of marque against that nation; but he had no sooner put to sea, than he was guilty of the grossest abuses, committed depredations upon the English, and much infested the narrow seas [d]. Lord Howard and Sir Edward Howard, admirals, and sons of the earl of Surrey, sailing out against him, fought him in a desperate action, where the pyrate was killed; and they brought his ships into the Thames. As Henry refused all satisfaction for this act of justice, some of the borderers, who wanted but a pretence for depredations, entered England under the command of lord Hume, warden of the marches, and committed great ravages on that kingdom. Notwithstanding these mutual grounds of dissatisfaction, matters might easily have been accommodated, had it not been for Henry's intended invasion of France, which rouzed the jealousy of the Scotish nation.

[c] Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. p. 811.

[d] Stowe, p. 489. Hollingshed,

CHAP. XXVII.

1513. War with Scotland.

tion [c]. The ancient league, which ſubſiſted between France and Scotland, was conceived to be the ſtrongeſt band of connexion; and the Scots univerſally believed, that, were it not for the countenance which they received from this foreign alliance, they had never been able ſo long to maintain their independance againſt a people ſo much ſuperior. James was farther incited to take part in the quarrel by the invitations of Anne, queen of France, whoſe knight he had ever in all tournaments profeſſed himſelf, and who ſummoned him, according to the ideas of romantic gallantry, prevalent in that age, to take the field in her defence, and prove himſelf her true and valorous champion. The remonſtrances of his conſort and of his wiſeſt counſellors were in vain oppoſed to the martial ardour of that prince. He firſt ſent a ſquadron of ſhips to the aſſiſtance of France; the only fleet which Scotland ſeems ever to have poſſeſſed. And though he ſtill made profeſſions of maintaining a neutrality, the Engliſh ambaſſador eaſily foreſaw, that a war would in the end prove inevitable; and he gave warning of the danger to his maſter, who ſent the earl of Surrey to put the borders in a poſture of defence, and to reſiſt the expected invaſion of the enemy.

HENRY, all on fire for military fame, was little diſcouraged by this appearance of a diverſion from the north; and ſo much the leſs, as he flattered himſelf with the aſſiſtance of all the conſiderable potentates of Europe in his invaſion of France. The pope ſtill continued to thunder out his excommunications againſt Lewis, and all the adherents of the ſchiſmatical council: The Swiſs cantons made profeſſions of violent animoſity againſt France: The ambaſſadors of Ferdinand and Maximilian had ſigned with thoſe of Henry a treaty of alliance againſt that power, and had ſtipulated the time and place of their

[c] Buchannan, lib. 13. Drummond in the life of James IV.

intended

intended invaſion: And though Ferdinand diſavowed his ambaſſador, and even ſigned a truce for a twelvemonth with the common enemy; Henry was not yet fully convinced of his ſelfiſh and ſiniſter intentions, and ſtill hoped for his concurrence after the expiration of that term. He had now got a miniſter who complied with all his inclinations, and flattered him in every ſcheme, to which his ſanguine and impetuous temper was inclined. CHAP. XXVII. 1513.

Wolſey miniſter.

THOMAS WOLSEY, dean of Lincoln, and almoner to the king, ſurpaſſed in favour all his miniſters, and was faſt advancing towards that unrivalled grandeur, which he afterwards attained. This man was ſon of a butcher at Ipſwich; but having got a learned education, and being endowed with an excellent capacity, he was admitted into the marquis of Dorſet's family as tutor to that nobleman's children, and ſoon gained the friendſhip and countenance of his patron[f]. He was recommended to be chaplain to Henry VII. and being employed by that monarch in a ſecret negociation, which regarded his intended marriage with Margaret of Savoy, Maximilian's daughter, he acquitted himſelf to the king's ſatisfaction, and obtained the praiſe both of diligence and dexterity in his conduct[g]. That prince, having given him a commiſſion to Maximilian, who at that time reſided in Bruſſels, was ſurprized, in leſs than three days after, to ſee Wolſey preſent himſelf before him; and ſuppoſing that he had protracted his departure, he began to reprove him for the dilatory execution of his orders. Wolſey informed him, that he had juſt returned from Bruſſels, and had ſucceſsfully fulfilled all his majeſty's commands. "But on ſecond "thoughts," ſaid the king, "I found that ſomewhat was "omitted in your orders; and have ſent a meſſenger after "you, with fuller inſtructions." "I met the meſſen-

[f] Stowe, p. 997. [g] Cavendiſh. Fiddes's life of Wolſey. Stowe.

ger,"

CHAP. XXVII. 1513.

ger," replied Wolsey, "on my return: But as I had "reflected on that omission, I ventured of myself to ex- "ecute what, I knew, must be your majesty's inten- "tions." The death of Henry, soon after this incident, retarded the advancement of Wolsey, and prevented his reaping any advantage from the good opinion, which that monarch had entertained of him: But thenceforwards he was looked on at court as a rising man; and Fox, bishop of Winchester, cast his eye upon him as one, who might be serviceable to him in his present situation [b]. This prelate, observing that the earl of Surrey had totally eclipsed him in favour, resolved to introduce Wolsey to the young prince's familiarity, and hoped, that he might rival Surrey in his insinuating arts, and yet be contented to act in the cabinet a part subordinate to Fox himself, who had promoted him. In a very little time, Wolsey gained so much on the king, that he supplanted both Surrey in his favour, and Fox in his trust and confidence. Being admitted to Henry's parties of pleasure, he took the lead in every jovial conversation, and promoted all that frolic and entertainment, which he found suitable to the age and inclination of the young monarch. Neither his own years, which were near forty, nor his character of a clergyman, were any restraint upon him, or engaged him to check, by any useless severity, the gaiety, in which Henry, who had small propension to debauchery, passed his careless hours. During the intervals of amusement he introduced business and state affairs, and insinuated those maxims of conduct, which he was desirous his master should adopt. He observed to him, that, while he entrusted his affairs into the hands of his father's counsellors, he had the advantage indeed of employing men of wisdom and experience, but men who owed not their promotion to his

[b] Antiq. Brit. Eccles. p. 309. Polydore Virgil, lib. 27.

favour,

favour, and who scarcely thought themselves accountable to him for the exercise of their authority: That by the factions, and cabals, and jealousies, which had long prevailed among them, they more obstructed the advancement of his affairs, than they promoted it by the knowledge, which age and practice had conferred upon them: That while he thought proper to pass his time in those pleasures, to which his age and royal fortune invited him, and in those studies, which would in time enable him to sway the sceptre with absolute authority, his best system of government would be to entrust his authority into the hands of some one person, who was the creature of his will, and who could entertain no view but that of promoting his service: And that if this minister had also the same relish for pleasure with himself, and the same taste for science, he could more easily, at intervals, account to him for his whole conduct, and introduce his master gradually into the knowledge of public business, and thus, without tedious constraint or application, initiate him in the science of government [i].

CHAP. XXVII. 1513.

HENRY entered into all the views of Wolsey; and finding no one so capable of executing this plan of administration as the person who proposed it, he soon advanced his favourite, from being the companion of his pleasures, to be a member of his council; and from being a member of his council, to be his sole and absolute minister. By this rapid advancement and uncontrouled authority, the character and genius of Wolsey had full opportunity to display itself. Insatiable in his acquisitions, but still more magnificent in his expence: Of extensive capacity, but still more unbounded enterprize: Ambitious of power, but still more desirous of glory: Insinuating, engaging, persuasive; and, by turns, lofty, elevated, commanding: Haughty to his equals, but affable to his dependants; oppressive to the people, but liberal

His character.

[i] Cavendish, p. 12. Stowe, p. 499.

CHAP. XXVII.

1513. liberal to his friends; more generous than grateful; less moved by injuries than by contempt; he was framed to take the ascendant in every intercourse with others, but exerted this superiority of *nature* with such ostentation as exposed him to envy, and made every one willing to recal the original inferiority or rather meanness of his *fortune*.

The branch of administration, in which Henry most exerted himself, while he gave his entire confidence to Wolsey, was the military, which, as it suited the natural gallantry and bravery of his temper, as well as the ardour of his youth, was the principal object of his attention. Finding that Lewis had made great preparations both by sea and land to resist him, he was no less careful to levy a formidable army, and equip a considerable fleet for the invasion of France. The command of the fleet was entrusted to Sir Edward Howard; who, after scouring the channel some time, presented himself before Brest, where the French navy then lay; and he challenged them to a combat. The French admiral, who expected from the Mediterranean a reinforcement of some gallies under the command of Prejeant de Bidoux, kept within the harbour, and saw with patience the English burn and destroy the country in the neighbourhood. At last Prejeant arrived with six gallies, and put into Conquet, a place within a few leagues of Brest; where he secured himself behind some batteries, which he had planted on rocks, that lay on each side of him.

25th April. Howard was notwithstanding determined to make an attack upon him; and as he had but two gallies, he took himself the command of one, and gave the other to lord Ferrars. He was followed by some row-barges and some crayers under the command of Sir Thomas Cheyney, Sir William Sidney, and other officers of distinction. He immediately fastened on Prejeant's ship, and leaped

on

CHAP. XXVII.

1513.

on board of her, attended by one Carroz, a Spaniſh cavalier, and ſeventeen Engliſhmen. The cable, meanwhile, which faſtened his ſhip to that of the enemy, being cut, the admiral was thus left in the hands of the French; and as he ſtill continued the combat with great gallantry, he was puſhed overboard by their pikes [k]. Lord Ferrars, ſeeing the admiral's galley fall off, followed with the other ſmall veſſels; and the whole fleet was ſo diſcouraged by the loſs of their commander, that they retired from before Breſt [l]. The French navy came out of harbour; and even ventured to invade the coaſt of Suſſex. They were repulſed, and Prejeant, their commander, loſt an eye by the ſhot of an arrow. Lord Howard, brother to the deceaſed admiral, ſucceeded to the command of the Engliſh fleet; and little memorable paſſed at ſea during this ſummer.

GREAT preparations had been making at land, during the whole winter, for an invaſion on France by the way of Calais; but the ſummer was well advanced before every thing was in ſufficient readineſs for the intended enterprize. The long peace, which the kingdom had enjoyed, had ſomewhat unfitted the Engliſh for military expeditions; and the great change, which had lately been introduced in the art of war, had rendered it ſtill more difficult to enure them to the uſe of the weapons now employed in action. The Swiſs, and after them the Spaniards, had ſhown the advantage of a ſtable infantry, who fought with pike and ſword, and were able to repulſe even the heavy-armed cavalry, in which the great

[k] It was a maxim of Howard's, that no admiral was good for any thing, that was not brave even to a degree of madneſs. As the ſea-ſervice requires much leſs plan and contrivance and capacity than the land, this maxim has great plauſibility and appearance of truth: Though the fate of Howard himſelf may ſerve as a proof that even there courage ought to be tempered with diſcretion.

[l] Stowe, p. 491. Herbert, Hollingſhed, p. 816.

force

CHAP. XXVII.

1513.

force of the armies formerly consisted. The practice of fire-arms was become common; though the caliver, which was the weapon now in use, was so inconvenient, and attended with so many disadvantages, that it had not entirely discredited the bow, a weapon in which the English excelled all European nations. The English archers still maintained their reputation; and even during the present reign, the king's allies had solicited him for supplies of this kind. The second year after his accession, he sent a thousand archers, under the command of lord Dacres, to the assistance of Ferdinand, his father-in-law, in his projected expedition against the Moors of Barbary; but as that prince turned his arms against the French in Italy, Dacres was sent back without being employed in any service. The king had also sent fifteen hundred archers under the command of Sir Edward Poinings to the assistance of Margaret, dutchess of Savoy, who made use of them with advantage against the duke of Guelders, the great disturber of the Netherlands. A considerable part of the forces, which Henry now levied for the invasion of France, consisted of archers; and as soon as affairs were in readiness, the vanguard of the army, amounting to 8000 men, under the command of the earl of Shrewsbury, sailed over to Calais. Shrewsbury was accompanied by the earl of Derby, the lords Fitzwater, Hastings, Cobham, and Sir Rice ap Thomas, captain of the light horse. Another body of 6000 men soon after followed under the command of lord Herbert, the chamberlain, attended by the earls of Northumberland and Kent, the lords Audley and Delawar, together with Carew, Curson, and other gentlemen.

The king himself prepared to follow with the main body and rear of the army; and he appointed the queen regent of the kingdom during his absence. That he might secure her administration from all disturbance, he

CHAP. XXVII.

ordered Edmond de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, to be beheaded in the Tower, the nobleman who had been attainted and impriſoned during the late reign. Henry was led to commit this act of violence by the dying commands, as is imagined, of his father, who told him, that he never ſhould be free from danger, while a man of ſo turbulent a diſpoſition as Suffolk was alive. And as Richard de la Pole, brother of Suffolk, had accepted of a command in the French ſervice, and fooliſhly attempted to revive the York faction, and to inſtigate them againſt the preſent government, he probably, by that means, drew more ſuddenly the king's vengeance on this unhappy nobleman. 1513.

AT laſt, Henry, attended by the duke of Buckingham and many others of the nobility, arrived at Calais, and entered upon his French expedition, from which he fondly expected ſo much ſucceſs and glory [m]. Of all thoſe allies, on whoſe aſſiſtance he relied, the Swiſs alone fully performed their engagements. Being put in motion by a ſum of money ſent them by Henry, and incited by their victories obtained in Italy, and by their animoſity againſt France, they were preparing to enter that kingdom with an army of twenty-five thouſand men; and no equal force could be oppoſed to their incurſion. Maximilian had received an advance of 120,000 crowns from Henry, and had engaged to reinforce the Swiſs with 8000 men, but failed in his engagements. That he might make atonement to the king, he himſelf appeared in the Low Countries, and joined the Engliſh army with ſome German and Flemiſh ſoldiers, who were uſeful in giving an example of diſcipline to Henry's new levied forces. Obſerving the diſpoſition of the Engliſh monarch to be more bent on glory than on intereſt, he inliſted himſelf in his ſervice, wore the croſs of St. George, and received pay, 30th June. Invaſion of France.

[m] Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Belcarius, lib. 14.

CHAP. XXVII.

1513.

a hundred crowns a day, as one of his subjects and captains. But while he exhibited this extraordinary spectacle, of an emperor of Germany serving under a king of England, he was treated with the highest respect by Henry, and really directed all the operations of the combined army.

BEFORE the arrival of Henry and Maximilian in the camp, the earl of Shrewsbury and lord Herbert had formed the siege of Teroüane, a town situated on the frontiers of Picardy; and they began to attack the place with vigour. Teligni and Crequi commanded in the town, and had a garrison not exceeding a thousand men; yet made they such stout resistance as protracted the siege a month; and they at last found themselves more in danger from want of provisions and ammunition than from the assaults of the besiegers. Having conveyed intelligence of their situation to Lewis, who had advanced to Amiens with his army, that prince gave orders to throw relief into the

16th Aug. place. Fontrailles appeared at the head of 800 horsemen, each of whom carried a sack of gunpowder behind him, and two quarters of bacon. With this small force he made a sudden and unexpected irruption into the English camp, and surmounting all resistance, advanced to the fossee of the town, where each horseman threw down his burthen. They immediately returned at the gallop, and were so fortunate as again to break through the English, and to suffer little or no loss in this dangerous attempt [n].

Battle of Guinegate.

BUT the English had, soon after, full revenge for the insult. Henry had received intelligence of the approach of the French horse, who had advanced to protect this incursion of Fontrailles; and he ordered some troops to pass the Lis, in order to oppose them. The cavalry of France, though they consisted chiefly of gentlemen, who

[n] Hist. de Chev. Bayard, chap. 57. Memoires de Bellai.

had

had behaved with great gallantry in many desperate actions in Italy, were, on sight of the enemy, seized with so unaccountable a panic, that they immediately took to flight, and were pursued by the English. The duke of Longueville, who commanded the French, Bussi d'Amboise, Clermont, Imbercourt, the chevalier Bayard, and many other officers of distinction were made prisoners [o]. This action, or rather rout, is sometimes called the battle of Guinegate, from the place where it was fought; but more commonly the *Battle of Spurs*, because the French, that day, made more use of their spurs than of their swords or military weapons. CHAP. XXVII. 1513.

AFTER so considerable an advantage, the king, who was at the head of a complete army of above 50,000 men, might have made incursions to the gates of Paris, and spread confusion and desolation every where. It gave Lewis great joy, when he heard, that the English, instead of pushing their victory, and attacking the dismayed troops of France, returned to the siege of so inconsiderable a place as Teroüane. The governors were obliged soon after to capitulate; and Henry found his acquisition of so little consequence, though gained at the expence of some blood, and what, in his present circumstances, was more important, of much valuable time, that he immediately demolished the fortifications. The anxieties of the French were again revived with regard to the motions of the English. The Swiss at the same time had entered Bungundy with a formidable army, and laid siege to Dijon, which was in no condition to resist them. Ferdinand himself, though he had made a truce with Lewis, seemed disposed to lay hold of every advantage which fortune should present to him. Scarcely ever was the French monarchy in greater danger, or less in a condition to de-

[o] Memoires de Bellai, liv. 1. Polydore Virgil, liv. 27. Hollingshed, p. 822. Herbert.

CHAP. XXVII. 1513.

fend itſelf againſt thoſe powerful armies, which on every ſide aſſailed or threatened it. Even many of the inhabitants of Paris, who believed themſelves expoſed to the rapacity and violence of the enemy, began to diſlodge, without knowing what place could afford them greater ſecurity.

But Lewis was extricated from his preſent difficulties by the manifold blunders of his enemies. The Swiſs allowed themſelves to be ſeduced into a negociation by Tremoille, governor of Burgundy; and without making enquiry, whether that nobleman had any powers to treat, they accepted of the conditions which he offered them. Tremoille, who knew that he ſhould be diſavowed by his maſter, ſtipulated whatever they were pleaſed to demand; and thought himſelf happy, at the expence of ſome payments, and very large promiſes, to get rid of ſo formidable an enemy [p].

The meaſures of Henry ſhowed equal ignorance in the art of war with that of the Swiſs in negociation. Tournay was a great and rich city, which, though it lay within the frontiers of Flanders, belonged entirely to France, and afforded the troops of that kingdom a paſſage into the heart of the Netherlands. Maximilian, who was deſirous of freeing his grandſon from ſo troubleſome a neighbour, adviſed Henry to lay ſiege to this place; and the Engliſh monarch, not conſidering that ſuch an acquiſition nowiſe advanced his conqueſts in France, was ſo imprudent as to follow that intereſted counſel. The city of Tournay, by its ancient charters, being exempted from the burthen of a garriſon, the burghers, againſt the remonſtrance of their ſovereign, ſtrenuouſly inſiſted on maintaining this dangerous privilege; and they engaged, by themſelves, to make a vigorous defence againſt the enemy [q]. Their courage failed them when matters came

[p] Memoires du mareſchal de Fleuranges, Bellarius, lib. 14.

[q] Memoires de Fleuranges.

CHAP. XXVII.

came to trial; and after a few days' siege, the place was surrendered to the English. The bishop of Tournay was lately dead; and as a new bishop was already elected by the chapter, but not installed in his office, the king bestowed the administration of the see on his favourite, Wolsey, and put him in immediate possession of the revenues, which were considerable [r]. Hearing of the retreat of the Swiss, and observing the season to be far advanced, he thought proper to return to England; and he carried the greatest part of his army with him. Success had attended him in every enterprize; and his youthful mind was much elated with this seeming prosperity; but all men of judgment, comparing the advantages of his situation with his progress, his expence with his acquisitions, were convinced, that this campaign, so much vaunted, was, in reality, both ruinous and inglorious to him [s].

1513. 24th Sept.

The success, which, during this summer, had attended Henry's arms in the North, was much more decisive. The king of Scotland had assembled the whole force of his kingdom; and having passed the Tweed with a brave, though a tumultuary army of above 50,000 men, he ravaged those parts of Northumberland which lay nearest that river, and he employed himself in taking the castles of Norham, Etal, Werke, Ford, and other places of little importance. Lady Ford, being taken prisoner in her castle, was presented to James, and so gained on the affections of that prince, that he wasted in pleasure the critical time, which, during the absence of his enemy, he should have employed in pushing his conquests. His troops, lying in a barren country, where they soon consumed all the provisions, began to be pinched with hunger; and as the authority of the prince was feeble, and military discipline, during that age, extremely relaxed, many of them had stolen from the camp, and retired

[r] Strype's Memorials, vol. i. p. 5, 6.

[s] Guicciardini.

homewards.

CHAP. XXVII. 1513.

homewards. Meanwhile, the earl of Surrey, having collected a force of 26,000 men, of which 5000 had been ſent over from the king's army in France, marched to the defence of the country, and approached the Scots, who lay on ſome high ground near the hills of Cheviot. The river Till ran between the armies, and prevented an engagement: Surrey therefore ſent a herald to the Scotch camp, challenging the enemy to deſcend into the plain of Milfield, which lay towards the ſouth; and there, appointing a day for the combat, to try their valour on equal ground. As he received no ſatisfactory anſwer, he made a feint of marching towards Berwic; as if he intended to enter Scotland, to lay waſte the borders, and cut off the proviſions of the enemy. The Scottiſh army, in order to prevent his purpoſe, put themſelves in motion; and having ſet fire to the huts in which they had quartered, they deſcended from the hills. Surrey, taking advantage of the ſmoke, which was blown towards him, and which concealed his movements, paſſed the Till with his artillery and vanguard at the bridge of Twiſel, and ſent the reſt of his army to ſeek a ford higher up the river.

9th Sept.

Battle of Flouden.

An engagement was now become inevitable, and both ſides prepared for it with tranquillity and order [t]. The Engliſh divided their army into two lines: Lord Howard led the main body of the firſt line, Sir Edmond Howard the right wing, Sir Marmaduke Conſtable the left. The earl of Surrey himſelf commanded the main body of the ſecond line, lord Dacres the right wing, Sir Edward Stanley the left. The front of the Scots preſented three diviſions to the enemy: The middle was led by the king himſelf: The right by the earl of Huntley, aſſiſted by lord Hume: The left by the earls of Lenox and Argyle.

[t] Buchanan, lib. 13. Drummond. Herbert. Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Stowe, p. 493. Paulus Jovius.

A fourth

A fourth diviſion under the earl of Bothwel made a body of reſerve. Huntley began the battle; and after a ſharp conflict, put to flight the left wing of the Engliſh, and chaced them off the field: But on returning from the purſuit, he found the whole Scottiſh army in great diſorder. The diviſion under Lenox and Argyle, elated with the ſucceſs of the other wing, had broken their ranks, and notwithſtanding the remonſtrances and entreaties of La Motte, the French ambaſſador, had ruſhed headlong upon the enemy. Not only Sir Edmond Howard, at the head of his diviſion, received them with great valour; but Dacres, who commanded in the ſecond line, wheeling about during the action, fell upon their rear, and put them to the ſword without reſiſtance. The diviſion under James and that under Bothwel, animated by the valour of their leaders, ſtill made head againſt the Engliſh, and throwing themſelves into a circle, protracted the action, till night ſeparated the combatants. The victory ſeemed yet uncertain, and the numbers, that fell on each ſide, were nearly equal, amounting to above 5000 men: But the morning diſcovered where the advantage lay. The Engliſh had loſt only perſons of ſmall note; but the flower of the Scottiſh nobility had fallen in battle, and their king himſelf, after the moſt diligent enquiry, could no where be found. In ſearching the field, the Engliſh met with a dead body, which reſembled him, and was arrayed in a ſimilar habit; and they put it in a leaden coffin, and ſent it to London. During ſome time it was kept unburied; becauſe James died under ſentence of excommunication, on account of his confederacy with France, and his oppoſition to the holy ſee[u]: But upon Henry's application, who pretended that that prince had, in the inſtant before his death, diſcovered ſigns of repentance, abſolution was given him, and

CHAP. XXVII. 1513.

[u] Buchanan, lib. 13. Herbert.

CHAP. XXVII.

and his body was interred. The Scots, however, ſtill aſſerted, that it was not James's body, which was found
1513. on the field of battle, but that of one Elphinſton, who had been arrayed in arms reſembling their king's, in order to divide the attention of the Engliſh, and ſhare the danger with his maſter. It was believed that James had been ſeen croſſing the Tweed at Kelſo; and ſome imagined that he had been killed by the vaſſals of lord Hume, whom that nobleman had inſtigated to commit ſo enormous a crime. But the populace entertained the opinion that he was ſtill alive, and having ſecretly gone in pilgrimage to the holy land, would ſoon return, and take poſſeſſion of the throne. This fond conceit was long entertained among the Scots.

THE king of Scotland and moſt of his chief nobles being ſlain in the field of Flouden, ſo this battle was called, an inviting opportunity was offered to Henry of gaining advantages over that kingdom, perhaps of reducing it to ſubjection. But he diſcovered on this occaſion a mind truly great and generous. When the queen of Scotland, Margaret, who was created regent during the infancy of her ſon, applied for peace, he readily granted it; and took compaſſion on the helpleſs condition of his ſiſter and nephew. The earl of Surrey, who
1514. had gained him ſo great a victory, was reſtored to the title of duke of Norfolk, which had been forfeited by his father, for engaging on the ſide of Richard III. Lord Howard was honoured with the title of earl of Surrey. Sir Charles Brandon the king's favourite, whom he had before created viſcount Liſle, was now raiſed to the dignity of duke of Suffolk. Wolſey, who was both his favourite and his miniſter, was created biſhop of Lincoln. Lord Herbert obtained the title of earl of Worceſter. Sir Edward Stanley, that of lord Monteagle.

THOUGH

CHAP. XXVII.

1514.

THOUGH peace with Scotland gave Henry ſecurity on that ſide, and enabled him to proſecute in tranquillity his enterprize againſt France, ſome other incidents had happened, which more than counterbalanced this fortunate event, and ſerved to open his eyes with regard to the raſhneſs of an undertaking, into which his youth and high fortune had betrayed him.

LEWIS, fully ſenſible of the dangerous ſituation, to which his kingdom had been reduced during the former campaign, was reſolved, by every expedient, to prevent the return of like perils, and to break the confederacy of his enemies. The pope was nowiſe diſpoſed to puſh the French to extremity; and provided they did not return to take poſſeſſion of Milan, his intereſts rather led him to preſerve the balance among the contending parties. He accepted, therefore, of Lewis's offer to renounce the council of Lyons; and he took off the excommunication, which his predeceſſor and himſelf had denounced againſt that king and his kingdom. Ferdinand was now faſt declining in years; and as he entertained no farther ambition than that of keeping poſſeſſion of Navarre, which he had ſubdued by his arms and policy, he readily hearkened to the propoſals of Lewis for prolonging the truce another year; and he even ſhowed an inclination of forming a more intimate connexion with that monarch. Lewis had dropped hints of his intention to marry his ſecond daughter, Renée, either to Charles, prince of Spain, or his brother, Ferdinand, both of them grandſons of the Spaniſh monarch; and he declared his reſolution of beſtowing on her, as her portion, his claim on the dutchy of Milan. Ferdinand not only embraced theſe propoſals with joy; but alſo engaged the emperor, Maximilian, in the ſame views, and procured his acceſſion to a treaty, which opened ſo inviting a proſpect of aggrandizing their common grandchildren.

WHEN

CHAP. XXVII.

1514. When Henry was informed of Ferdinand's renewal of the truce with Lewis, he fell into a violent rage, and loudly complained, that his father-in-law had firſt, by the higheſt promiſes and profeſſions, engaged him in enmity with France, and afterwards, without giving him the leaſt warning, had now again ſacrificed his intereſt to his own ſelfiſh purpoſes, and had left him expoſed alone to all the danger and expence of the war. In proportion to his eaſy credulity and his unſuſpecting reliance on Ferdinand was the vehemence with which he exclaimed againſt the treatment which he met with; and he threatened revenge for this egregious treachery and breach of faith [w]. But he loſt all patience when informed of the other negociation, by which Maximilian was alſo ſeduced from his alliance, and in which propoſals had been agreed to, for the marriage of the prince of Spain with the daughter of France. Charles, during the lifetime of the late king, had been affianced to Mary, Henry's ſecond ſiſter; and as the prince now approached the age of puberty, the king had expected the immediate completion of the marriage, and the honourable ſettlement of a ſiſter, for whom he had entertained a tender affection. Such a complication, therefore, of injuries gave him the higheſt diſpleaſure, and inſpired him with a deſire of expreſſing his diſdain towards thoſe who had impoſed on his youth and inexperience, and had abuſed his too great facility.

The duke of Longueville, who had been made priſoner at the battle of Guinegate, and who was ſtill detained in England, was ready to take advantage of all theſe diſpoſitions of Henry, in order to procure a peace and even an alliance, which he knew to be paſſionately deſired by his maſter. He repreſented to the king, that Anne, queen of France, being lately dead, a door was

[w] Petrus de Angleria Epiſt. 545, 546.

thereby opened for an affinity, which might tend to the advantage of both kingdoms, and which would ſerve to terminate honourably all the differences between them: That ſhe had left Lewis no male children; and as he had ever entertained a ſtrong deſire of having heirs to the crown, no marriage ſeemed more ſuitable to him than that with the princeſs of England, whoſe youth and beauty afforded the moſt flattering hopes in that particular: That though the marriage of a princeſs of ſixteen, with a king of fifty-three, might ſeem unſuitable; yet the other advantages, attending the alliance, were more than a ſufficient compenſation for this inequality: And that Henry, in looſening his connexions with Spain, from which he had never reaped any advantage, would contract a cloſe affinity with Lewis, a prince, who, through his whole life, had invariably maintained the character of probity and honour. CHAP. XXVII. 1514.

As Henry ſeemed to hearken to this diſcourſe with willing ears, Longueville informed his maſter of the probability, which he diſcovered, of bringing the matter to a happy concluſion; and he received full powers for negociating the treaty. The articles were eaſily adjuſted between the monarchs. Lewis agreed that Tournay ſhould remain in the hands of the Engliſh; that Richard de la Pole ſhould be baniſhed to Metz, there to live on a penſion aſſigned him by Lewis; that Henry ſhould receive payment of a million of crowns, being the arrears due by treaty to his father and himſelf; and that the princeſs Mary ſhould bring four hundred thouſand crowns as her portion, and enjoy as large a jointure as any queen of France, even the former, who was heireſs of Britanny. The two princes alſo agreed on the ſuccours, with which they ſhould mutually ſupply each other, in caſe either of them were attacked by an enemy [x]. Peace with France. 7th Auguſt.

[x] Du Tillet.

IN

CHAP. XXVII.

1514. 9th Octob.

In consequence of this treaty, Mary was sent over to France with a splendid retinue, and Lewis met her at Abbeville, where the espousals were celebrated. He was enchanted with the beauty, grace, and numerous accomplishments of the young princess; and being naturally of an amorous disposition, which his advanced age had not entirely cooled, he was seduced into such a course of gaiety and pleasure, as proved very unsuitable to his declining state of health y. He died in less than three months after the marriage, to the extreme regret of the French nation, who, sensible of his tender concern for their welfare, gave him with one voice the honourable appellation of *father of his people.*

1515. 1st Jan.

Francis, duke of Angouleme, a youth of one and twenty, who had married Lewis's eldest daughter, succeeded him on the throne; and by his activity, valour, generosity, and other virtues, gave prognostics of a happy and glorious reign. This young monarch had been extremely struck with the charms of the English princess; and even during his predecessor's life-time, had payed her such close attendance as made some of his friends apprehend, that he had entertained views of gallantry towards her. But being warned, that, by indulging himself in this passion, he might probably exclude himself from the throne, he forbore all farther addresses; and even watched the young dowager with a very careful eye during the first months of her widowhood. Charles Brandon, duke of Suffolk, was at that time in the court of France, the most comely personage of his time, and the most accomplished in all the exercises, which were then thought to befit a courtier and a soldier. He was Henry's chief favourite; and that monarch had even once entertained thoughts of marrying him to his sister, and had given indulgence to that mutual passion, which took place be-

y Brantome Eloge de Louis XII.

tween

tween them. The queen aſked Suffolk, whether he had now the courage, without farther reflection, to eſpouſe her; and ſhe told him, that her brother would more eaſily forgive him for not aſking his conſent, than for acting contrary to his orders. Suffolk declined not ſo inviting an offer; and the marriage was ſecretly celebrated at Paris. Francis, who was pleaſed with this marriage, as it prevented Henry from forming any powerful alliance by means of his ſiſter [z], interpoſed his good offices in appeaſing him: And even Wolſey, having entertained no jealouſy of Suffolk, who was content to participate in the king's pleaſures, and had no ambition to engage in ſtate affairs, was active in reconciling the king to his ſiſter and brother-in-law; and he obtained them permiſſion to return to England.

CHAP. XXVII. 1515.

z Petrus de Angleria, Epiſt. 544.

NOTES

TO THE

THIRD VOLUME.

NOTE [A], p. 4.

IN the fifth year of the king, *the commons complained of the government about the king's perſon, his court, the exceſſive number of his ſervants, of the abuſes in the Chancery, King's Bench, Common Pleas, Exchequer, and of grievous oppreſſions in the country, by the great multitudes of maintainers of quarrels,* (men linked in confederacies together) *who behaved themſelves like kings in the country, ſo as there was very little law or right, and of other things which they ſaid were the cauſe of the late commotions under Wat Tyler.* Parl. Hiſt. vol. i. p. 365. This irregular government, which no king and no houſe of commons had been able to remedy, was the ſource of the licentiouſneſs of the great, and turbulency of the people, as well as tyranny of the princes. If ſubjects would enjoy liberty, and kings ſecurity, the laws muſt be executed.

In the ninth of this reign, the commons alſo diſcovered an accuracy and a jealouſy of liberty, which we ſhould little expect in thoſe rude times. "It was agreed by parliament," ſays Cotton, p. 309, "that the ſubſidy of wools, wool fells, "and ſkins, granted to the king until the time of Midſummer "then enſuing, ſhould ceaſe from the ſame time unto the feaſt "of St. Peter *ad vincula*; for that thereby the king ſhould be "interrupted for claiming ſuch grant as due." See alſo Cotton, p. 198.

NOTE [B], p. 16.

KNYGHTON, p. 2715, &c. The ſame author, p. 2680, tells us, that the king, in return to the meſſage, ſaid, that he would not for their deſire remove the meaneſt ſcullion from

from his kitchen. This author alſo tells us, that the king ſaid to the commiſſioners, when they harangued him, that he ſaw his ſubjects were rebellious, and his beſt way would be to call in the king of France to his aid. But it is plain, that all theſe ſpeeches were either intended by Knyghton merely as an ornament to his hiſtory, or are falſe. For (1) when the five lords accuſe the king's miniſters in the next parliament, and impute to them every raſh action of the king, they ſpeak nothing of theſe replies which are ſo obnoxious, were ſo recent, and are pretended to have been ſo public. (2) The king, ſo far from having any connexions at that time with France, was threatened with a dangerous invaſion from that kingdom. This ſtory ſeems to have been taken from the reproaches afterwards thrown out againſt him, and to have been transferred by the hiſtorian to this time, to which they cannot be applied.

NOTE [C], p. 21.

WE muſt except the 12th article, which accuſes Brembre of having cut off the heads of twenty-two priſoners, confined for felony or debt, without warrant or proceſs of law: But as it is not conceivable what intereſt Brembre could have to treat theſe felons and debtors in ſuch a manner, we may preſume that the fact is either falſe or miſrepreſented. It was in theſe men's power to ſay any thing againſt the perſons accuſed: No defence or apology was admitted: All was lawleſs will and pleaſure.

They are alſo accuſed of deſigns to murder the lords; but theſe accuſations either are general, or deſtroy one another. Sometimes, as in article 15th, they intend to murder them by means of the mayor and city of London: Sometimes, as in article 28th, by trial and falſe inqueſts: Sometimes, as in article 28th, by means of the king of France, who was to receive Calais for his pains.

NOTE [D], p. 23.

IN general, the parliament in thoſe days never paid a proper regard to Edward's ſtatute of treaſons, though one of the moſt advantageous laws for the ſubject that has ever been enacted.

enacted. In the 17th of the king, *the dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter complain to Richard, that Sir Thomas Talbot, with others of his adherents, conſpired the death of the ſaid dukes in divers parts of Cheſhire, as the ſame was confeſſed and well known; and praying that the parliament may judge of the fault. Whereupon the king and the lords in the parliament judged the ſame fact to be open and high treaſon: And hereupon they award two writs, the one to the ſheriff of York, and the other to the ſheriffs of Derby, to take the body of the ſaid Sir Thomas returnable in the King's bench in the month of Eaſter then enſuing. And open proclamation was made in Weſtminſter-hall, that upon the ſheriff's return, and at the next coming in of the ſaid Sir Thomas, the ſaid Thomas ſhould be convicted of treaſon, and incur the loſs and pain of the ſame: And all ſuch as ſhould receive him after the proclamation ſhould incur the ſame loſs and pain.* Cotton, p. 354. It is to be obſerved, that this extraordinary judgment was paſſed in a time of tranquillity. Though the ſtatute itſelf of Edward III. reſerves a power to the parliament to declare any new ſpecies of treaſon, it is not to be ſuppoſed that this power was reſerved to the houſe of lords alone, or that men were to be judged by a law *ex poſt facto*. At leaſt, if ſuch be the meaning of the clauſe; it may be affirmed, that men were at that time very ignorant of the firſt principles of law and juſtice.

NOTE [E], p. 30.

IN the preceding parliament, the commons had ſhewn a diſpoſition very complaiſant to the king; yet there happened an incident in their proceedings, which is curious, and ſhews us the ſtate of the houſe during that period. The members were either country gentlemen, or merchants, who were aſſembled for a few days, and were entirely unacquainted with buſineſs; ſo that it was eaſy to lead them aſtray, and draw them into votes and reſolutions very different from their intention. A member had propoſed ſome petitions concerning the ſtate of the nation; in which, among other things, the houſe recommended frugality to the king, and for that purpoſe, deſired, that the court ſhould not be ſo much frequented as formerly by *biſhops* and *ladies*. The king was

diſpleaſed with this freedom: The commons very humbly craved pardon: He was not ſatisfied unleſs they would name the mover of that petition. It happened to be one Haxey, whom the parliament, in order to make atonement, condemned for this offence to die the death of a traitor. But the king, at the deſire of the archbiſhop of Canterbury, and the prelates, pardoned him. When a parliament in thoſe times, not agitated by any faction, and being at entire freedom, could be guilty of ſuch monſtrous extravagance, it is eaſy to judge what might be expected from them in more trying ſituations. See Cotton's Abridg. p. 361, 362.

NOTE [F], p. 43.

TO ſhow how little credit is to be given to this charge againſt Richard, we may obſerve, that a law in the 13 Edw. III. had been made againſt the continuance of ſheriffs for more than one year: But the inconvenience of changes having afterwards appeared from experience, the commons in the twentieth of this king, applied by petition that the ſheriffs might be continued; though that petition had not been enacted into a ſtatute, by reaſon of other diſagreeable circumſtances, which attended it. See Cotton, p. 361. It was certainly a very moderate exercife of the diſpenſing power for the king to continue the ſheriffs, after he found that that practice would be acceptable to his ſubjects, and had been applied for by one houſe of parliament: Yet is this made an article of charge againſt him by the preſent parliament. See art. 18. Walſingham, ſpeaking of a period early in Richard's minority, ſays, *But what do acts of parliament ſignify, when, after they are made, they take no effect; ſince the king, by the advice of the privy-council, takes upon him to alter, or wholly ſet aſide, all thoſe things, which by general conſent had been ordained in parliament?* If Richard, therefore, exerciſed the diſpenſing power, he was warranted by the examples of his uncles and grandfather, and indeed of all his predeceſſors from Henry III.

NOTE [G], p. 52.

THE following paſſage in Cotton's Abridgment, p. 196, ſhows a ſtrange prejudice againſt the church and churchmen. *The commons afterwards coming into the parliament, and making their proteſtation, ſhewed, that for want of good redreſs about the king's perſon in his houſehold, in all his courts, touching maintainers in every county, and purveyors, the commons were daily pilled, and nothing defended againſt the enemy, and that it ſhould ſhortly deprive the king and undo the ſtate. Wherefore in the ſame government, they entirely require redreſs. Whereupon the king appointed ſundry biſhops, lords and nobles, to ſit in privy-council about theſe matters: Who ſince that they muſt begin at the head, and go at the requeſt of the commons, they in the preſence of the king charged his confeſſor not to come into the court but upon the four principal feſtivals.* We ſhould little expect that a popiſh privy-council, in order to preſerve the king's morals, ſhould order his confeſſor to be kept at a diſtance from him. This incident happened in the minority of Richard. As the popes had for a long time reſided at Avignon, and the majority of the ſacred college were Frenchmen, this circumſtance naturally encreaſed the averſion of the nation to the papal power: But the prejudice againſt the Engliſh clergy cannot be accounted for from that cauſe.

NOTE [H], p. 223.

THAT we may judge how arbitrary a court, that of the conſtable of England was, we may peruſe the patent granted to the earl of Rivers in this reign, as it is to be found in Spellman's Gloſſary in verb. *Conſtabularius*; as alſo, more fully in Rymer, vol. xi. p. 581. Here is a clauſe of it: *Et ulterius de uberiori gratia noſtra eidem comiti de Rivers plenam poteſtatem damus ad cognoſcendum, & procedendum, in omnibus, & ſingulis, cauſis et negotiis, de et ſuper crimine leſæ majeſtatis ſeu ſuper occaſione cæteriſque cauſis, quibuſcunque per præfatum comitem de Rivers, ut conſtabularium Angliæ——quæ in curia conſtabularii Angliæ ab antiquo*, viz. *tempore dicti domini Gulielmi conqueſtoris ſeu aliquo tempore citra tractari, audiri, examinari, aut decidi conſueverant, aut jure debuerant, aut debent, cauſaſque et negotia prædicta cum omnibus et ſingulis emergentibus, in-*

cidentibus & connexis, audiendum, examinandum, et fine debito terminandum, etiam ſummarie et de plano, ſine ſtrepitu et figura juſtitiæ, ſola facti veritate inſpecta, *ac etiam manu regia, ſi opportunum viſum fuerit eidem comiti de Rivers, vices noſtras, appellatione remota.* The office of conſtable was perpetual in the monarchy; its juriſdiction was not limited to times of war, as appears from this patent, and as we learn from Spellman: Yet its authority was in direct contradiction to *Magna Charta*; and it is evident that no *regular* liberty could ſubſiſt with it. It involved a full dictatorial power, continually ſubſiſting in the ſtate. The only check on the crown, beſides the want of force to ſupport all its prerogatives, was, that the office of conſtable was commonly either hereditary or during life; and the perſon inveſted with it, was, for that reaſon, not ſo proper an inſtrument of arbitrary power in the king. Accordingly the office was ſuppreſſed by Henry VIII. the moſt arbitrary of all the Engliſh princes. The practice, however, of exerciſing martial law, ſtill ſubſiſted; and was not aboliſhed till the petition of Right under Charles I. This was the epoch of true liberty, confirmed by the Reſtoration, and enlarged and ſecured by the Revolution.

NOTE [I], p. 234.

WE ſhall give an inſtance: Almoſt all the hiſtorians, even Comines, and the continuator of the annals of Croyland, aſſert that Edward was about this time taken priſoner by Clarence and Warwic, and was committed to the cuſtody of the archbiſhop of York, brother to the earl; but being allowed to take the diverſion of hunting by this prelate, he made his eſcape, and afterwards chaced the rebels out of the kingdom. But that all the ſtory is falſe appears from Rymer, where we find, that the king, throughout all this period, continually exerciſed his authority, and never was interrupted in his government. On the 7th of March 1470, he gives a commiſſion of array to Clarence, whom he then imagined a good ſubject; and on the 23d of the ſame month, we find him iſſuing an order for apprehending him. Beſides, in the king's manifeſto againſt the duke and earl, (Clauſ. 10 Edward IV. m. 7, 8.)

m. 7, 8.) where he enumerates all their treaſons, he mentions no ſuch fact: He does not ſo much as accuſe them of exciting young Welles's rebellion: He only ſays, that they exhorted him to continue in his rebellion. We may judge how ſmaller facts will be miſrepreſented by hiſtorians, who can in the moſt material tranſactions miſtake ſo groſsly. There may even ſome doubt ariſe with regard to the propoſals of marriage made to Bona of Savoy; though almoſt all the hiſtorians concur in it, and the fact be very likely in itſelf: For there are no traces in Rymer of any ſuch embaſſy of Warwic's to France. The chief certainty in this and the preceding reign ariſes either from public records, or from the notice taken of certain paſſages by the French hiſtorians. On the contrary, for ſome centuries after the conqueſt, the French hiſtory is not complete without the aſſiſtance of Engliſh authors. We may conjecture, that the reaſon of the ſcarcity of hiſtorians during this period, was the deſtruction of the convents, which enſued ſo ſoon after: Copies of the more recent hiſtorians not being yet ſufficiently diſperſed, theſe hiſtories have periſhed.

NOTE [K], p. 274.

SIR Thomas More, who has been followed, or rather tranſcribed, by all the hiſtorians of this ſhort reign, ſays, that Jane Shore had fallen into connexions with lord Haſtings; and this account agrees beſt with the courſe of the events: But in a proclamation of Richard's, to be found in Rymer, vol. xii. p. 204, the marquis of Dorſet is reproached with theſe connexions. This reproach, however, might have been invented by Richard, or founded only on popular rumour; and is not ſufficient to overbalance the authority of Sir Thomas More. The proclamation is remarkable for the hypocritical purity of manners affected by Richard: This bloody and treacherous tyrant upbraids the marquis and others, with their gallantries and intrigues as the moſt terrible enormities.

NOTE [L], p. 297.

EVERY one that has peruſed the ancient monkiſh writers, knows, that, however barbarous their own ſtyle, they are full of alluſions to the Latin claſſics, eſpecially the poets.

There ſeems alſo in thoſe middle ages to have remained many ancient books, that are now loſt. Malmeſbury, who flouriſhed in the reign of Henry I. and king Stephen, quotes Livy's deſcription of Cæſar's paſſage over the Rubicon. Fitz-Stephen, who lived in the reign of Henry II. alludes to a paſſage in the larger hiſtory of Salluſt. In the collection of letters, which paſſes under the name of Thomas a Becket, we ſee how familiar all the ancient hiſtory and ancient books were to the more ingenious and more dignified churchmen of that time, and conſequently how much that order of men muſt have ſurpaſſed all the other members of the ſociety. That prelate and his friends call each other Philoſophers in all the courſe of their correſpondence, and conſider the reſt of the world as ſunk in total ignorance and barbariſm.

NOTE [M], p. 383.

STOWE, Baker, Speed, Biondi, Hollingſhed, Bacon. Some late writers, particularly Mr. Carte, have doubted whether Perkin was an impoſtor, and have even aſſerted him to be the true Plantagenet. But to refute this opinion, we need only reflect on the following particulars: (1.) Though the circumſtances of the wars between the two roſes be in general involved in great obſcurity, yet is there a moſt luminous ray thrown on all the tranſactions, during the uſurpation of Richard, and the murder of the two young princes, by the narrative of Sir Thomas More, whoſe ſingular magnanimity, probity, and judgment make him an evidence beyond all exception: No hiſtorian, either of ancient or modern times, can poſſibly have more weight: He may alſo be juſtly eſteemed a contemporary with regard to the murder of the two princes: For though he was but five years of age when that event happened, he lived and was educated among the chief actors during the period of Richard: And it is plain, from his narrative itſelf, which is often extremely circumſtantial, that he had the particulars from the eye-witneſſes themſelves: His authority, therefore, is irreſiſtible; and ſufficient to overbalance a hundred little doubts and ſcruples and objections. For in reality, his narrative is liable to no ſolid objection, nor

nor is there any miſtake detected in it. He ſays indeed, that the protector's partizans, particularly Dr. Shaw, ſpread abroad rumours of Edward IV's pre-contract with Elizabeth Lucy; whereas it now appears from record, that the parliament afterwards declared the king's children illegitimate, on pretence of his pre-contract with lady Eleanor Talbot. But it muſt be remarked, that neither of theſe pre-contracts was ever ſo much as attempted to be proved: And why might not the protector's flatterers and partizans have made uſe ſometimes of one falſe rumour, ſometimes of another? Sir Thomas More mentions the one rumour as well as the other, and treats them both lightly, as they deſerved. It is alſo thought incredible by Mr. Carte, that Dr. Shaw ſhould have been encouraged by Richard to calumniate openly his mother, the dutcheſs of York, with whom that prince lived on good terms. But if there be any difficulty in this ſuppoſition, we need only ſuppoſe, that Dr. Shaw might have concerted in general his ſermon with the protector or his miniſters, and yet have choſen himſelf the particular topics, and choſen them very fooliſhly. This appears indeed to have been the caſe by the diſgrace, into which he fell afterwards, and by the protector's neglect of him. (2) If Sir Thomas's quality of contemporary be diſputed with regard to the duke of Gloceſter's protectorate, it cannot poſſibly be diſputed with regard to Perkin's impoſture: He was then a man, and had a full opportunity of knowing and examining and judging of the truth. In aſſerting that the duke of York was murdered by his uncle, he certainly aſſerts, in the moſt expreſs terms, that Perkin, who perſonated him, was an impoſtor. (3) There is another great genius who has carefully treated this point of hiſtory; ſo great a genius as to be eſteemed with juſtice one of the chief ornaments of the nation, and indeed one of the moſt ſublime writers that any age or nation has produced. It is lord Bacon I mean, who has related at full length, and without the leaſt doubt or heſitation, all the impoſtures of Perkin Warbeck. If it be objected, that lord Bacon was no contemporary, and that we have the ſame materials, as he, upon which to form our judgment; it muſt be

remarked, that lord Bacon plainly compoſed his elaborate and exact hiſtory from many records and papers which are now loſt, and that conſequently, he is always to be cited as an original hiſtorian. It were very ſtrange, if Mr. Carte's opinion were juſt, that, among all the papers, which lord Bacon peruſed, he never found any reaſon to ſuſpect Perkin to be the true Plantagenet. There was at that time no intereſt in defaming Richard III. Bacon beſides is a very unbiaſſed hiſtorian, nowiſe partial to Henry: We know the detail of that prince's oppreſſive government from him alone. It may only be thought, that, in ſumming up his character, he has laid the colours of blame more faintly than the very facts, he mentions, ſeem to require. Let me remark in paſſing, as a ſingularity, how much Engliſh hiſtory has been beholden to four great men, who have poſſeſſed the higheſt dignity in the law, More, Bacon, Clarendon, and Whitlocke. (4) But if contemporary evidence be ſo much ſought after, there may in this caſe be produced the ſtrongeſt and moſt undeniable in the world. The queen-dowager, her ſon the marquis of Dorſet, a man of excellent underſtanding, Sir Edward Woodville, her brother, Sir Thomas St. Leger, who had married the king's ſiſter, Sir John Bourchier, Sir Robert Willoughby, Sir Giles Daubeney, Sir Thomas Arundel, the Courtneys, the Cheyneys, the Talbots, the Stanleys, and in a word, all the partizans of the houſe of York, that is, the men of chief dignity in the nation; all theſe great perſons were ſo aſſured of the murder of the two princes, that they applied to the earl of Richmond, the mortal enemy of their party and family; they projected to ſet him on the throne, which muſt have been utter ruin to them, if the princes were alive; and they ſtipulated to marry him to the princeſs Elizabeth, as heir to the crown, who in that caſe was no heir at all. Had each of thoſe perſons written the memoirs of his own times, would he not have ſaid, that Richard murdered his nephews? Or is their pen a better declaration, than their actions, of their real ſentiments? (5) But we have another contemporary authority ſtill better than even theſe great perſons, ſo much intereſted to know the truth: It is that of Richard himſelf: He projected to marry his niece, a very unuſual alliance

in

in England, in order to unite her title with his own. He knew therefore her title to be good: For as to the declaration of her illegitimacy, as it went upon no proof, or even pretence of proof, it was always regarded with the utmoſt contempt by the nation, and was conſidered as one of thoſe parliamentary tranſactions, ſo frequent in that period, which were ſcandalous in themſelves, and had no manner of authority. It was even ſo much deſpiſed as not to be reverſed by parliament, after Henry and Elizabeth were on the throne. (6) We have alſo, as contemporary evidence, the univerſal eſtabliſhed opinion of the age, both abroad and at home. This point was regarded as ſo uncontroverted, that when Richard notified his acceſſion to the court of France, that court was ſtruck with horror at his abominable parricide, in murdering both his nephews, as Philip de Comines tells us; and this ſentiment went to ſuch an unuſual height, that, as we learn from the ſame author, the court would not make the leaſt reply to him. (7) The ſame reaſons, which convinced that age of the parricide, ſtill ſubſiſt, and ought to carry the moſt undoubted evidence to us; namely, the very circumſtance of the ſudden diſappearance of the princes from the Tower, and their appearance no where elſe. Every one ſaid, *they have not eſcaped from their uncle, for he makes no ſearch after them: He has not conveyed them elſewhere: For it is his buſineſs to declare ſo, in order to remove the imputation of murder from himſelf. He never would needleſsly ſubject himſelf to the infamy and danger of being eſteemed a parricide, without acquiring the ſecurity attending that crime. They were in his cuſtody: He is anſwerable for them: If he gives no account of them, as he has a plain intereſt in their death, he muſt, by every rule of common ſenſe, be regarded as the murderer. His flagrant uſurpation, as well as his other treacherous and cruel actions, makes no better be expected from him. He could not ſay with Cain, that he was not his nephew's keeper.* This reaſoning, which was irrefragable at the very firſt, became every day ſtronger, from Richard's continued ſilence, and the general and total ignorance of the place of theſe princes' abode. Richard's reign laſted about two years beyond this period; and ſurely, he could not have found

found a better expedient for diſappointing the earl of Richmond's projects, as well as juſtifying his own character, than the producing of his nephews. (8) If it were neceſſary, amidſt this blaze of evidence, to produce proofs, which, in any other caſe, would have been regarded as conſiderable, and would have carried great validity with them, I might mention Dighton and Tyrrel's account of the murder. This laſt gentleman eſpecially was not likely to ſubject himſelf to the reproach of ſo great a crime, by an impoſture, which, it appears, did not acquire him the favour of Henry. (9) The duke of York, being a boy of nine years of age, could not have made his eſcape without the aſſiſtance of ſome elder perſons. Would it not have been their chief concern inſtantly to convey intelligence of ſo great an event to his mother, the queen-dowager, to his aunt, the dutcheſs of Burgundy, and to the other friends of the family. The dutcheſs protected Simnel; a project, which, had it been ſucceſsful, muſt have ended in the crowning of Warwic, and the excluſion of the duke of York! This, among many other proofs, evinces that ſhe was ignorant of the eſcape of that prince, which is impoſſible, had it been real. (10) The total ſilence with regard to the perſons who aided him in his eſcape, as alſo with regard to the place of his abode during more than eight years, is a ſufficient proof of the impoſture. (11) Perkin's own account of his eſcape is incredible and abſurd. He ſaid, that murderers were employed by his uncle to kill him and his brother: They perpetrated the crime againſt his brother; but took compaſſion on him, and allowed him to eſcape. This account is contained in all the hiſtorians of that age. (12) Perkin himſelf made a full confeſſion of his impoſture no leſs than three times; once when he ſurrendered himſelf priſoner, a ſecond time when he was ſet in the ſtocks at Cheapſide and Weſtminſter, and a third time, which carries undoubted evidence, at the foot of the gibbet, on which he was hanged. Not the leaſt ſurmiſe that the confeſſion had ever been procured by torture: And ſurely, the laſt time he had nothing farther to fear. (13) Had not Henry been aſſured, that Perkin was a ridiculous impoſtor, diſavowed by the whole nation, he never would have allowed him to live an hour after he came into

into his power; much leſs, would he have twice pardoned him. His treatment of the innocent earl of Warwic, who in reality had no title to the crown, is a ſufficient confirmation of this reaſoning. (14) We know with certainty whence the whole impoſture came, namely, from the intrigues of the dutcheſs of Burgundy: She had before acknowledged and ſupported Lambert Simnel, an avowed impoſtor. It is remarkable, that Mr. Carte, in order to preſerve the weight of the dutcheſs's teſtimony in favour of Perkin, ſuppreſſes entirely this material fact: A ſtrong effect of party prejudices, and this author's deſire of blackening Henry VII. whoſe hereditary title to the crown was defective. (15) There never was, at that time, any evidence or ſhadow of evidence produced, of Perkin's identity with Richard Plantagenet. Richard had diſappeared when near nine years of age, and Perkin did not appear till he was a man. Could any one, from his aſpect, pretend then to be ſure of the identity? He had got ſome ſtories concerning Richard's childhood, and the court of England: But all that it was neceſſary for a boy of nine to remark or remember was eaſily ſuggeſted to him by the dutcheſs of Burgundy, or Frion, Henry's ſecretary, or by any body that had ever lived at court. It is true, many perſons of note were at firſt deceived; but the diſcontents againſt Henry's government, and the general enthuſiaſm for the houſe of York, account ſufficiently for this temporary deluſion. Every body's eyes were opened long before Perkin's death. (16) The circumſtance of finding the two dead bodies in the reign of Charles II. is not ſurely indifferent. They were found in the very place, which More, Bacon, and other ancient authors had aſſigned for the place of interment of the young princes: The bones correſponded by their ſize to the age of the princes: The ſecret and irregular place of their interment, not being in holy ground, proves that the boys had been ſecretly murdered: And in the Tower, no boys, but thoſe who are very nearly related to the crown, can be expoſed to ſuch a violent death: If we compare all theſe circumſtances we ſhall find, that the inference is juſt and ſtrong, that they were the bodies of Edward the Vth and his brother, the very inference that was drawn at the time of the diſcovery.

Since the publication of this Hiſtory, Mr. Walpole *has publiſhed his Hiſtoric Doubts concerning Richard III. Nothing can be a ſtronger proof how ingenious and agreeable that gentleman's pen is, than his being able to make an enquiry concerning a remote point of Engliſh antiquities, an object of general converſation. The foregoing note has been enlarged on account of that performance.*

NOTE [N], p. 397.

ROT. Parl. 3 H. VII. n. 17. The preamble is remarkable, and ſhows the ſtate of the nation at that time. "The king, our ſovereign lord, remembereth, how, by our "unlawful maintainances, giving of liveries, ſigns and "tokens, retainders by indentures, promiſes, oaths, writings, "and other embraceries of his ſubjects, untrue demeanings "of ſheriffs in making pannels, and untrue returns by taking "money, by juries, &c. the policy of this nation is moſt "ſubdued." It muſt indeed be confeſſed, that ſuch a ſtate of the country required great diſcretionary power in the ſovereign; nor will the ſame maxims of government ſuit ſuch a rude people, that may be proper in a more advanced ſtage of ſociety. The abolition of the Star-chamber might have been as wiſe in the age of Charles I. as its eſtabliſhment or the enlargement of its powers in that of Henry VII.

NOTE [O], p. 400.

THE duke of Northumberland has lately printed a houſehold book of an old earl of that family, who lived at this time: The author has been favoured with the peruſal of it; and it contains many curious particulars, which mark the manners and way of living in that rude, not to ſay barbarous age; as well as the prices of commodities. I have extracted a few of them. The family conſiſts of 166 perſons, maſters and ſervants: Fifty-ſeven ſtrangers are reckoned upon every day: On the whole 223. Two-pence halfpenny are ſuppoſed to be the daily expence of each for meat, drink, and firing. This would make a groat of our preſent money: Suppoſing proviſions between three and four times cheaper, it would be equivalent to fourteen-pence: No great ſum for a nobleman's houſe-keeping; eſpecially conſidering, that the chief expence of

of a family, at that time, conſiſted in meat and drink: For the ſum allotted by the earl for his whole annual expence is 1118 pounds ſeventeen ſhillings and eight-pence; meat, drink, and firing coſt 796 pounds eleven ſhillings and two-pence, more than two thirds of the whole: In a modern family it is not above a third, p. 157, 158, 159. The whole expence of the earl's family is managed with an exactneſs that is very rigid, and ſeems even ſomewhat niggardly; inſomuch, that the number of pieces, which muſt be cut out of every quarter of beef, mutton, pork, veal, nay ſtock-fiſh and ſalmon, are determined, and muſt be entered and accounted for by the different clerks appointed for that purpoſe: If a ſervant is abſent a day, his meſs is ſtruck off: If he goes on my lord's buſineſs, board wages are allowed him, eight-pence a day for his journey in winter, five-pence in ſummer: When he ſtays in any place, two-pence a day are allowed him, beſide the maintainance of his horſe. Somewhat above a quarter of wheat is allowed for every mouth throughout the year; and the wheat is eſtimated at five ſhillings and eight-pence a quarter. Two hundred and fifty quarters of malt are allowed, at four ſhillings a quarter: Two hogſheads are to be made of a quarter; which amounts to about a bottle and a third of beer in a day to each perſon, p. 4. and the beer will not be very ſtrong. One hundred and nine fat beeves are to be bought at Allhallow-tide, at thirteen ſhillings and four-pence a piece: And twenty-four lean beeves to be bought at St. Helens at eight ſhillings a piece: Theſe are to be put into the paſtures to feed; and are to ſerve from Midſummer to Michaelmas; which is conſequently the only time that the family eats freſh beef: During all the reſt of the year they live on ſalted meat, p. 5. One hundred and ſixty gallons of muſtard are allowed in a year; which ſeems indeed requiſite for the ſalt beef, p. 18. Six hundred and forty ſeven ſheep are allowed, at twenty pence a piece; and theſe ſeem alſo to be all eat ſalted, except between Lammas and Michaelmas, p. 5. Only twenty-five hogs are allowed at two ſhillings a piece; twenty-eight veals at twenty pence; forty lambs at ten-pence or a ſhilling, p. 7. Theſe ſeem to be reſerved for my lord's table, or that of the upper ſervants,

ſervants, called the knights'-table. The other ſervants, as they eat ſalted meat, almoſt through the whole year, and with few or no vegetables, had a very bad and unhealthy diet: So that there cannot be any thing more erroneous, than the magnificent ideas formed of *the Roaſt Beef of Old England.* We muſt entertain as mean an idea of its cleanlineſs: Only ſeventy ells of linen at eight-pence an ell are annually allowed for this great family: No ſheets were uſed: This linen was made into eight table-cloths for my lord's table; and one table-cloth for the knights, p. 16. This laſt, I ſuppoſe, was waſhed only once a month. Only forty ſhillings are allowed for waſhing throughout the whole year; and moſt of it ſeems expended on the linen belonging to the chapel. The drinking, however, was tolerable, viz. ten tun and two hogſheacs of Gaſcogny wine, at the rate of four pounds thirteen ſhillings and four-pence a tun, p. 6. Only ninety-one dozen of candles for the whole year, p. 14. The family roſe at ſix in the morning, dined at ten, and ſupped at four in the afternoon: The gates were all ſhut at nine, and no farther ingreſs or egreſs permitted, p. 314, 318. My lord and lady have ſet on their table for breakfaſt at ſeven o'clock in the morning a quart of beer; as much wine; two pieces of ſalt fiſh, ſix red herrings, four white ones, or a diſh of ſprats. In fleſh days half a chyne of mutton, or a chyne of beef boiled, p. 73, 75. Maſs is ordered to be ſaid at ſix o'clock, in order, ſays the houſehold-book, that all my lord's ſervants may riſe early, p. 170. Only twenty-four fires are allowed, beſide the kitchen and hall, and moſt of theſe have only a peck of coals a day allowed them, p. 99. After Lady-day, no fires permitted in the rooms, except half-fires in my lord's and lady's, and lord Percy's and the nurſery, p. 101. It is to be obſerved that my lord kept houſe in Yorkſhire, where there is certainly much cold weather after Lady-day. Eighty chalders of coals at four ſhillings and two-pence a chalder, ſuffices throughout the whole year; and becauſe coal will not burn without wood, ſays the houſehold-book, ſixty-four loads of great wood are alſo allowed, at twelve-pence a load, p. 22. This is a proof that grates were not then uſed. Here is an article. *It is aviſed that*

from

from henceforth no capons to be bought but only for my lord's own meſs, and that the ſaid capons ſhall be bought for two-pence a piece, lean, and fed in the poultry; and maſter chamberlain and the ſtewards be fed with capons, if there be ſtrangers ſitting with them, p. 102. Pigs are to be bought at three-pence or a groat a piece: Geeſe at the ſame price: Chickens at a halfpenny: Hens at two-pence, and only for the abovementioned tables. Here is another article. *Item, It is thought good that no plovers be bought at no ſeaſon but only in Chriſtmas and principal feaſts, and my lord to be ſerved therewith and his board-end, and none other, and to be bought for a penny a piece, or a penny halfpenny at moſt*, p. 103. Woodcocks are to be bought at the ſame price. Partridges at two-pence, p. 104, 105. Pheaſants, a ſhilling; peacocks the ſame, p. 106. My lord keeps only twenty-ſeven horſes in his ſtable at his own charge: His upper ſervants have allowance for maintaining their own horſes, p. 126. Theſe horſes are, ſix gentle horſes, as they are called, at hay and hard meat throughout the whole year, four palfreys, three hobbies and nags, three ſumpter horſes, ſix horſes for thoſe ſervants to whom my lord furniſhes a horſe, two ſumpter horſes more, and three mill horſes, two for carrying the corn and one for grinding it; whence we may infer that mills, either water or wind-mills, were then unknown: Beſides theſe, there are ſeven great trotting horſes for the chariot or waggon. He allows a peck of oats a day, beſides loaves made of beans, for his principal horſes; the oats at twenty-pence, the beans at two ſhillings a quarter. The load of hay is at two ſhillings and eight-pence. When my lord is on a journey, he carries thirty-ſix horſemen along with him; together with bed and other accommodation, p. 157. The inns, it ſeems, could afford nothing tolerable. My lord paſſes the year in three country-ſeats, all in Yorkſhire, Wryſel, Leckenfield, and Topclyffe; but he has furniture only for one: He carries every thing along with him, beds, tables, chairs, kitchen utenſils, all which, we may conclude, were ſo coarſe, that they could not be ſpoilt by the carriage: Yet ſeventeen carts and one waggon ſuffices for the whole, p. 391. One cart ſuffices for all his kitchen utenſils, cooks beds, &c. p. 388. One remarkable circumſtance is, that he has eleven prieſts in his houſe, beſides ſeventeen perſons, chanters, muſicians,

ficians, &c. belonging to his chapel: Yet he has only two cooks for a family of 223 perſons, p. 325 *. Their meals were certainly dreſſed in the ſlovenly manner of a ſhip's company. It is amuſing to obſerve the pompous and even royal ſtyle aſſumed by this Tartar chief: He does not give any orders, though only for the right making of muſtard; but it is introduced with this preamble, *It ſeemeth good to us and our council.* If we conſider the magnificent and elegant manner in which the Venetian and other Italian noblemen then lived, with the progreſs made by the Italians in literature and the fine arts, we ſhall not wonder that they conſidered the ultramountaine nations as barbarous. The Flemiſh alſo ſeem to have much excelled the Engliſh and even the French. Yet the earl is ſometimes not deficient in generoſity: He pays for inſtance, an annual penſion of a groat a year to my lady of Walſingham, for her intereſt in Heaven; the ſame ſum to the holy blood at Hales, p. 337. No mention is any where made of plate; but only of the hiring of pewter veſſels. The ſervants ſeem all to have bought their own cloaths from their wages.

* In another place, mention is made of four cooks, p. 388. But I ſuppoſe, that the two ſervants, called in p. 325, groom of the larder and child of the ſcullery, are in p. 388, comprehended in the number of cooks.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

Pg 170
Burke & York Pg 183
" " " advantages 180
Lancaster claims 191

* DA30
H9
1773



McGILL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

During the session, the Library is open from 9 a. m. till 6 p. m., and from 7.30 till 10.30 p. m.

On Saturdays the Library closes at 5 p. m.

During vacations the Library closes at 5 p. m. and on Saturdays at 1 p. m.

Reference books may be borrowed only over night. They must be returned by 9 o'clock the following morning.

Acme Library Card Pocket

Under Pat. "Ref. Index File"

Made by LIBRARY BUREAU, Boston

DO NOT REMOVE THE CARD FROM THIS POCKET